

I. CASTÉRA.

Published Feb.ry 12.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.



I. CASTÉRA.

Published Feb.ry 12.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

HISTORY

OF

CATHARINE II.

EMPRESS OF RUSSIA.

BY

J. CASTÉRA.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH

BY HENRY HUNTER, D. D.

Nihil compoſitum miraculi causâ, verum audita, ſcriptaque
ſenioribus tradam. TACIT. *Ann. Lib.* xi.

EMBELLISHED WITH THIRTEEN PORTRAITS,

AND A VIEW OF THE FORTRESS OF SCHLUSSELBURGH.

London:

PRINTED FOR JOHN STOCKDALE, PICCADILLY.

1800.



43.
10. 9.
86.

T. Gillet, Printer, Salisbury-Square.

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

THE hiſtory of Society exhibits not, perhaps, an inſtance of uſurpation ſo violent as that which ſeated Catharine II. on the throne of all the Ruſſias, and never was an uſurped throne maintained for ſo long a time, amidſt convulſions ſo tremendous, and by acts ſo deteſtable of craft, cruelty and injuſtice. The love of empire and fame was her domineering, but by no means her excluſive paſſion. She contrived to blend the moſt daring ambition, that ever diſtinguiſhed the male character, with the groſſeſt ſenſuality that ever diſhonoured the vileſt of her own ſex. The acquiſition of fame is eaſy to any one who has the courage to be atrociouſly wicked. Pontius Pilate ſtands on the firſt of the rolls of fame, the Sacred Record, but for what? for having condemned, in his capacity of judge, an innocent perſon to a horrid death, knowing him to be innocent. Such is the dear-bought reputation which that bad woman has earned. She flattered herſelf, no doubt, that her puny virtues

and ſhining talents would deſcend to poſterity, while her crimes ſhould remain unknown, or ſink into oblivion. But the reverſe takes place. Her meagre attainments in wiſdom and virtue are almoſt totally abſorbed in the enormity of her guilt, both as a woman and a ſovereign.

Her hiſtory preſents to the world a moral picture highly and univerſally intereſting and important. It admoniſhes Princes what they ought not to be, and Nations what they ought not to endure. It demonſtrates, that power and ſplendor are but a miſerable ſubſtitute for the teſtimony of a good conſcience, and evinces the truth of two remarks of a very wiſe man and great monarch:—"Becauſe ſentence againſt an evil "work is not executed ſpeedily; therefore the "heart of the ſons of men is fully ſet in them "to do evil:" but "though hand join in hand, "the wicked ſhall not go unpuniſhed."

Not merely, then, as an amuſing book, and as a detail of facts, but as an inſtructive and powerfully impreſſive code of morals, I have tranſlated the *Hiſtory of Catharine II.* into Engliſh. By ſuppreſſing the notes, ſome of them unintereſting, many of them tedious, and a few not fit for the public eye; and by omitting the ſtatiſtical appendix, I have been enabled to reduce the three volumes, of which the original conſiſts, into one. This, of courſe, reduces the price

price very conſiderably, both of the original purchaſe, and in binding, while not a ſyllable of the hiſtory, properly ſo called, is with-held.

With the Author's ſources of information, and his fidelity in uſing them, I have nothing to do. He diſcovers more candor, and leſs vanity, perſonal as well as national, than moſt French writers with whoſe works I am converſant. The ſtigma affixed to Admiral Greig's character, relative to the Princeſs Tarrakanoff, I am diſpoſed to believe unjuſt. It is totally inconſiſtent with his ſpirit and conduct through a long, virtuous and reſpectable career. A Britiſh ſeaman is one of the nobleſt of human beings; and of the thouſands of that profeſſion with whom I have been acquainted, I never knew one who ſurpaſſed that Admiral in all the great and good qualities of the man, the officer, and, I add, the Chriſtian.

It is far from being impoſſible that this, like ſome other of my publications, may provoke the cenſure of the ſelf-important *I*s and *We*s of anonymous pamphleteers, prefacers and appendix-mongers; but as I always affix my name to whatever I publiſh, I think it beneath me to enter the liſts with a coward, who is irritated to the penning of a challenge, but wants the courage to add his ſignature and place of abode. I ſhall ever treat the ridicule or the abuſe of an unknown

perſon with the contempt I bear to a ſnarling village-cur as I walk through the ſtreet, who yelps as if going to devour you, but ſlinks into his hole if you ſtop to look at him.

My original has, it ſeems, been treated in the ſame manner, and has taught me to adopt the ſame ſpirit. The laſt ſentence of his preface ſhall, therefore, likewiſe be the laſt of mine:

"I have alſo been criticiſed by a petty jour-
"naliſt, who has compoſed a great number of
"trifling works, altogether beneath criticiſm,
"and who, frequently talking of what he does
"not underſtand, is ſo much the more blame-
"worthy, in diſplaying jealouſy of literary ſuc-
"ceſs, that ſuch ſucceſs has nothing in common
"with any he has ever been able to attain."

H. H.

Hoxton,
26*th April* 1800.

AUTHOR'S

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

WHEN I compoſed the firſt ſketch of this work, it was hurried to the preſs with ſo much precipitation, that I had it not in my power to give it either the form or the title under which it now appears. I entitled it only *The Life of Catharine II.* and that was ſaying a great deal. At preſent I have the preſumption to think that it merits a more comprehenſive denomination, as it contains not only the Private Life of that Princeſs, but a complete Hiſtory of her Reign, nay a conciſe Hiſtory of Ruſſia, as well as the Statiſtical Delineation of that Empire.

To prove the undeniable authenticity of the facts ſtated in this Work, I conſider myſelf as obliged to declare, with the rigid regard to candor which I profeſs, what are the ſources from whence I derived them.

What relates to Peter I. to Catharine I. and to their ſucceſſors, down to the reign of Elizabeth, is extracted from the Memoirs of the Count de Bruce, of Field-mareſchal Munich, and of General Manſtein; from the ſecret Correſpond-

ence of the King of Pruſſia, at the time when, being only Prince Royal, he wrote what perhaps he would not have ſuffered to eſcape him after he had mounted the throne; from a Collection of Anecdotes furniſhed to Voltaire, but of which, from a very culpable caution, that celebrated Author made no uſe; and finally, from a curious manuſcript of Magnan, who, after having been Secretary to the able Negotiator Campredon, long remained *Chargé des Affaires* from France at the Court of Ruſſia.

As to what concerns the reigns of Elizabeth, of Peter III. and of Catharine II. I have poſſeſſed very valuable materials, and which the moſt extraordinary concurrence of circumſtances alone could procure for one and the ſame Writer. I have known particularly, in the north, men complete maſters of all that paſſed at the court of Ruſſia. I have had in my hands the remarks of the Count de Ranzau-Aſchberg, who was Ambaſſador from Denmark to Peterſburgh, and intimately connected with Gregory Orloff. From a memoir dictated by Soltikoff himſelf, I was enabled to detail the particulars of that Chamberlain's intercourſe with Catharine, during the early period of that Princeſs's marriage. I have frequently read the ſecret correſpondence of the Miniſters of France, La Chetardie, Champeaux, l'Hopital, Breteuil, Beauſſet, Juigné, and of the

Charges-

Chargés-d'Affaires Berenger, Sabathier, Roſſignol, Durand. Another Miniſter of France into Ruſſia, not leſs diſtinguiſhed for his ſhining qualities than for his amiable talents, Segur, who lived ſome years in a cloſe intimacy with Catharine II. and Potemkin, has not with-held from me the ſlighteſt article of information which depended on him. Colonel Laharpe, for ten years the tutor of the two Grand-dukes Alexander and Conſtantine Paulowitz, and, at the preſent day, one of the moſt zealous ſupporters of Helvetic liberty, has diſplayed towards me as much kindneſs as Segur.

The wiſe and brave General Koſciuſzko has aſſured me, that all that I have written with reſpect to the events in which he performed a part ſo brilliant, is authentic. Some very judicious obſervations have been furniſhed to me by a foreign officer, who ſerved a long time in the Ruſſian marine; by the learned and modeſt Hermann; by the courageous and eſtimable Thurot; by a man who has been in habits of ſtrict intimacy with the Orloffs and with Count Panin, and by other friends of truth. Finally, one of thoſe to whom I am moſt indebted for the Statiſtical Hiſtory of Ruſſia, is the Engliſh Tranſlator of the firſt edition of my work.

Undoubtedly, if I had made uſe of all the materials in my poſſeſſion, this work, which is perhaps

haps already too voluminous, would have been conſiderably more ſo. But I choſe only to record the facts which were at once real, and calculated to make known the character of Catharine and the manners of the Ruſſians.

Not one of the men of information who have lived in Ruſſia, has diſputed a ſingle fact which I advanced in my firſt edition. A few traits only, relative to Prince Ivan, and an anecdote reſpecting the diſmiſſion of the favourite Zoritz, have been, without any authority, called in queſtion, by the paraphraſt of a pretended Hiſtory of Peter III. a hiſtory, the original manuſcript of which was the production of the very diffuſe Leclerc, and to which have been ſubjoined the amours of Catharine, diſfigured from my firſt edition, and enriched with ſome Teutonic details, copied word for word in the *Minerva* of Archenholtz.

I have alſo been criticiſed by a petty Journaliſt, who has compoſed a great number of trifling works, altogether beneath criticiſm, and who, frequently talking of things which he does not underſtand, is ſo much the more blame-worthy in diſplaying a jealouſy of literary ſucceſs, that ſuch ſucceſs has nothing in common with any he has ever been able to attain.

CON-

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

INTRODUCTION. *Extent and Population of Ruſſia—Origin of the Ruſſians—Abridged Account of their Hiſtory previous to the Acceſſion of the Romanoffs to the Throne—Continuation of that Hiſtory down to the Reign of Elizabeth, Daughter of Peter I.* page 33

BOOK II.

Account of the firſt Years of the Reign of Elizabeth—Character of that Princeſs and of her Favourites—She nominates for her Succeſſor the young Duke Charles Peter Ulric of Holſtein-Gottorp, who reigned afterwards under the Name of Peter III.—Marriage of this Prince with Sophia-Auguſta d'Anhalt Zerbſt, who aſſumes the Name of Catharine Alexiewna—The Chamberlain Soltikoff becomes the Favourite of this Princeſs—Birth of Paul Petrowitz—Poniatowſky ſucceeds to Soltikoff—Intrigues of Beſtuſcheff and his Exile—Death of Elizabeth - page 81

BOOK III.

Commencement of the Reign of Peter III.—He recals a great Number of Exiles, among whom Munich and Biren were conſpicuouſly diſtinguiſhed—Oukaſe in favour of the Nobility—Peace with Pruſſia—Peter's Admiration of Frederick II.—Miſunderſtanding between Peter III. and Catharine—Intrigues againſt that

that Prince——The Orloffs, Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, Panin, form the Project of dethroning him—He pays a Viſit to Ivan, confined as a Priſoner in the Fortreſs of Schluſſelburgh—The Deſign he entertained of naming that Prince his Succeſſor——Preparations againſt Denmark - - page 139

BOOK IV.

The Conſpirators prepare to put in Execution their Project of dethroning the Czar—The Arreſt of Paſſeck haſtens this Execution—Catharine II. is acknowledged as Empreſs by the Regiments of Guards, and orders herſelf to be crowned in the principal Church of Peterſburgh—The Troops gained over by the Conſpirators advance againſt Peter—Irreſolution and extreme weakneſs of that Prince—He ſurrenders to Catharine—He is poiſoned and ſtrangled—Conſequences of his Death - - - page 181

BOOK V.

State of Europe—Catharine maintains Biren in Courland—Panin aims at changing the Form of the Ruſſian Government—Beſtuſcheff diſſuades the Empreſs, and tries to make her eſpouſe Gregory Orloff—Plot laid at Moſcow againſt Orloff's life—Lying-in of the Empreſs—State of Poland, from the Kings of the firſt Race down to the Election of Poniatowſky—Conſpiracy at Peterſburgh—Catharine's Expedition into Livonia—Maſſacre of Prince Ivan page 227

BOOK VI.

Miſunderſtanding between Gregory Orloff and Panin.—Wiſſotzky becomes a Lover of the Empreſs—Diſmiſſion of the Chancellor Woronzoff——The Duke de Choiſeul incites the Turks to take up Arms againſt Ruſſia

Ruſſia—Adventure of Lord Macartney—Tournaments—Convocation of the Deputies of the People—Inoculation of the Grand-Duke—Prince Henry of Pruſſia at Peterſburgh—A Ruſſian Squadron in the Archipelago—Princeſs Tarrakanoff page 273

BOOK VII.

Prince Dolgorouky enters the Krimea—Plague at Moſcow—The King of Poland kidnapped.—Congreſs of Foſkani—Waſſiltſchikoff becomes the Favourite of the Empreſs—Gregory Orloff is baniſhed the Court—Conferences of Bukhareſt—Firſt diſmemberment of Poland—Peace of Kaïnardgi—Emigration of the Eleuths—Diſmiſſion of Waſſiltſchikoff—Firſt Marriage of Paul Petrowitz—Diderot at Peterſburgh page 322

BOOK VIII.

Diſcontents in various Parts of the Empire—Cauſes which determined different Impoſtors to aſſume the name of Peter III.—Revolt of Pugatſcheff—His Succeſſes—His Reverſes—His Death—Potemkin becomes Favourite—Manner of inſtalling and diſmiſſing Favourites—Journey to Moſcow—Rewards granted to Mareſchal Romanzoff and the other Generals—Troubles in the Krimea—Zawadoffſky Favourite—Death of the Grand-duke's firſt Conſort—Journey of that Prince to Berlin—His ſecond Marriage—Zoritz Favourite - - page 356

BOOK IX.

Political Relations between Ruſſia and Denmark—Imperious Conduct of the Ruſſian Miniſters at Copenhagen—Struenſee—Bernſtorff—Ceſſion of Schleſwig—Political

—Political State of Sweden—Guſtavus III. at Peterſburgh—Treaty of Conſtantinople—Diſmiſſion of the Favourite Zoritz—Rimſky Korzakoff ſucceeds him—Armaments of Ruſſia—War between Pruſſia and Auſtria—Peace of Teſchen—Armed Neutrality—Catharine's Excurſion to Mohiloff—Joſeph II. at Peterſburgh—Frederick-William at Peterſburgh—Diſmiſſion of Korzakoff—Grand-duke's Travels in Europe - - - - page 401

BOOK X.

Catharine II. tenders her Mediation toward a Peace between Britain and Holland—Bobrinſky—Protection granted to the Jeſuits—Invaſion of the Krimea—Death of Panin and of Gregory Orloff—Connection between Ruſſia and Perſia, China and Japan—Catharine wiſhes to ſupport the Rights of Joſeph II. to the Navigation of the Scheldt—Death of Lanſkoï—Yermoloff Favourite—League of the Electors—Treaty of Commerce with France—Toleration Dinner—Momonoff ſucceeds Yermoloff—Catharine purchaſes the Libraries of Voltaire and of d'Alembert 441

BOOK XI.

Catharine II. travels to the Krimea—Aſſaſſination of Sahim-Gherai—The Turks declare War againſt Ruſſia—Guſtavus III. attacks the Ruſſians—Naval Battle of Hogland—Benzelſtierna attempts to burn the Ruſſian Fleet at Copenhagen—Capture of Oczakoff—Peace of Varela—Capture of Iſmaïl—Diſgrace of Momonoff—Zouboff becomes Favourite—Fawkener at Peterſburgh—Peace of Yaſſi—Death of Potemkin - - - page 487

BOOK

BOOK XII.

View of the Court of Peterſburgh at Potemkin's Death —Inſurrection of Koſciuſzko—Final Partition of Poland—Aſſaſſination of Guſtavus III.—Death of Leopold II.—French Emigrants in Ruſſia—Of Plato Zouboff and his Family—Treaty with England—D'Armfeldt's Conſpiracy—Journey of Guſtavus-Adolphus II. to Peterſburgh—Conqueſts in Perſia—Death of Catharine II.—Statement of the Preſents ſhe beſtowed on her Favourites. page 542

Direction

Direction for arranging the Plates.

Portrait of the Author, J. Caſtera, to front the Title Page.

PETER III. Emperor of Ruſſia, page 139

CATHARINE II. at the age of 34, 188

STANISLAUS PONIATOWSKY, King of Poland, - - - 259

View of the Fortreſs of SCHLUSSELBURGH, - 267

Portrait of IVAN VI. Emperor at the age of 2, aſſaſſinated at the age of 24 - 269

GREGORY GREGORIEWITZ ORLOFF, 273

ALEXIS ORLOFF, - - 315

Prince POTEMKIN, at the age of 38, 377

LANSKOI, - - - 472

Prince POTEMKIN, at the age of 51, 487

Field-Mareſchal SOUWAROFF, - 523

CATHARINE II. at the age of 64, 542

PAUL I. Emperor of Ruſſia, - 573

HISTORY OF CATHARINE II.

EMPRESS OF RUSSIA.

BOOK I.

INTRODUCTION. *Extent and Population of Ruſſia—Origin of the Ruſſians—Abridged Account of their Hiſtory previous to the Acceſſion of the Romanoffs to the Throne—Continuation of that Hiſtory down to the Reign of Elizabeth, Daughter of Peter I.*

CATHARINE II. has had ſo powerful an influence over the deſtinies of a great part of her contemporaries, that it will not, doubtleſs, be unimportant to retrace the events of her reign. In recounting the brilliant or the terrible actions of this reign, I ſhall neither overlook the ſecret intrigues which produced them, nor the details of ambition and of voluptuouſneſs ſo carefully concealed from the public view, and known only to the confidents of Catharine. Theſe details will ſerve to diſplay more openly the character of the moſt deceitful of women who ever ſwayed the ſceptre, and will bring into view all that nations have to apprehend from the caprice of tyrants.

I believe I ought to commence by giving an idea of thoſe countries and of thoſe nations over which Catharine II. reigned, as well as the revolutions which they have undergone. Let it not be ſuppoſed, however, that I intend to dwell long on the picture of thoſe ages in which Ruſſia was in a ſtate of mere barbariſm; vulgar princes and obſcure reigns are too much beneath the pen of an hiſtorian.

The empire of Ruſſia is the moſt extenſive in the world. In the year 1785 it comprehended in length one hundred and ſixty-eight degrees, and in its unequal breadth near thirty-two degrees. Its ſurface was 949,375 ſquare leagues, or 422,373 myriameters, and $\frac{4}{5}$ of a myriameter, of which the fifth part lies in Europe, and the remainder in Aſia, this amounts to nearly an eighth and an half of the known land of the globe.

But this empire is now farther increaſed by the laſt diviſion of Poland and by the union of Courland.

The centre of Ruſſia forms an immenſe plain, of which almoſt all the ſides extend in an imperceptible declination, and from whence iſſue a conſiderable number of great and ſmaller rivers.

This empire is bounded to the north by the Frozen Ocean, of which one arm forms the White Sea. Not far from this is ſituated the port of Archangel.

To the South, it has the Black Sea, the Kuban, Circaſſia, the Caſpian Sea, Grand Tartary, and the deſerts, which extend as far as China.

To the eaſt are the Sea of Japan, and the Strait of Anadyr, which ſeparates Aſia from the north-weſt coaſts of America.

Finally, to the weſtward of Ruſſia, we find Daniſh Lapland, Swediſh Lapland, Finland, the Baltic Sea, and Poland, of which, for ſome years paſt, the fineſt provinces are become provinces of Ruſſia.

Independently of the numerous rivers which flow through Ruſſia, we behold here ſeveral lakes and beautiful canals, the moſt conſiderable and moſt uſeful of which, the canal of Wiſchnei-Wolodzock, joins the Volga to Lake Ladoga, and ſerves, of conſequence, as a means of communication between the Caſpian Sea and the Baltic.

The mountains of Ruſſia are rich in wood and in minerals. Its foreſts contain vaſt numbers of animals, whoſe furs are in great requeſt. A part of its plains produces a great quantity of wheat and other

ſorts

ſorts of grain; and its rivers and lakes abound with fiſh.

It muſt not, however, be ſuppoſed, that a country ſo immenſe ſhould be in every part habitable. If we there meet with very fertile provinces and with temperate climes, we likewiſe behold foreſts entirely deſert, and regions where ſnow, ice, and the rigours of a ſky uniformly ſevere, diſcloſe to view, and but rarely, the huts of ſome miſerable exiles, or of ſcanty tribes hardly emerged from barbariſm.

Five and thirty years ago the population of Ruſſia was eſtimated at only twenty millions of inhabitants, of which number ſixteen millions were in Europe, and but four millions in Aſia. Under the reign of Catharine II, this population has increaſed more than a third. Beſides, Poland, Courland, the Krimea, Beſſarabia, and an influx from other countries, have added to it five millions of ſubjects; ſo that at preſent the number of the whole inhabitants of the Ruſſian ſtates amounts at leaſt to two and thirty millions.

We perceive by this, that the medium term of the population of Ruſſia is nearly ſeventy-five inhabitants to a ſquare myriameter. But this population is very ſmall, when we compare it with that of France and of England, where in the ſame ſpace of ground are reckoned two thouſand five hundred perſons: beſides, the inhabitants of Ruſſia are, in general, an aſſemblage of untaught tribes, and of wandering hordes, whoſe language very frequently is hardly intelligible to Ruſſians properly ſo called.

Without pauſing here to deſcribe the different nations, whoſe names are as barbarous as their manners, I ſhall endeavour to depict the Ruſſians in general, ſince the epocha at which they were firſt known.

Nearly nine hundred and fifty years have elapſed ſince the Ruſſians intermingled themſelves with a part of thoſe Sclaves or Sclavonians who, from the eaſt, migrated into the north, and, after having ſettled

on the ſhores of the Caſpian Sea and of the Palus Meotis, ſpread themſelves over different parts of Europe. Thoſe who attempt to give reaſons for every thing have derived the origin of the Sclavonians from Saklab, and of the Ruſſians from Rouſs, both of them ſons of Japhet, the youngeſt of the children of Noah. But a much more undoubted fact is, that we are ignorant of the real origin of the Sclavonians, and that the Ruſſians who, in confounding themſelves with them, have concluded by giving them their name, are ſprung from that innumerable family of Huns, whoſe armies, like deſtructive torrents, inundated the moſt beautiful countries of Aſia and of Europe, and accelerated the downfal of the Roman empire.

The firſt city which the Sclavonians built in Ruſſia was named Sclavenſk, and was ſituated on the banks of the Wolkoff, at a ſhort diſtance from Lake Ilmen. This was the ſtaple of that commerce which the Sclavonians carried on at the ſame time with the Greeks of Conſtantinople, and with the inhabitants of the ſhores of the Baltic. War and epidemical diſeaſes twice deſolated Sclavenſk, and cauſed it to be abandoned.

At the commencement of the fifth century the Sclavonians erected, not far from the ruins of Sclavenſk, the city of Novogorod, which became very ſoon more commercial and richer than the firſt had ever been. During this period a waterman, named Kii, laid upon the banks of the Dnieper the foundation of Kiœff; and Kiœff was for a long time the metropolis of the Ruſſians, as Novogorod was that of the Sclavonians.

It is pretended, that not contented with having built his city, Kii wiſhed to ſignalize himſelf by conqueſts, and that he carried his victorious arms as far as the ſea of Marmora. But at that time neither the Ruſſians nor the Sclavonians could ſet down in writing thoſe events of which they were the authors

or

or the witneſſes, as they did not even poſſeſs an alphabet; and there is every reaſon to believe, that what has been related of Kii is altogether fabulous.

A. D. 851. It is only from the year 851 that the Byzantine annals date the firſt incurſion which the Ruſſians made into the Greek empire. They had before that ravaged the ſhores of the Black Sea and of the Boſphorus, and, with a fleet of two hundred ſmall veſſels, they blocked up the port of Conſtantinople. The Emperor Michael III. reigned at that period. Inſtead of making any attempt toward a valiant defence, he had recourſe to the Greek Patriarch, who went to ſteep in the ſea the garments of a ſtatue of the Virgin, in order to obtain by their means aſſiſtance againſt the Ruſſians. Shortly after a ſtorm diſperſed the enemy's fleet. They did not fail to proclaim a miracle. Chance was ſo favourable to ſuperſtition that it extended its effects even to the Ruſſians. As the purchaſe of peace, Oſkhold, their chief, requeſted baptiſm, and carried back Chriſtianity to Kiœff.

Notwithſtanding, the city of Novogorod had no reaſon to regard Kiœff as an object of envy; her own commerce rendered her every day more flouriſhing. Occaſionally tributary to ſome of the pirates of Vareges, whoſe cupidity ſhe had excited, ſhe bravely ſhook off this diſgrace, and in her turn impoſed the yoke on divers nations contiguous to her territory. Her ſucceſs rendered her ſo formidable, that it was ſaid proverbially—"Who ſhall dare to attack God and Novogorod the Great."

The inhabitants of Novogorod did not acknowledge a maſter: their government was democratical, and every one there had a right to aſpire after authority, and to employ himſelf in modelling the ſtate, as they all poſſeſſed the power of increaſing their private fortunes by commerce. But of what uſe were theſe advantages to them? Deſpicable

republicans! In the very boſom of proſperity and equality they knew not how to be either happy or free. They had riches, but not the art of enjoying them; ambition, but not prudence; and the pride of commanding, without the expectation of being obeyed. Their diviſions, their quarrels, terminated in blood: to put a ſtop to this, they agreed to make choice of foreign chiefs. They, upon that occaſion made application to the Ruſſian Vareges, with whoſe valour they were well acquainted. Immediately three brothers, diſtinguiſhed among the pirates of the Baltic, arrived with their companions, to eſtabliſh peace and ſervitude among the Novogorodians.

A. D. 862. Theſe princes, named Rourik, Cinaf, and Trouvor, did not take up their reſidence in Novogorod. Whether it was to prevent all rivalſhip among themſelves, or whether it was in complaiſance to ſubjects whom the novelty of the yoke perhaps ſtill rendered untractable, they ſettled ſeparately, upon the three principal frontiers of the republic which had juſt given itſelf up to them. Rourik reared near Wolkoff, a city which has been called Old Ladoga, ſince Peter I. built another of the ſame name in the neighbourhood of this. Cinaf fixed his reſidence on the northern ſhore of the Biëloyé Oſéro; and Trouvor ſtationed himſelf at Iſborſk, near lake Pleſkoff, towards the confines of the ancient Livonia. By this method, theſe three princes had it in their power eaſily to control the ſeveral nations which the Novogorodians had brought into ſubjection, and whoſe inroads they apprehended.

From this period, the whole country ſubjected to Rourik and his brothers was known only under the name of Ruſſia, and its inhabitants under that of Ruſſians. However, in a very ſhort time the Novogorodians felt but too ſenſibly the yoke of iron which they had ſo imprudently impoſed upon themſelves. They were tempted ſtill more imprudently to endeavour to ſhake it off. They took up arms,

Vadim,

Vadim, who was at their head, received a death-blow from Rourik's own hand, who, not ſatisfied with having beheld a prodigious number of his new ſubjects fall beneath his ſtroke in the field, delivered up to the executioner all thoſe from whom he had ſtill reaſon to apprehend rebellion.

A. D. 864. Shortly after Rourik had glutted his vengeance, his two brothers died without iſſue, and left him ſole maſter of their joint eſtates. He quitted the city of Ladoga, and eſtabliſhed himſelf at Novogorod, which he fortified with a rampart of earth and wood. In order to recompenſe thoſe Varegian warriors who had been the moſt inſtrumental in aiding him to conquer the Novogorodians, he gave them the command of his principal cities; but this did not prevent ſome among them from withdrawing themſelves, who choſe rather to do this than to remain in ſubjection to the deſpotiſm of his benefits.

A. D. 879. Rourik died after a reign of ſeventeen years. He left but one ſon of the age of four, who was named Igor, and the care of whoſe education he confided to Oleg, his kinſman.

This charge was without doubt a very ſacred one to Oleg, for he retained it till the time of his death, that is to ſay, during thirty-four years. Finding, beſides, that the ſtates of his pupil were very contracted, he employed himſelf in extending them. He brought the Drewlians into ſubjection; he made himſelf maſter of Smolenſko and Lubetz by force,

A. D. 884. and of Kiœff by treachery, and by the maſſacre of the princes Oſkhold and Dir who reigned there. Oleg upon this eſtabliſhed his reſidence at Kiœff, and armed a fleet of two thouſand boats, with which he went to

A. D. 904. lay Conſtantinople under tribute. In this audacious and barbarous expedition, the Ruſſians abandoned themſelves to all the exceſſes, and committed all the crimes which could poſſibly diſgrace the moſt ferocious of conquerors.

They overcame obſtacles which appeared to be inſurmountable; but their ſucceſs will excite leſs aſtoniſhment, if we reflect that other pirates, who, like them, had but a few crazy ſkiffs, ſeveral times vanquiſhed England, and ravaged the coaſts of France, and that ſince, the freebooters, with their little canoes, for a long time cauſed the conquerors of the new world to tremble.

A. D. 913. Igor gave convincing proofs that he was a pupil worthy of Oleg. After having for a long time carried on war with the nations contiguous to his ſtates, he took his departure with ten thouſand veſſels and an army of four hundred thouſand warriors, with the intention of laying waſte the empire of the eaſt, and he deluged with
A. D. 941. blood Pontus, Bithynia and Paphlagonia. There is no ſpecies of cruelty which the Ruſſians did not exerciſe againſt the wretched inhabitants of thoſe countries. But the Greeks had at laſt recourſe to that terrible invention which bears their name. The Greek fire which they darted on the Ruſſian fleet, deſtroyed a great part of it. Several engagements were productive of equally fatal conſequences to Igor, and this barbarian led back to Kiœff only a third of the numerous army with which he had ſet out. However, a ſecond expedition proved leſs unfortunate for the Ruſſians: the Greek Emperor choſe rather to pay them tribute than to attempt to vanquiſh them.

A. D. 945. Alga, the wife of Igor, was, at the death of this prince, left charged with the government of his ſtates, and ſhe ſhewed that ſhe was no leſs barbarous than he had been, but more perfidious and more ſuperſtitious. In her old age ſhe embraced Chriſtianity. Her converſion was neither imitated by her ſubjects, nor even by her ſon, to whom ſhe then yielded up the throne. The ſame
A. D. 955. example, given by Voladimir I, one of her deſcendants, had a greater effect.

After

After having paſſed the moſt conſiderable portion of his life in the fury of carnage, and in the ſtupidity of idolatry, he took a fancy to become a Chriſtian according to the Greek rites, and to eſpouſe the ſiſter of the Emperor of Conſtantinople, who durſt not refuſe her to him. In cauſing himſelf to be baptized, he commanded his ſubjects to do the ſame. Every one haſtened to obey him.

A. D. 988. The Ruſſians and the Sclavonians had till that period acknowledged ſeveral deities, of which the principal was *Peroun*, who they believed hurled the thunder, and regulated at his pleaſure all the celeſtial phenomena, and to whom they frequently ſacrificed human victims. *Koupalo* was the god of plenty and of harveſts; and his worſhippers did not bedew his altars with blood, nor thoſe of *Lada*, whom they regarded as the goddeſs of love. Other divinities protected flocks, or preſided over war, navigation, ſleep, or riches; for the mythology which created them, ſeems to have been nothing but a groſs imitation of the Grecian mythology.

As ſoon as Voladimir became Chriſtian, he wiſhed to give a proof of the impotence of thoſe idols he had ſo long adored. He ordered that of Peroun to be faſtened to the tail of a horſe, who drew it to the very brink of the Dnieper, whilſt a dozen ſoldiers beat it luſtily with a ſtick, after which it was thrown into the river.

We will not ſtop to review the actions of the Sviatoſlafs, the Sviatopolks, the Yaroſlafs, and a croud of other princes, whoſe only object was to tyrannize over their ſubjects, and to diſturb their neighbours. During the firſt four centuries, of which the Ruſſian hiſtory makes mention, it only preſents a conſtant ſucceſſion of iniquitous aggreſſion, of atrocious combats, and of abſurd ſuperſtitions. We frequently behold there the moſt perfidious treachery concealing itſelf under the veil of ſincerity; brother murdered by the hand of brother; ſtupidity pouring forth the accuſations of ſorcery;

ſorcery; and cauſing its victims to periſh by fire and by the ſword; old age and infancy butchered without mercy; the conquered loaded with chains, whilſt even before their eyes their wives and their daughters were compelled to ſatiate the brutality of the conquerors; the Petchenegues, the Kozars, the Turks, the Polowitſi laying waſté together, or by turns, Ruſſia aggrandized at their expenſe; the Hungarians, the Lithuanians, the Poles, attacking it on another ſide; the children of Ruſſian ſovereigns always up in arms to diſpute the inheritance of their fathers. Whoever peruſes the details of the reign of one of thoſe barbarians, beholds that of all of them, for each reſembles another in ambition, ignorance, and in the commiſſion of crimes.

A. D. 1220. But a great revolution interrupted for a time their tyranny, without altering their character. Among that numerous race of people whom we deſign under the general name of Tartars, and who pretend to be all deſcended from Turk or Tourk, the eldeſt of the eight ſons of Japhet, there are ſome tribes which have become infinitely more powerful than others. Such were, at that time, thoſe which had as chiefs two brothers, the one of whom was named Tatar, the other Mongoul, and which have been ſince divided into a conſiderable number of hordes, who diſtinguiſh themſelves by different names.

In that of the Mongouls, aroſe the celebrated Genghis-Khan, he who of all conquerors has extended the fartheſt the power of his arms. The death of his father, left him at the age of thirteen years the chief of a tribe compoſed of forty thouſand families. Inſtead of beginning to carry on war immediately, he employed himſelf, during ſix and twenty years, in diſciplining his troops, and inſuring to himſelf all the methods of obtaining victory. After having reduced to ſubjection the hordes in the neighbourhood of his own, he proceeded to take poſſeſſion of the greateſt part of China, of the half of Indoſtan, almoſt the whole

of

of Perſia, and, re-aſcending the Volga, he ſubjugated the kingdoms of Kaſan and of Aſtrakan, and all that country which then ſerved as the boundary of Ruſſia to the ſouth. His conqueſts were extended over more than a ſpace of eighteen hundred leagues from eaſt to weſt, and more than a thouſand from north to ſouth.

A. D. 1224. In contemplating this vaſt theatre of the triumphs of Genghis-Khan, the aſtoniſhed imagination cannot refrain from pauſing with an emotion of admiration. But when we reflect afterwards, that all the ſteps of this victorious Tartar were marked by conflagration, murder, and pillage, we muſt undergo for ſome time the deepeſt horror. And how is it poſſible to forbear deteſting a robber, who only exiſted for the purpoſe of invading the earth, and who placed his whole happineſs in oppreſſion, and his glory in deſtruction?

The generals of Genghis-Khan had defeated ſeveral Ruſſian armies, and cut the throats of ſome of the princes of that nation: but it was reſerved for Batou-Sagin, grandſon of the victorious Tartar, to ſubjugate Ruſſia entirely. He appeared there in

A. D. 1235. the character of a complete exterminator. He reduced to aſhes a great number of cities and villages, and cauſed to be maſſacred not only the inhabitants who made the ſlighteſt reſiſtance, but frequently thoſe who ſubmitted and implored his pity. In this bloody invaſion the Tartars renewed all thoſe exceſſes of which the Ruſſians had ſo many times given the horrible example.

A. D. 1240. Scarcely had the Tartars begun to aim at new conqueſts, than the chevaliers *Porte-glaives*, who, under pretext of propagating the Chriſtian religion, had made themſelves maſters of Livonia and of Eſtonia, joined themſelves to Eric the ſtammerer, king of Sweden, in order to attack the Ruſſians. Victory remained with theſe laſt; and as they had conveyed back to the ſhores of the Neva, the

the prince Alexander, who commanded them, they impoſed on him the ſurname of Newſky.

The Ruſſians continued, during three centuries, vaſſals of the Tartars, who gave to the princes of Kiœff, of Novogorod, of Volodimir, of Moſcow, the inveſtiture of their eſtates, or diſpoſſeſſed them at pleaſure, and frequently put them to death. Frequently alſo the Ruſſian princes, oppreſſed and jealous, made war with each other, or had to defend themſelves againſt the Poles, the Swedes, and other neighbouring nations.

A. D. 1462. Nevertheleſs the power of the Tartars became weakened by diviſion. Ivan III. Waſſiliewitz, had the addreſs to profit by it. He compelled the Khan Ibraham to become tributary to him. Ivan IV. was ſtill more fortunate. After having cauſed himſelf to be crowned at Moſcow, and being the firſt Ruſſian ſovereign who received ſolemnly the title
A. D. 1547. of Czar, he attacked the Tartars, vanquiſhed them in ſeveral engagements, and made himſelf maſter of Kaſan and of Aſtrakan. He repulſed the Sultan of the
A. D. 1555. Turks, Selim II. who had formed the project of taking poſſeſſion of the laſt mentioned city. Finally, he conquered the Poles and the chevaliers Porte-Glaives.

Ivan IV. ordered a code of laws to be compoſed, among which we find ſome that are wiſe and others extremely barbarous; ſuch are the trials by fire, by boiling water, and the combat in an encloſed field between the accuſer and the accuſed. But, although a legiſlator, Ivan was himſelf the moſt abſurd and moſt cruel of all deſpots. Whoever had the misfortune to approach him, became, upon the ſlighteſt pretext, the victim of his ferocious caprice. Almoſt all his favorites periſhed by his orders. The women whom he met in the ſtreets were frequently ſent to the gibbet, or expoſed to every ſpecies of ignominious torment.

However,

However, fortune which had for ſo long a time been favourable to Ivan, abandoned him all at once. The Tartars of the Krimea ravaged Ruſſia, and proceeded ſo far as to ſet on fire the ſuburbs of Moſcow; the Swedes, aided by the Poles, took Narva, and advanced up to Novogorod. Ivan vanquiſhed on all ſides, in a fit of rage killed his own ſon; and, polluted with blood and debauchery, died after tranſforming himſelf into a friar. A. D. 1584.

Under the reign of this prince, ſome Engliſh merchants, who navigated on the White Sea, entered into the northern Dwina, diſcovered the port of Archangel, and penetrated as far as Moſcow. The Czar received them with joy, and invited them to continue their commerce in his ſtates, a commerce which has greatly increaſed ſince that period.

It was alſo under Ivan IV. that the conqueſt of Siberia was completed. A merchant, named Anika Strogonoff, who had a manufactory of ſalt on the banks of a river, the waters of which emptied themſelves into the Dwina, having ſeveral times ſeen ſome foreigners, remarkable from their dreſs, their features, and their language, come to ſell him beautiful furs, and other valuable articles, ordered ſome of his people to accompany them on their return. They penetrated with theſe ſtrangers up to the ſhores of the Oby. After having greatly enriched himſelf by the commerce which he carried on with the Siberians, Anika Strogonoff gave notice of his diſcovery to the court of Moſcow. The Czar wiſhed to ſubjugate this people, but the army which he ſent out againſt them was completely deſtroyed. He had altogether renounced the idea of attacking them anew, when a Koſac, named Yermak, who had been guilty of ſeveral criminal enterpriſes againſt the Ruſſians, attempted to conceal himſelf from their vengeance, and endeavoured to penetrate into Siberia at the head of ſix thouſand of his companions. He had to brave at once the length and the difficulties of the road,

the

the courage and the number of the nations whom he was going to attack, hunger, the rigours of the moſt exceſſive cold; but he overcame them all, and after having loſt more than eleven twelfths of his little army, he remained maſter of Sibir, and of a part of the ſhores of the Irtich and the Tobol. He haſtened to preſent the homage of his conqueſts at the court of Moſcow, in the view of procuring his pardon. He obtained it indeed: but had not long the enjoyment of it. In endeavouring to eſcape a ſnare which a Khan of Siberia had laid for the purpoſe of having him maſſacred, he fell into a river and was drowned. Some time after this, perfidy and violence put the finiſhing ſtroke to the ſubjugation of Siberia to the Ruſſians.

It may be here obſerved that the Koſacs, of whom Yermak was one of the moſt audacious, and who compoſe at this day a formidable part of the Ruſſian armies, are the remains of thoſe ancient Koſacs, who, although of the race of the Sclavonians, pretend to the honour of a peculiar origin, calling themſelves the deſcendants of Kamari, the ſeventh ſon of Japhet, and have ſometimes aſſumed his name, which procured for them from the Greeks the appellation of Cimmeri, and from the Romans that of Cimbri.

A. D. 1598. Fedor I. the timid and feeble ſon of the ferocious Ivan IV. reigned after him, and was the laſt prince of a dynaſty, which in the ſpace of 736 years gave fifty-two ſovereigns to Ruſſia.

Boris Godounoff, who paved his way to the throne by the aſſaſſination of the Czarowitz Demitri and by other murders, pretended at firſt to decline accepting the throne which his partiſans offered him: but ſhortly after he aſcended and diſgraced it, like the greater part of his predeceſſors, by the moſt ſhocking cruelties. On his death his ſon Fedor II.
A. D. 1605. ſucceeded him, and very ſoon loſt, in a barbarous manner, the bloody inheritance which his father had uſurped. A monk, named Otrepieff, made himſelf paſs for the Czarowitz Demitri,

tri, eſcaped from the dagger of his aſſaſſins. Inſtigated by the intrigues of the Jeſuits, to whom he had promiſed the converſion of Ruſſia to the Roman Catholic religion, and ſeconded by the arms of the Koſacs and of the Poles, he took poſſeſſion of Moſcow, and delivered up to the executioner the Czar Fedor, the Czarina, the mother of that prince, and the remainder of their family. Fedor was ſtrangled over the bleeding body of his mother.

Otrepieff was peaceably crowned at Moſcow, and the mother of Demitri acknowledged him for her ſon. He afterwards eſpouſed, with great pomp, the daughter of the palatine of Sandomir, the young and ambitious Marina, with whom he had fallen in love in Poland. But the moment he ceaſed to employ ſeverity, conſpiracies were formed againſt him. It muſt be confeſſed, to the diſgrace of the Ruſſians, that the clemency of their Czars has almoſt always been productive of fatal conſequences to thoſe princes. Waſſili Chouiſky, whom Otrepieff had ſnatched from the ſcaffold, repaid his benefits with the blackeſt ingratitude. He deprived him of his throne and his life; and the Czarina-mother, who had declared this ſame Otrepieff to be her ſon, now aſſerted that he was a rank impoſtor.

A. D. 1606. Chouiſky received the reward of his crime. He cauſed himſelf to be proclaimed Czar, and ſhewed himſelf worthy of his title only by his tyranny. The enemy of all thoſe who preſumed to diſtinguiſh themſelves by their talents or their virtues, he never failed to bring them to puniſhment. He embrued his hands in the blood of his neareſt relations. The boyards, in indignation, raiſed up againſt him three new pretended Demitri, and concluded by depoſing him and by obliging him to turn monk. Carried off by one of the generals of the king of Poland, Sigiſmund III. he was conducted to Warſaw, where he terminated, ſhortly after, his turbulent career.

The

The depoſition and death of Chouiſky were ſucceeded by an interregnum of three years. The Ruſſians at firſt choſe for Czar Uladiſlaus, A. D. 1610. ſon of the King of Poland. But Sigiſmund liking better to attempt diſmembering Ruſſia than to behold his ſon ſovereign there, was in no haſte to ſend him to take poſſeſſion of the throne which awaited him; and the Ruſſians, diſſatiſfied with the projects of plunder which Sigiſmund had formed, renounced the idea of having his ſon to reign over them.

The Swediſh general, Pontus de la Gardie, had gotten poſſeſſion of Novogorod, which was always regarded as the cradle of the Ruſſian nation. The inhabitants of this city demanded for their ſovereign Prince Charles-Philip of Sweden. But is there not, then, upon the throne, a ſingle man exempt from that jealous ſelfiſhneſs which ambition inſpires? The greateſt of the heroes of the ſeventeenth century, Guſtavus-Adolphus, dreaded to ſee his brother maſter of an empire more vaſt than his own.

A. D. 1630. At laſt, the boyards, the woïwodes, the landed-proprietors, the deputies of the cities, and all thoſe who compoſed the ſtates of Ruſſia, aſſembled at Moſcow, and ſolemnly elected for Czar, a young man of ſixteen, Michael Yourieff, better known by the name of Michael Romanoff, and ſon of Philaretes, metropolitan of Roſtoff. This laſt, at that period, was languiſhing in a priſon at Warſaw, and his ſon Michael was educated in a convent of Koſtroma. The mother of Michael, who alſo lived at Koſtroma, had been compelled to become a nun, as Philaretes had been obliged to turn prieſt.

The head of the family of the Romanoffs was a Pruſſian, named André, who ſettled in Ruſſia towards the cloſe of the fourteenth century. Genealogiſts have not failed to make a prince of this André, but nothing can be more certain than, that it is not known who he

he was; and of what importance is it? If his deſcendants reigned gloriouſly, their origin is always ſufficiently noble.

A. D. 1618. The Swedes and the Poles continued for ſome time to extend their conqueſts in Ruſſia, and peace left them maſters of part of the provinces of that empire, which has ſince aggrandized itſelf ſo much at their expenſe.

As ſoon as the return of peace had reſtored the metropolitan Philaretes to liberty, the young Czar, his ſon, elevated him to the dignity of
A. D. 1619. patriarch, and ſuffered himſelf to be entirely directed by him. The old man was highly worthy of this confidence.

Michael Romanoff had already occupied the throne twelve years without entertaining thoughts of marriage. However, the nobles and the clergy having given him a ſolemn invitation to take a wife, he acceded to their wiſhes.

A. D. 1625. From the period that the Ruſſian ſovereigns were maſters of the kingdoms of Kaſan and Aſtrakan, they had adopted ſeveral Aſiatic cuſtoms, and among others, that of chuſing their conſorts from among their own ſubjects. The moſt beautiful girls of the empire were ordered to come to the capital; they were lodged in a building ſeparated from the palace, and divided into ſeveral apartments. On the day which the Czar had fixed upon for making his choice, he paid a viſit to this houſe, accompanied by a boyard, reſpectable from his age and his character, and ſeated himſelf upon a throne. All the candidates came one after another to proſtrate themſelves before the prince, who after having examined them, threw over their naked breaſt a veil ornamented with pearls and precious ſtones. However, it was not known in favour of whom he had decided, till the day of marriage. She then received the nuptial robe, and to the others were diſtributed clothes and other preſents with which they returned each one to her family.

Michael Romanoff chose for his wife the daughter of a prince Dolgorouky, but from the moment that she mounted the throne, she languished, and expired at the end of four months. The superstitious Russians attributed her death to witchcraft, and several persons perished on the scaffold absurdly accused of this crime. The Czar supplied the place of this princess by Eudoxa Streschneff, daughter of a poor boyard, who himself cultivated his own fields.

A. D. 1632. The patriarch Philaretes had given encouragement to commerce and the arts; at his death, their progress was interrupted. The Czar, deprived of the wise counsels of his father, renewed the war against Poland, and after several fruitless efforts to retake Smolensko, found himself reduced to sue for peace. This prince died in 1645, and left the throne to his son Alexis Michaëlowitz, aged only sixteen.

Alexis had for governor the boyard Boris Morozoff, who was in haste to have him crowned, and become his prime minister, or rather reigned despotically under his name. Meanness and flattery were the first arts which Morozoff employed in order to exalt himself; perfidy, violence, cruelty, became afterwards the familiar instruments of his ambition. Although at an advanced age, he had become enamoured of a daughter of the boyard Miloslaffsky, and he persuaded Alexis to elevate to the rank of Czarina, the second daughter of this boyard; after which he married the one whom he loved. However, his haughtiness, his avarice, his unremitting injustice, stirred up a general revolt in Moscow. His three principal accomplices became the victims of the fury of the people, and he only escaped himself in consequence of the humble intercession which the Czar condescended to employ in order to save him.

The reign of Alexis was disturbed by other revolts; but the only methods employed to quell them, were

the

the ſabre of the ſirelitzes and the axe of the executioner. A new impoſtor endeavoured to paſs himſelf for the ſon of the Czarowitz Demitri; but he had ſoon reaſon to repent it. Duke Chriſtian Albert de Holſtein, into whoſe ſtates he had withdrawn, ſold him to Alexis, and by his command he was cut into quarters at Moſcow.

A Koſac of the Don, named Stenko Razin, gave the Czar more ſerious inquietude. Having made himſelf chief of a band of robbers of his own nation, he reſtricted himſelf for ſome time to pillaging the Ruſſian caravans and the veſſels which ſailed down the Volga. Afterwards, emboldened by his ſucceſs, he took ſome cities by ſurpriſe, and maſſacred the garriſon and the principal inhabitants, drove back the troops which were ſent out againſt him; took poſſeſſion of all the veſſels which navigated the Caſpian Sea, made a deſcent upon the coaſts of Per-
A. D. 1650. ſia, laid waſte a part of Guilan, took priſoner the ſon of the governor of that province, and returned into Ruſſia with the audacious project of making himſelf king of Aſtrakan. But his good fortune had a period: inſtead of the throne which he hoped for, he found
A. D. 1673. only a ſcaffold. More than twelve thouſand of his accomplices were hanged, upon the highways which terminate in Aſtrakan.

The Czar having declared war againſt Poland, retook Smolenſko, Kiœff, Bielo-Oſero, and their territory which had been taken from Ruſſia, and of which it has ſince that period kept poſſeſſion. At the ſame time the Koſacs of the Ukraine, diſſatisfied with the Poles, acknowledged the Czar for their ſovereign; this added to Ruſſia one of its moſt beautiful provinces. Alexis afterwards turned his forces againſt the Swedes, and at firſt obtained ſome ſucceſs, which was ſucceeded by a ſudden reverſe and a forced peace.

This prince did not bound himself to the desire of aggrandizing his estates. He employed himself likewise in the care of enriching and civilizing them. Before his reign, the prisoners of war remained the slaves of the officers who took them. He altered this custom. He determined that the prisoners should belong to no one but the state only, and by this means, he transported colonies of Lithuanians, of Poles, and of Tartars, into the deserts in the vicinity of the Volga and of the Kama. He encouraged the sciences, commerce, the arts; and if they did not flourish greatly in his time, the progress which they have made under the reign of his successors is not the less to be attributed to him. As he was desirous of having fleets on the Caspian and Black Seas, he procured from Holland carpenters and seamen, qualified to instruct his subjects in the art of ship-building and in navigation. Finally, he composed a code of laws which, all imperfect as it is, far excels that of Ivan IV. But it is, unhappily, to Alexis Michaëlowitz that we must impute the institution of a tribunal which is named the *Secret Chancery*, a state inquisition, not less sanguinary, not less barbarous than that which, under the mask of piety, has so long been the disgrace, and produced the desolation, of certain Catholic countries.

The first wife of the Czar dying in 1669, this prince married very soon after Natalia Narischkin, by whom he had that prince who became so celebrated under the name of Peter I.

Alexis died in the forty-sixth year of his age. He left by his first marriage two sons and six daughters. The eldest named Fedor, who was only fifteen years old, and whom he had caused to be acknowledged his successor, ascended the throne after him.

Fedor Alexiowitz was of a weak and valetudinary temperament; but he had a decided character, and gave a proof of it in executing a project which was to alienate from him the hearts of all the boyards.

This

This project, conceived by the prince Waſſili-Galitzin, his miniſter, conſiſted in annihilating the genealogies, which ſerved to nouriſh the pretenſions and the idle rivalſhips of the nobility. Fedor approved of it; and having ordered all the titles of noble families to be brought to him, under pretext of committing them to a grand regiſter, he had them ſolemnly burnt in preſence of his council and of the patriarch. Few genealogies eſcaped this conflagration. The names of the nobles were afterwards inſcribed on two public regiſters. A. D. 1681.

Fedor reigned only ſix years. Death carried him off in the flower of his age. Some time before he expired, perceiving that his brother Ivan, deſtitute at once of bodily and mental qualities, was incapable of reigning, he named as the heir of the throne, his ſecond brother, Peter, aged only ten years, but endowed with a robuſt conſtitution, and already announcing an intrepid character.

The choice of Fedor was highly diſapproved by Sophia, the third of his ſiſters, a ſprightly, intriguing and bold princeſs, who foreſaw that if the feeble Ivan aſcended the throne ſhe would reign under his name, and that if, on the contrary, Peter was crowned, the Nariſchkin family would hold the reins of government. Sophia immediately engaged her friends and partiſans to gain over, in ſecret, the numerous guard of the ſtrelitzes. The money and the calumnies which were diſſeminated eaſily ſeduced them. Twenty thouſand of theſe barbarous troops ſurrounded the Kremlin, which is the palace of the Czars, at Moſcow; and after they had inflicted the ſhameful puniſhment of the battoges * on nine of their colonels, whom they accuſed of not having paid them punctually, they ordered the two brothers Nariſchkin to be delivered up to them, threw one of them from the windows, cut the

* The patient is ſtripped naked, ſtretched along upon the belly, and beaten with rods by two executioners.

other in pieces, maſſacred forty more whom they had proſcribed, and ſome unfortunate beings who were not upon their fatal liſt, and proclaimed as ſovereigns the two princes Ivan and Peter, aſſociating with them the princeſs Sophia in quality of regent.

From this moment Sophia took poſſeſſion of the ſupreme power, and divided it with her lover Waſſili-Galitzin, whom ſhe appointed prime miniſter and generaliſſimo of the troops. A ſhort time after ſhe married the Czar Ivan to the young Proſkovia-Soltikoff, whoſe beauty bore away the palm from a great number of rivals.

During the feſtivities of this marriage, the ſtrelitzes made a ſecond inſurrection. The opinions of a ſectary, named Abakum, who pretended that a hierarchy ſhould not be permitted in the church of Chriſt, ſerved as the pretext of their revolt: but its real cauſe was the jealouſy of the Knes Kavanſky, their commander, who, having contributed to the elevation of Sophia, and ſeeing that ſhe preferred Galitzin, reſolved to avenge himſelf on this princeſs. Sophia withdrew with the two Czars her brothers, and the reſt of her family, into the convent of the Trinity, a well fortified building, at twelve leagues diſtance from Moſcow. When there, ſhe negociated with Kavanſky, who being imprudent enough to believe that he might preſent himſelf before the regent, was arreſted on the road, and decapitated together with his ſon. Deprived of their chief, the ſtrelitzes were eaſily brought back to repentance. The moſt mutinous were puniſhed, and the reſt pardoned.

A. D. 1687. During a long period the Khans of the country which we call the Krimea, and which the Greeks knew under the name of the Tauric-Kherſonéſus, had exacted from Ruſſia an annual tribute of ſixty thouſand roubles. Sophia wiſhing to liberate herſelf from this diſgraceful ſervitude, declared war againſt the Tartars of the Krimea, and Galitzin took the command of the numerous army which marched

againſt

againſt them. But the two campaigns which he made were not ſucceſsful. On his return, he did not the leſs aſſume the haughty demeanour of a conqueror. The young Czar Peter, who had diſapproved of the war, did not conceal the diſſatisfaction and the contempt with which this inſolent miniſter inſpired him, and this laſt conſpired with Sophia and the new chief of the ſtrelitzes to have Peter maſſacred.

Peter, informed of this conſpiracy, eſcaped once more to the convent of the Trinity. There he convoked the boyards, and all thoſe who were attached to his family, and he very ſoon beheld himſelf ſurrounded by a great number of defenders. Sophia, who remained at Moſcow with Ivan, made an effort to retain the ſtrelitzes in her party; but they were already ſick of her yoke, and almoſt all of them attached themſelves to Peter.

The chief of the ſtrelitzes periſhed by the puniſhment of the knout. Other conſpirators had their heads cut off. Galitzin, for whom one of his relations made interceſſion, and who was beloved of the Czar Peter, was only deprived of his eſtates, and exiled to the environs of Archangel. The princeſs Sophia had her head ſhaved, and was ſhut up, for the remainder of her days, in a convent at Moſcow.

A. D. 1689. Peter aſſumed the reins of government. His brother Ivan preſerved the title of Czar; but although his name appeared in the public acts, this prince did not poſſeſs the leaſt authority. He died in 1696.

The life of Peter I. is too well known for me to undertake here to retrace the events of it. Beſides, this attempt would be foreign to my ſubject, which only permits me to take a ſlight review of thoſe reigns which preceded that of Catharine II. Miſinformed writers and notorious flatterers have depicted Peter as only a legiſlator and a hero: but they have given but half a repreſentation of him. My

ardent love of truth obliges me to ſay, that the great qualities and the brilliant actions of this prince were ſullied by failings, by violence, and by terrible crimes.

The weakneſs of his mother, who durſt not contradict him, and the craftineſs of the regent Sophia, who determined to keep him in a ſtate of ignorance, were the cauſes that Peter I. paſſed a part of his youth with a ſet of debauched young people, whoſe example he was but too much inclined to follow. However, his affection for foreigners ſoon made him bluſh for his ignorance, and, without renouncing his pleaſures, he learnt a little German and Dutch, and even ſomething of the mathematics.

It was much about this time that he attached the Genoeſe Lefort to him, with whom he fell by chance acquainted at the houſe of the Daniſh envoy at Moſcow, and who became in the end a baron and general of the Ruſſian armies. The Czar found, between him and Lefort, ſo great a conformity of ideas and inclinations, that he made him the confident of all his projects, and always ſhewed the greateſt deference to his advice. He even gave it him in charge to mollify and bring him back to reaſon, when he was in thoſe fits of paſſion to which he was ſubject, and which, co-operating at times with the intoxication produced by ſtrong liquors, rendered him outrageous. At thoſe times Lefort only durſt ſpeak to him; and reproaching him with his intemperance and his madneſs, he went ſo far as to employ violence in order to check him. It was not however without danger that Lefort diſplayed a zeal ſo bold. Peter one time had almoſt ſtabbed him; but after his fury was over, he embraced Lefort and entreated his pardon.

Lefort had for ſome time borne arms in France and Holland, and ſtill preſerved a great inclination for the military life. He inſpired the Czar with this inclination, who immediately formed a regiment of young

young boyards, the companions of his ſports, and commenced himſelf by being drummer in that regiment, in order to give the example of ſubordination.

If Peter learnt from Lefort to delight in war, to chance alone he was indebted for the noble and happy idea of creating a navy in his ſtates. While he was yet very young, he perceived, as he was walking in a village near Moſcow, a ſloop which a Dutchman, named Brandt, had conſtructed in the reign of Alexis Michäelowitz. He was immediately anxious to diſcover why this ſloop was ſo different from all the veſſels which he had till then ſeen; and was informed, that it was in order that ſhe might ſail againſt the wind. This reply only augmented his curioſity. Brandt was immediately ſummoned, and the ſloop, provided with maſts and ſails, received the young Czar, who, to his great ſurpriſe, beat to windward with Brandt on the river Yaouſſa. Peter immediately ordered Brandt to build him a yacht, which was launched in the Moſcowa in 1691; and ſhortly after the ſame Dutchman conſtructed, on the borders of lake Periloff, and under the inſpection of the Czar, ſeveral ſmall veſſels which carried guns, and with which this prince exerciſed himſelf for ſome time.

A. D. 1697. The death of Brandt did not in the leaſt degree abate the ardour of the Czar for his marine. He himſelf viſited Holland ſome years afterwards, to learn the art of ſhip-building, and they ſtill ſhew, in the village of Sardam, the little lodging which he occupied, when he laboured there as a common carpenter. From thence he paſſed into England; and when he was fully able to form a judgment of the nautical ſcience of theſe two countries, he gave to his veſſels a mixture of the Engliſh and Dutch naval architecture, which they have preſerved ſince that period.

Before he returned to Ruſſia, Peter had a deſire to viſit Germany. Whilſt he was at Vienna, he learnt that the ſtrelitzes and other malecontents were attempting

attempting to replace Sophia upon the throne. He flew immediately to Moſcow; he found the rebels already vanquiſhed by the troops who had remained faithful to him, and had only to glut his implacable vengeance.

It was in travelling through Ingria and in Carelia that Peter formed the project of taking poſſeſſion of thoſe provinces, that he might be enabled to maintain a fleet upon the Baltic. The youth of Charles XII. ſeemed to be favourable to this deſign. Peter haſtened to form a league with the kings of Poland and Denmark againſt Sweden, and to commence a war which, during eighteen years, deſolated the north of Europe. Charles XII. conquered very ſoon all thoſe who had attacked him. He beſieged the King of Denmark in Copenhagen, and obliged him to ſue for peace. He dethroned the King of Poland, and would have dethroned the Czar, but the loſs of a ſingle battle tore from him the fruit of nine years ſucceſs, and rendered him, during nine years more, the moſt wretched of monarchs.

Notwithſtanding the innumerable loſſes of men and of money which this war coſt the Czar, it was the means of realizing his hopes, as it procured him not only the conqueſt of Ingria and of Carelia, but the poſſeſſion of Livonia, of Eſtonia, of the country of Viburgh, and of a conſiderable part of Finland. It likewiſe taught the Ruſſians to fight with that rigid ſubordination and that ferocious intrepidity, which have rendered them ſince then the terror of the Ottomans and the plunderers of Poland.

The conqueror of the Swedes, Peter was ſoon afterwards that of the Turks, from whom he wreſted the port of Azoph, on the ſea of Zabacha; but they obliged him to reſtore it in the concluſion of the diſaſtrous campaign of Pruth. More for-
A. D. 1723. tunate with the Perſians, he conquered Derbent, and made himſelf maſter of the navigation and the commerce of the Caſpian Sea.

By

By a treaty made at the commencement of his reign, the limits between Ruſſia and China were fixed upon the ſhores of the Gorbitza, and the commerce of the Ruſſians with the Chineſe was carried on with freſh vigour.

During the whole time that the war was continued againſt Sweden, Peter I, did not loſe ſight of the reform and the eſtabliſhments which he had commenced; his chief attention was directed to his navy. He had on the Baltic a fleet which gained ſeveral victories. He ordered canals to be dug, and among others that which joins the Caſpian Sea to the Gulph of Finland. He conſtructed high-ways; he embelliſhed ſeveral cities; he laid the foundation of Peterſburgh in a little marſhy iſland, and from the boſom of the waters there was almoſt immediately ſeen a ſuperb city raiſing its head. He encouraged commerce, and opened new roads for it; he eſtabliſhed ſeveral manufactures of arms, of ſtuffs, of pottery, and even of pins, for before his time the Ruſſians did not poſſeſs the art of making them. He aboliſhed the charge of patriarch; he diminiſhed the number and the power of the monks; he inſtituted ſchools and academies; he compoſed a code of laws which, notwithſtanding its imperfections, is very ſuperior to thoſe of Ivan IV. and of Alexis Michaëlowitz. The repeated efforts of the conqueror of Narva were not the only obſtacles to ſo many undertakings. Peter had to combat, in the very midſt of his own ſtates, the fury of ſuperſtition and the obſtinate prejudices of a barbarous nation; but the reſolute firmneſs of his character enabled him to brave them all.

Of all the innovations of the Czar, that which preſented to him the greateſt difficulties and coſt him the moſt bloodſhed, was the change in the mode of dreſs which he exacted of his ſubjects, a very uſeleſs and impolitic alteration. The Ruſſians ſubmitted with the utmoſt reluctance to aſſume the German habit and to ſuffer themſelves to be ſhaved, and they revolted

revolted ſeveral times, to preſerve their long robes and their beards. But Peter imagined, that in giving to his people the faſhions of the other nations of Europe, he would alſo give them their manners, without foreſeeing that he was probably going to inſpire a taſte for luxury, which he himſelf diſliked. This prince was always very ſimply clothed, was at little expence for his houſehold, remained but a quarter of an hour at table, and frequently laughed at his favourite Menzikoff, who, elevated to the rank of a prince from being a paſtry-cook's boy, diſplayed the utmoſt ſtatelineſs, and would never dine without the ſound of trumpets and cymbals.

Peter I. was the moſt violent, the moſt cruel of monarchs. He not only gave manual chaſtiſement to courtiers, to generals, to the miniſters who had committed any trivial offence, but was very frequently the executioner of the ſentence of death which he had pronounced on the unfortunate victims.

His fury, it is true, was not always productive of ſuch fatal effects; but whether it was that this prince had not actually the command of himſelf, or whether he imagined it was his duty to let his ſubjects know that nothing ought to reſiſt his will, he ſometimes permitted himſelf to commit actions which in another man would have paſſed for acts of lunacy.

One day, on his return from his travels, wiſhing to give a ſpecimen of his abilities as a ſeaman, he employed himſelf in ſteering a little veſſel upon Lake Ladoga, which is frequently ſtormy, and which became at this moment more agitated than uſual. Peter was alarmed, and regained the ſhore: but provoked that the waves did not ſhew him greater reſpect, he ſent in ſearch of an executioner, and ordered him to puniſh the indocile lake with the knout.

And what are we to think of that continual farce in which Peter I. cauſed himſelf to be repreſented by the Knés Romodanoffsky, the moſt vulgar, the moſt brutal

brutal of Ruſſians, whilſt he himſelf condeſcended to perform the part of a ſubaltern? He had decorated Romodanoffsky with the title of Czar of Moſcow. He rendered him publicly an account of his enterpriſes, and of his moſt important ſucceſſes. All the petitions, all the memorials which were addreſſed to the ſovereign, were preſented to this fantom of a Czar, who ſecretly conveyed them to the council, and when thoſe who made application did not obtain what they deſired, and made complaint to Peter, he replied coldly, "That is no fault of mine: the Czar of Moſcow is maſter."

The firſt inſurrection, which was occaſioned by the order given to all the Ruſſians to leave off wearing beards, was ſucceeded by the execution of near eight thouſand perſons. In order to contain ſo vaſt a number of victims, the Czar made choice of a large ſpace of ground near his palace of Prèobraginſko, at three verſtes diſtance from Moſcow. This place was ſurrounded with paliſades, through which might be eaſily ſeen what was paſſing within; and after ſeveral blocks and logs had been placed, the miſerable wretches deſtined to loſe their lives were conducted to them.

A. D. 1720. Several executioners were immediately employed in chopping off heads. Peter himſelf, with a hatchet in his hand, ſet the example to the executioners. A child about twelve years old, came and placed his head upon the block of the Czar. This prince, inſtead of ſtriking the child, took him by the arm and puſhed him back. The lad, without ſpeaking a ſingle word, went and laid his head upon another block. The Czar, who perceived him, advanced towards him, raiſed him, and again drove him away. An inſtant after the child came back, and again placed himſelf under the axe. The Czar then demanded in a paſſion, why he perſiſted in attempting to have his head cut off? "Thou haſt "cut off that of my father, that of my brother, and "thoſe

"thoſe of all my relations, who were not more cul-"pable than I am," replied the child, why then wilt "thou not cut off mine?" Peter made no reply, but ordered the child to be put out of the encloſure, threw down his hatchet and went away.

This prince was but ſeldom ſtruck ſo forcibly with a ſenſe of his faults as upon this occaſion. Always thirſting for vengeance, he added perfidy to the moſt atrocious inhumanity. The tragical end of his own ſon affords a melancholy proof of this. The only known fault laid to the charge of Alexis, was having endeavoured to eſcape from the animoſity of his father, and his leaving Ruſſia without the permiſſion of this monarch. The Czar got information that Alexis was in concealment at Naples. He immediately diſpatched Tolſtoï, the moſt infamous of his miniſters, who, by the influence of money and of flattery, gaining over the miſtreſs who had accompanied the prince in his flight, perſuaded this unfortunate young man to return to his father. The Czar deceived at the ſame time the Emperor of Germany and the King of Naples, under whoſe protection his ſon had placed himſelf, and who had made interceſſion in his behalf. Notwithſtanding his ſolemn promiſe to pardon him, he had him tried as the moſt abandoned villain and cauſed him to be put to death. And yet, oh ſhameful! to the diſgrace of hiſtory, many celebrated writers have attempted to juſtify this barbarity.

When M. Printz, the Pruſſian ambaſſador, reſided at the court of Peter I, that prince invited him to a magnificent repaſt, and after having drank, according to his cuſtom, a great deal of wine and brandy, he ordered to be brought out of the priſons of Peterſburgh twenty of the ſtrelitzes. After this, at every bumper, he cut off the head of one of theſe wretched creatures. He propoſed to the Pruſſian ambaſſador to make trial of his ſkill upon them, but the ambaſſador did not fail to reject this barbarous propoſal. What a ſpec-

a ſpectacle! to behold a tyrant who, in the midſt of his intemperate orgies, could amuſe himſelf with cutting off the heads of twenty of his unfortunate ſubjects, whilſt his ſneaking courtiers got drunk with him, and applauded the ferocity of his ſanguinary ſports.

Endowed with a fine figure and of a ſuperior mind, inveſted with ſupreme power and paſſionately fond of women, Peter I. was not beloved of one, or at leaſt he was deceived by all thoſe to whom he attached himſelf. Whilſt he was yet very young he married Eudoxia Lapoukin, who was mother of the unfortunate Alexis. A ſhort time after he had married Eudoxia, the Czar became violently in love with Anne Moëns, a pretty Fleming, daughter of a beer-brewer who was ſettled at Moſcow.

Eudoxia appeared at firſt out of humour that her huſband had forſaken her, but ſhe very ſoon conſoled herſelf with a young boyard, named Kleboff; and to her lover's misfortune and her own, ſhe did not employ myſtery ſufficient in her amours. The Czar, who thought he might himſelf be inconſtant with impunity, did not chuſe the ſame conduct to be purſued with regard to him. He ſhut up the Czarina in a cloiſter, and afterwards ſolemnly repudiated her. His revenge on Kleboff was more cruel: he cauſed him to be impaled; and it is aſſerted as a fact that this unfortunate being remained in this ſituation more than twenty-four hours before he expired.

The Czar was eager to go and enjoy this horrible ſpectacle. He did more; he aſcended the pilaſter of maſon-work upon which the ſtake was fixed, and exhorted the dying man to confeſs the facts which he had till then refuſed to acknowledge. "Approach, "that thou mayeſt hear me more diſtinctly," replied Kleboff. The Czar having advanced towards him, Kleboff pauſed an inſtant to recover ſtrength, and then ſaid to him—"Tyrant, the moſt execrable which "hell ever ſent forth, ſuppoſing that which thou im-

"puteſt

"puteſt to me to be true, doſt thou believe that, "not having confeſſed it before my puniſhment, and "when I had ſtill the hope of obtaining pardon by "that avowal, doſt thou believe, I ſay, that I could "be ſuch an ideot, ſo weak, or ſuch a coward as to "ſatisfy thee, now that it is out of thy power to "give me my life? Go, horrible monſter," added he, ſpitting in his face, "take thyſelf away."

The Czar thought ſeriouſly of placing Anne Moëns upon the throne. This young woman, who regarded as the greateſt of misfortunes the love with which ſhe had inſpired her maſter, and who only yielded to him from fear, found means dextrouſly to elude his offers of marriage. Peter continued however to ſee her; but very ſoon, whether it was that the coldneſs which he found in her diſguſted him, or whether his natural inconſtancy led him elſewhere, he allowed her to marry a lover leſs illuſtrious, with whom ſhe had for a long time carried on an intrigue.

It is well known with what a paſſion Peter was inſpired for a young Livonian who, after having been married to a Swediſh dragoon, and ſucceſſively the miſtreſs of Generals Bauer, Scheremetoff and Menzikoff, became Empreſs of Ruſſia, under the name of Catharine I.

Although Catharine was indebted for every thing to the Czar who had ſeated her upon the throne, ſhe did not always preſerve that faith to him which he had a title to expect. It was but ſeldom, on the contrary, that ſhe did not repay the infidelities of her huſband with equal inconſtancy, but ſhe was careful to keep them more ſecret.

Catharine had choſen for chamberlain the young Moëns de la Croix, whoſe ſiſter, Madam Balk, was about her perſon, and had, as I have already ſaid, diſdained the hand of the Emperor. Moëns was a handſome man; it was not long before he made a powerful impreſſion on the heart of the Empreſs, and her paſſion was quickly perceived by Jagouſchinſky, who

who at that time poſſeſſed the entire confidence of the Czar, and who had the cruelty to impart this diſcovery to his maſter. All the jealouſy of Peter was inſtantly aroused. He ſwore to avenge himſelf, but he reſolved before hand that he would be an eye-witneſs of the treachery of Catharine. He pretended to quit Peterſburgh with a deſign to paſs ſome days in one of his country palaces, and ſecretly returned to the winter palace; he afterwards ſent a page, on whom he could rely, to carry his compliments to the Empreſs, and to tell her that he was at Doupka, ſome leagues from the capital.

The page, who had received orders to take notice of all that paſſed, was not long in returning to confirm the ſuſpicions of the Czar, who immediately haſtened to Catharine, and ſurpriſed her in the arms of her lover. It was two hours after midnight, and Madam Balk was watching at ſome diſtance from the apartment of the Empreſs. Peter, in a rage, overthrew a page whom he met in his way, and ſtruck Catharine with his cane, but did not ſay a word either to Moëns or to Madam Balk, reſolving to puniſh them in a more ſevere manner than with a few ſtrokes of a cane.

On leaving Catharine's apartment, Peter, ſtill in a tranſport of fury, entered haſtily into the chamber where Prince Repnin was ſleeping, who, awakened in a hurry, and ſeeing the Czar, gave himſelf up for loſt. "Get up," ſaid the Czar to him, "and liſten "to me; thou haſt no occaſion to dreſs thyſelf." Repnin aroſe trembling. Peter related to him what had juſt paſſed, and added: "I am reſolved to have "the Empreſs's head cut off as ſoon as it is day." "You are offended, and you are abſolute maſter," replied Repnin, "but permit me, with the utmoſt "deference, to make an obſervation to you.—Why "ſhould you divulge the diſgraceful adventure which "irritates you? You have been obliged to deſtroy "the ſtrelitzes. Almoſt every year of your reign

" has been marked with bloody executions. You " have conceived it your duty to condemn your own " ſon to death. If you cut off the head of your " wife, you will fully for ever the glory of your name. " Europe will regard you as a prince who thirſts for " the blood of his people, and of all who approach " him. Avenge the injury done you: let Moëns " periſh by the ſword of juſtice; but with regard to " the Empreſs, you muſt rid yourſelf of her in a " manner at which your glory will have no reaſon to " bluſh."

During this addreſs Peter was violently agitated. He fixed his looks on Repnin for a long time, and left the chamber without uttering a ſyllable. The deſtruction of Moëns was already determined. He was arreſted, as was likewiſe Madam Balk. They were both ſhut up in the winter palace, in an apartment into which no perſon entered but the Emperor himſelf, who carried them their proviſions. At the ſame time a report was ſpread, that the brother and ſiſter had permitted themſelves to be corrupted by the enemies of the ſtate, in hopes of gaining over the Empreſs, in the face of the Czar, to oppoſe the intereſts of Ruſſia.

Moëns was interrogated by this prince in the preſence of General Uſchakoff, and, after having confeſſed every thing required of him, had his head cut off. A. D. 1724.

Madame Balk, his ſiſter, received the knout, and it is aſſerted that the Czar himſelf inflicted the puniſhment: after this ſhe was baniſhed to Siberia.

Moëns walked to the place of execution with the utmoſt fortitude. He always wore a bracelet of diamonds, in which was a miniature portrait of Catharine; but as it had not been diſcovered when he was arreſted, he found means to conceal it under his garter, and when upon the ſcaffold he confided this ſecret to the Lutheran prieſt who accompanied him, and under favour of his cloak ſlipped the

the bracelet into his hand to reſtore it to the Empreſs.

The Czar was a witneſs of the puniſhment of Moëns, which he beheld from one of the windows of the Senate-houſe. After the execution he aſcended the ſcaffold, took the head of Moëns by the hair, and expreſſed in a manner brutally energetic, how completely he had ſatisfied his vengeance. The ſame day this prince had the cruelty to convey Catharine in an open carriage to the ſtake to which the head of this unfortunate wretch was nailed. Catharine was ſufficiently miſtreſs of herſelf not to change countenance at ſight of this horrible ſpectacle, but it is ſaid, that, on returning to her apartment, ſhe ſhed a torrent of tears.

From that period Peter ſaw Catharine no more except in public. He threw into the fire the will by which he had named this princeſs heireſs of the throne, and he did not even conceal the deſign which he had formed to revenge himſelf ſtill farther upon her. But the affection which he had for his two daughters, and the deſire of ſeeing at leaſt one of them married before the diſgrace of their mother, made him ſuſpend the laſt ſtrokes which he intended ſhould fall on the head of his conſort.

The Duke of Holſtein, diſſatisfied that, on the death of Charles XII. the Swedes had not choſen him king, went into Ruſſia, and ſolicited the Czar to grant him the hand of the Princeſs Anna Petrowna. The Czar appeared at firſt averſe to this alliance, but after the adventure of Catharine and Moëns gave his conſent immediately.

Catharine, however, who was not ignorant of the fate which her huſband was preparing for her, did not conceive it her duty to wait for it. From the moment that ſhe had paſſed from the arms of Menzikoff into thoſe of his maſter, ſhe and the favourite had mutually promiſed to ſtand by each other, and in effect it has been ſeen that, by turns, the credit

of the one preſerved to the other the good graces of the Czar. When they were both at the ſame time on the brink of diſgrace, they uſed their endeavours ſtill more ſucceſsfully in order to avoid it. The Czar died very ſuddenly, and it was univerſally believed in Ruſſia that his death had been haſtened. However this may be, Menzikoff had taken his meaſures ſo effectually, that when the ſenate and the nobles were aſſembled to tranſmit the crown to him who was the legitimate heir of it, the ſon of the unfortunate Alexis, he obliged them to acknowledge Catharine I. as the ſovereign of all the Ruſſias.

A. D. 1725. The firſt days of the reign of Catharine I. were agreeable to the people, becauſe ſhe diminiſhed taxes, and becauſe they imagined that they ſaw a mild government ſucceeding to the extreme ſeverity of the Czar's deſpotiſm. Menzikoff at firſt ſhared with the Empreſs the ſupreme power which he had acquired for her; and it is well worthy of obſervation, that in an age, with juſtice ſtyled the age of illumination, theſe two perſonages placed at the head of the moſt extenſive empire of the world, could neither read nor write. The adroit and perfidious Tolſtoï directed almoſt all the affairs of the Ruſſian cabinet.

But Catharine who, during the life of Peter I. had diſplayed ſo much activity, courage, and ardor for great enterprizes, very ſoon diſdained all buſineſs, and abandoned herſelf entirely to luxury and pleaſure. She aſſumed two new favorites at once, one of whom was the young Prince Sapieha, a Poloneſe, and the other a Livonian gentleman, named Lœwenwolden. Theſe two rivals made it their ſtudy to pleaſe her equally, and received in their turns proofs of her tenderneſs, without permitting jealouſy to interrupt their happineſs.

It was at this time, that all at once a brother of Catharine's arrived at Peterſburgh, whom ſhe cauſed to take the name of Count Skawronſky. He brought with

with him his wife and three children; and what made it the more ſurpriſing was, that it had been always believed that the Empreſs did not know one of her relations.

This princeſs fulfilled one of the intentions of Peter I. in marrying the princeſs Anne, her eldeſt daughter, to the Duke of Holſtein. But it is ſaid, that as ſhe knew the Duke of Holſtein was not likely to have any heirs, ſhe carried her maternal complaiſance ſo far as to counſel her daughter to conſole herſelf for the coldneſs of the Duke with Colonel Bruhmer, a young Swede attached to this prince; and it appears certain that Anne followed the advice of her mother.

The Duke of Holſtein had a miniſter named Baſſewitz, an intriguing and covetous man, who inceſſantly urged his maſter to profit by his alliance with the Empreſs, and to take poſſeſſion of part of the authority. Menzikoff, who perceived this, became jealous of the Duke of Holſtein, which very ſoon broke out into an open rupture. The Duke of Holſtein and his miniſter were not the ſole enemies of Menzikoff. He had a great number of implacable and ſecret foes, among whom was Oſtermann, the moſt aſſiduous of his flatterers.

Oſtermann, born in Weſtphalia, the ſon of a Lutheran prieſt, had gained the confidence of Peter I. and had arrived at the dignity of Vice-chancellor; but although he had had ſufficient time to accuſtom himſelf to Ruſſian manners, he could not forgive Menzikoff for ſpeaking always to him with a contemptuous haughtineſs, and for frequently threatening him with the knout and Siberia. Reſolved to avenge himſelf, he ſaw that the only means of ruining the favourite, was to engage him to hazard ſome imprudent ſtep. Upon this occaſion, he addreſſed himſelf to Count Rabutin, miniſter of the court of Vienna, and told him, that if he would ſecond his views, he would undertake to place the young Grand-duke, ſon of

Alexis, and nephew of the Emperor of Germany, upon the throne, as it was only neceſſary to gain over Menzikoff, by promiſing to marry one of his daughters to the Grand-duke. Auſtrian pride ſeemed for a while to heſitate: but to what will not the pride of the ambitious ſtoop?

Emboldened by the concurrence of the court of Vienna, Oſtermann flew to Menzikoff, and adviſed him to cauſe the young Grand-duke to be declared the heir of the empire, in order to prevent the Duke of Holſtein's aſcending the throne, upon the death of the Czarina. He at the ſame time flattered the favourite with the proſpect of marrying his daughter to the Grand-duke, and aſſured him that the Houſe of Auſtria would conſent to this alliance. Ambition and hatred conſpired to miſlead Menzikoff. Oſtermann perſuaded him to do every thing he deſired. Upon this, the favourite availed himſelf of the long aſcendancy which he had gained over the mind of the Empreſs, and of the fear with which he inſpired her, to prompt her to declare, to the detriment of her own children, the Grand-duke heir of the throne.

As ſoon as the courtiers, who had reaſon to dread the vengeance of the ſon of Alexis, were made acquainted with the reſolution of the Czarina, they united themſelves with the Duke of Holſtein to prevent its effects. The heads of this party were Tolſtoï, Boutourlin, and the Count de Vier, a Portugueſe adventurer, become miniſter of the police in Ruſſia, and brother-in-law of Menzikoff, in ſpite of Menzikoff himſelf.

Tolſtoï had the boldneſs to repreſent to Catharine the danger which ſhe was incurring for herſelf and her children, by nominating the Grand-duke for her ſucceſſor, and permitting him to eſpouſe the daughter of Menzikoff. He did more; he counſelled her to diſgrace the favourite. Catharine heſitated, promiſed nothing, and obſerved ſilence to Menzikoff reſpecting

reſpecting what Tolſtoï had ſaid to her. However, Menzikoff, faithfully ſerved by his ſpies, learnt not only what had paſſed with the Czarina, but alſo the plots which were going forward in the ſecret interviews Tolſtoï had with the Duke of Holſtein, at the houſe of a Piedmonteſe, named the Count Santi.

A few days after the ſtep which Tolſtoï had taken, Catharine being ill, and having ordered Menzikoff to be ſummoned to her bed-ſide, informed him in the preſence of the Dutcheſs of Holſtein, her eldeſt daughter, it was her deſire that this princeſs ſhould ſucceed her; and ſhe conjured him in the name of their ancient friendſhip to expreſs towards her daughter the ſame zeal which he had always ſhewn for herſelf. Menzikoff made a vow to this effect; but, on quitting the Czarina, he went in ſearch of Rabutin and Oſtermann, and, excited by their counſels, reſolved to proceed in a manner totally different from what he had juſt promiſed. There was no time to be loſt. The phyſician of Catharine had aſſured Menzikoff that ſhe had but two days more to live.

Ambition had at that time conducted to Peterſburgh the young prince of Holſtein-Eutin, who had a deſire to eſpouſe the Princeſs Elizabeth; and love, in concert with ambition, had ſecured to him the heart of this princeſs. But I know not by what policy their union was oppoſed. It has been thought it was dangerous to the ſafety of Ruſſia, that the two daughters of the Czar ſhould be married in Germany. Menzikoff knew how to turn to account theſe obſtacles, and the paſſion of Elizabeth for the Prince of Holſtein-Eutin. The Czarina, who, as I have already obſerved, could not write, made uſe of the hand of the Princeſs Elizabeth for thoſe diſpatches which required her ſignature. Menzikoff went to this young princeſs, and proteſted to her upon the faith of his oath, that ſhe ſhould ſee the obſtacles which retarded her marriage immediately vaniſh, if ſhe would ſign

the order to arreſt Tolſtoï and his accomplices. Elizabeth ſigned it; and in leſs than an hour, Tolſtoï, Boutourlin, the Portugueſe Vier, the Piedmonteſe Santi, and ſeveral of their partiſans, were ſhut up in the fortreſs of Peterſburgh.

Menzikoff, Oſtermann, Rabutin, and Baſſewitz, paſſed afterwards a part of the night in fabricating a will, in which Catharine I. named for her ſucceſſor the young Grand-duke. This princeſs died the ſame night. The will made in her name, and of which, without doubt, ſhe had not the leaſt knowledge, was preſented to the ſenate, and the Grand-duke was proclaimed Emperor of Ruſſia under the title of Peter II.

A. D. 1727. Peter II. aſcended the throne at the age of thirteen. His youth did not permit him to aſſume the reins of government. Menzikoff took upon himſelf to govern for him; and, that none of the courtiers might approach him but thoſe in whom he himſelf placed ſome confidence, he cauſed him to be lodged in his own palace. The council of regency, named by the will of Catharine I. aſſembled but once. The Duke and Dutcheſs of Holſtein were obliged to retire to Kiel, the capital of their dutchy. Menzikoff afterwards affianced his daughter to Peter II. and the Count Rabutin ſigned the contract in the name of the Emperor Charles VI.

But the good fortune of Menzikoff had come to its termination. Whilſt the whole empire was groaning under the weight of his deſpotiſm, the young Czar began to grow diſpleaſed with his inſolent tutor. Oſtermann was one of the firſt to perceive this; and having communicated his obſervations to Chancellor Goloffkin, and to the princes Galitzin and Dolgorouky, he engaged the firſt to take advantage of an excurſion into the country, to perſuade the Czar to throw off the tyranny of Menzikoff. The Czar was already ſufficiently diſpoſed to do ſo. Menzikoff who, in the morning, had quitted Peterſburgh

burgh the ſovereign lord of Ruſſia, re-entered that city in the evening, only to behold himſelf loaded with irons, and exiled into Siberia. This blow was terrible, but he met it with courage. The moment of his diſgrace was the only one in which he ſhewed himſelf worthy of the ſtation which he had occupied. He afforded a ſtriking proof, like many others, that it is more eaſy to ſupport the frowns of fortune than her favours.

The Dolgoroukies very ſoon ſucceeded Menzikoff with the Czar, and laid a plan to make him marry a princeſs of their family. It did not ſeem very eaſy to execute this project, as Peter II. had a great affection for his aunt Elizabeth, who, although captivated with another lover, received with great complaiſance the homage of the young ſovereign. Ivan Dolgorouky made the young Czar alter his ſentiments, by informing him that the Princeſs Elizabeth carried on an amorous intrigue with a ſoldier of the Préobraginſky guards. A ſhort time after the Czar fell in love with Catharine Dolgorouky, and betrothed himſelf to her, but had not time to conſummate his marriage. The day before he was to have received the nuptial benediction, he was attacked with the ſmall-pox, and fell a victim to it. A. D. 1730.

Hardly were the eyes of Peter II. cloſed, when the ſenate, the miniſters, the nobles, and the deputies of the people of Moſcow, aſſembled in the Kremlin; and, in conſequence of the inſinuations of Oſtermann, elected as ſovereign the Dutcheſs of Courland, ſecond daughter of the Czar Ivan, and niece of Peter I. There were no queſtions ſtarted reſpecting the ſon of the Dutcheſs of Holſtein, nor of the Princeſs Elizabeth his aunt; or at leaſt they were only mentioned to recal to mind, that being the iſſue of a double adultery, both the one and the other ought to be for ever excluded from the throne.

The Prince Waſſili-Lukowitz-Dolgorouky, who had been the favoured lover of Anne Ivanowna, and who

who without doubt hoped to become ſo again, was charged to go and inform her the Ruſſians had juſt made choice of her for their empreſs. This princeſs, who was then at Mittau, ſet out immediately for Moſcow. She was followed thither a ſhort time after by Biren, whom they had made her promiſe not to allow to come thither.

Anne no more recollected the promiſe which ſhe had made to keep her favourite at a diſtance, than the conditions on which ſhe had accepted the empire, and which limited her power. By the counſels of Jagouſchinſky and of Prince Troubetzkoï, ſhe cauſed herſelf to be acknowledged ſovereign of all the Ruſſias. However, ſhe appeared to be ſeated on the throne merely to permit herſelf to be governed, and Biren governed her only to abandon himſelf to all the fury of hatred. The Dolgorouky family became his firſt victims. Exiled at firſt to the neighbourhood of Tobolſk, and afterwards recalled, two of theſe princes periſhed on the wheel, two were quartered, three others had their heads cut off, and the reſt of this family, but a ſhort while before ſo high in power, were ſtripped of every thing and baniſhed far from Moſcow. Almoſt all the friends of the Dolgoroukies fell beneath the axe of the executioner, or were dragged to the frozen deſerts of Siberia. Biren cauſed to periſh, by cruel puniſhments, more than eleven thouſand perſons, and exiled twice as many. We are aſſured that the Empreſs frequently implored him on her knees to be leſs rigorous, but neither the prayers nor the tears of this princeſs had power to ſoften him. In a word, the haughtineſs and the implacable cruelty of Biren, obliterated the haughtineſs and the cruelty of Menzikoff. Notwithſtanding, Anne obliged the Courlanders to name for their ſovereign, her barbarous favourite; and at the very moment he was ſhedding torrents of blood, the Ruſſian courtiers and foreign miniſters, were laviſhing on him the moſt contemptible flattery.

The

The evils which were deſolating the interior of Ruſſia did not prevent her armies from extending her power abroad. They placed the Elector of Saxony, Auguſtus III. upon the throne of Warſaw, and conſtrained Staniſlaus Leczinſky to renounce, for the ſecond time, the dangerous preference which the Polanders had granted him. Commanded by the celebrated Mareſchal Munich, they ſuccoured the emperor Charles VI. and vanquiſhed the Ottomans and the Tartars of the Krimea. It was then, in the ſchool of Munich and of victory, that Lœwendalh formed himſelf, who afterwards entered into the French ſervice, and immortaliſed his name by the capture of Bergen-op-zoom.

A. D. 1739. A ſhort time after her acceſſion to the throne, Anne had ſummoned to court her niece, the daughter of the Dutcheſs of Mecklenburgh, and, acknowledging her as ſucceſſor to the throne, had given her her own name, and married her to Anthony-Ulric, Duke of Brunſwick-Luneburgh. From this marriage ſprung a prince named Ivan, who was proclaimed Grand-duke of Ruſſia. Some months after, Anne was attacked by the malady which brought her to the grave. But, before her death, ſhe was made to ſign a will, by which, excluding the Dutcheſs of Brunſwick from the ſucceſſion, ſhe left the throne to Ivan, and the regency to Biren. The crafty Oſtermann, who, in concert with the favourite, had fabricated this writing, drew up at the ſame time a petition in the name of the divers orders of the ſtate, to entreat Biren to accept the office of regent, which his ambition was enjoying in advance; and perhaps the world will have ſome difficulty in believing, that notwithſtanding what has been juſt related, the principal members of the clergy, the nobles, the miniſters, the Ruſſian ſenators, were daſtardly enough to ſign this requeſt.

The title which Biren had juſt acquired only ſerved to increaſe his haughtineſs and his deſpotiſm.

Far

Far from paying any reſpect to Duke Anthony-Ulric of Brunſwick, father of the young Czar, he obliged him to reſign all his offices. He diſmiſſed in the ſame way all thoſe who had given him any offence. He gave a glimpſe of the project which he had in view of making the throne paſs into his own family, by marrying his ſon to the Princeſs Elizabeth, and his daughter to the young Duke of Holſtein. Munich, who was one of thoſe to whom Biren owed his elevation to the regency, was diſcontented that he did not ſhare the authority. Upon this, he determined to reſtore to the Duke and Dutcheſs of Brunſwick the rights of which he had been a means of depriving them. The propoſal, which he was not long in making to them, was accepted with tranſport. One night that Munich had ſupped with the regent, and for ſome time converſed familiarly with him, he retired and paid a viſit to the winter palace, which the young emperor and his relations occupied; and after having engaged the Dutcheſs of Brunſwick to gain over to her party the officers, and the hundred and forty ſoldiers who kept guard around the Czar, he returned to the houſe of the regent, whom he cauſed to be arreſted by a detachment of twenty men, commanded by the aid-de-camp Manſtein.

The two brothers of the regent, General Biſmarck his brother-in-law, and Beſtuſcheff, the very life of his counſels, were alſo arreſted. Biren, impriſoned in Schluſſelburgh, only remained there till his trial was inſtituted, after which he was conducted to Siberia; a chaſtiſement without doubt too lenient for a monſter who, during nine years, had every day multiplied the number of his victims, and had ſpread terror over Ruſſia by his violence and rapacity.

The Dutcheſs of Brunſwick proclaimed herſelf Grand-dutcheſs and regent, and named Duke Anthony-Ulric, her huſband, generaliſſimo of the forces. Munich received the place of prime-miniſter. But Oſtermann, who was a ſecret enemy of Munich, very

very ſoon raiſed a cabal againſt him, and gave the regent to underſtand that the mareſchal was deficient in that knowledge which was requiſite for conducting foreign affairs, and even for the interior adminiſtration. Theſe two departments were taken from Munich. Imprudent ingratitude! Munich retired, and his retreat prepared the downfal of the regent.

One of the moſt remarkable events during the regency of the Dutcheſs of Brunſwick was the arrival of an ambaſſador of Thamas-Kouli-Khan at Moſcow. After having uſurped the throne of the Sophis, and conquered the empire of the Mogul, Thamas-Kouli-Khan, who had heard the beauty of the princeſs Elizabeth highly celebrated, ſent to demand her in marriage, promiſing to introduce the Greek religion into Perſia. His ambaſſador was accompanied by ſixteen thouſand men, and twenty pieces of cannon. But this corps was perſuaded to ſtop in the neighbourhood of Kiſlar, upon the ſhores of the Terek, and the ambaſſador made his entrance into Moſcow with a ſuit of only three thouſand perſons on horſeback. He preſented to the regent, on the part of the Schah, fourteen elephants and a great variety of precious ſtones, among which there were ſome very large diamonds. The preſents were accepted, and the propoſals of marriage rejected.

Before the death of the Empreſs Anne, the Dutcheſs of Brunſwick had conceived a violent paſſion for Count Lynar, the Saxon miniſter at Peterſburgh. The Empreſs, who was informed of this, entreated Auguſtus III. to recal Lynar. But, as ſoon as the dutcheſs came to the regency, Lynar again made his appearance in Ruſſia. Aſſiſted by Julia de Mengden, her favourite, the regent abandoned herſelf entirely to her paſſion for Lynar, and neglected the moſt important affairs. Anthony-Ulric perceived the miſconduct of his wife; he reproached her with it, and very ſoon a violent rupture enſued between this couple.

The

The Ruſſian miniſters did not agree with each other any better than the regent and her huſband. Oſtermann dreaded Goloffkin, who employed his endeavours to ſhake the credit, and to thwart the projects of Oſtermann. The Czar Ivan, ſtill in his cradle, ſeemed to be forgotten even by his parents. What a moment for thoſe ambitious men who deſired a revolution! They did not fail to take advantage of it.

A. D. 1741. The weak, bigotted and voluptuous Elizabeth was not at all calculated to form a conſpiracy to put herſelf in poſſeſſion of the inheritance of Peter I. her father. Abandoned to the obſcure intrigues of gallantry, or rather of debauchery, her only happineſs conſiſted in this diſgraceful commerce. But the ambition of thoſe who ſurrounded her, ſucceeded ſo far as to oblige her to lend her name to their projects. A ſurgeon, of French extraction, named Leſtoc, undertook to place her upon the throne, and made good his point.

Elizabeth had conciliated the affection of the regiments of guards, becauſe ſhe uſually treated them with great affability and familiarity: this however was not ſufficient. It was neceſſary to employ money in order to excite them to revolt and to proclaim her empreſs. Leſtoc made application to La Chetardie, the French ambaſſador: La Chetardie, whoſe ſole ambition was to ſee a princeſs on the throne who would become an ally of France and deprive Maria-Thereſa of the aſſiſtance of Ruſſia, gave to Leſtoc, not only all the money for which he had occaſion, but advice likewiſe, which was equally neceſſary to him. They gained over at firſt thirty of the grenadiers of the Préobraginſky regiment; and the execution of the project was fixed for the feaſt of the benediction of the waters, becauſe on that day the troops are accuſtomed to aſſemble on the banks of the Neva. But the indiſcretion of Leſtoc did not permit him to wait till that epoch. This petulant conſpirator very

ſoon

ſoon diſcovered both his correſpondence with La Chetardie, and the ſteps he had taken to ſecure the guards.

The regent got information from all quarters that conſpiracies were forming againſt her and againſt the emperor her ſon. Inſtead of keeping a watchful eye over the authors of them, ſhe contented herſelf with mentioning the ſubject to Elizabeth, who ſhedding tears, and aſſuming the appearance of the utmoſt ingenuouſneſs, aſſured her of her own innocence and of that of Leſtoc.

Scarcely had Elizabeth taken leave when Oſtermann, the Marquis of Botta, miniſter from the court of Vienna, and Duke Anthony-Ulric repreſented to the regent that ſhe was ſtanding on the brink of a precipice, and that ſhe had not a moment to loſe in order to avoid it. But indolence and a ſort of fatality hurried her forward. Duke Anthony-Ulric having informed her that he was going to give orders to arreſt the conſpirators: "By no means," replied ſhe, "Eli-"zabeth ſwears that ſhe has not formed any conſpi-"racy, and her tears give proof that ſhe is ſincere." What vouchers! Had the regent known her ſex a little better, ſhe would have underſtood that the tears of a woman are not always a teſtimony of her ſincerity.

Leſtoc knowing that ſuſpicions were entertained of his project, and wiſhing to haſten the execution of it, conveyed to Elizabeth a card, on which he had delineated the portrait of that princeſs with the imperial crown, and upon the reverſe ſhe was repreſented with a veil, and ſurrounded with wheels and gibbets. "Make choice of the one or of the other, madam," ſaid he to her. From this moment the irreſolution of Elizabeth appeared to have become fixed. However in the evening Leſtoc and the Count Woronzoff had much difficulty to drag her from an image of the Virgin, before which ſhe was proſtrated on her knees. They cauſed her to mount a carriage, and conducted her

her at firſt to the barracks of the Préobraginſky regiment, where the thirty ſoldiers of her party were employing their exertions to corrupt their comrades. Money very ſoon gained to the number of three hundred of them, who took the oath of fidelity to the princeſs. She placed herſelf at their head and repaired to the winter palace. On the approach of this troop, the drum being juſt on the point of beating the alarm, Leſtoc took a knife and ſplit the head of it. A detachment of grenadiers was ordered to carry off the regent and her huſband, and to convey them to Schluſſelburgh. Some other grenadiers entered the apartment of the young emperor, whom they found aſleep. Innocence and the charms of infancy had ſome power over theſe ferocious men. They ſurrounded the cradle of Ivan in ſilence, and reſpectfully waited his awakening. When they afterwards carried this child to Elizabeth, ſhe took him in her arms and careſſed him. Afterwards ſeeing him ſmile at the noiſe of the acclamations which were reſounding at the gates of the palace, ſhe could not help exclaiming: "Unfortunate child! thou knoweſt not, alas! "that the ſounds which thou heareſt are the cries of "joy of thoſe who are precipitating thee from the "throne."

On re-entering her palace, Elizabeth gave orders to arreſt Mareſchal Munich, Oſtermann, Goloffkin, and ſome officers attached to the regency. The firſt were afterwards condemned to loſe their lives, but the empreſs contented herſelf with ſending them into exile.

However, as ſoon as the young Czar Ivan, his mother and the reſt of his family were impriſoned in Schluſſelburgh, the ſenate and the nobles were convoked, the troops aſſembled, and Elizabeth was ſolemnly proclaimed empreſs.

This princeſs did not overlook thoſe who had given their aſſiſtance towards a revolution ſo favourable to her. She laviſhed rewards on them, and ennobled all

all the grenadiers of the Préobraginſky regiment, a dangerous generoſity which made an inſolent ſoldiery underſtand but too well the advantages which ariſe from preſuming to make traffic of a throne, and to betray the rulers whom it was their duty to defend.

BOOK II.

Account of the firſt Years of the Reign of Elizabeth—Character of that Princeſs and of her Favourites—She nominates for her Succeſſor the young Duke Charles Peter Ulric of Holſtein-Gottorp, who reigned afterwards under the Name of Peter III.—Marriage of this Prince with Sophia-Auguſta d'Anhalt Zerbſt, who aſſumes the Name of Catharine Alexiewna—The Chamberlain Soltikoff becomes the Favourite of this Princeſs—Birth of Paul Petrowitz—Poniatowſky ſucceeds to Soltikoff—Intrigues of Beſtuſcheff and his Exile—Death of Elizabeth.

A. D. 1742. THE prompt ſucceſs of the laſt conſpiracies of which I have preſented a ſketch, could not but be productive of new events. The Marquis de Botta, miniſter from Vienna ſaw, with mortification, France bearing away from Auſtria the ſupport of Ruſſia, and formed the deſign of bringing about another revolution, to reſtore to his court the aſcendancy which it had juſt loſt. It was not a difficult matter for him to find abettors in a country where the divers pretenders to the throne have always a party of malecontents ready to enliſt under their banner.

The Marquis de Botta made application at firſt to Madame Lapoukin, who was looked upon as the moſt beautiful woman of her age, and who mourned

over the exile of her lover Lewœnwolde. Madame Lapoukin had the addreſs to perſuade her huſband to enter into the conſpiracy with her; and they very ſoon reckoned among their partiſans, the chamberlain Lilienfeld, the ſiſter of the vice-chancellor Goloffkin, and ſome other perſons of conſiderable importance. The departure of the Marquis de Botta for Berlin did not abate the ardor of the conſpirators; on the contrary this miniſter had the art of inſpiring them with freſh animation, by aſſuring them that the King of Pruſſia deſired no leſs than the Queen of Hungary to ſee Elizabeth precipitated from the throne.

However the conſpirators did not put one project into execution, becauſe they had not a proper leader to direct them, and to ſtrike the firſt blow. They were diſcovered; they received the knout, had their tongues cut, and were ſent to indulge unavailing regret in the deſerts of Siberia.

Maria-Thereſa made haſte to declare that ſhe had no part in the conſpiracies of her miniſter Botta, and in order to prove it, ſhe recalled him from Berlin, and had the policy to order him to be impriſoned for ſome time in a fortreſs. The Grand-chancellor of Ruſſia was almoſt immediately gained over and reconciled the two ſovereigns, but Elizabeth never forgave the King of Pruſſia for the approbation which it is ſaid he gave to the conſpiracy of Botta.

Elizabeth reſembled the beautiful Catharine her mother, and was ſtill more beautiful. She poſſeſſed a tall and admirably proportioned figure, and although her features were rather large, her phyſionomy notwithſtanding had a ſweetneſs inexpreſſible, which ſhe ſtill heightened by the graces of a converſation frequently lively and almoſt conſtantly winning. But if ſhe rivalled her mother in thoſe advantages which lend ſo great a charm to the ſociety of women, if ſhe ſurpaſſed her in her unbounded love of pleaſure, ſhe was far from poſſeſſing like her that greatneſs of ſoul which

which gives to thoſe who are partakers of it, an irreſiſtible aſcendancy over all that ſurrounds them. Inſtead of poſſeſſing the art of ruling over others, Elizabeth uniformly allowed herſelf to be governed, and this weakneſs was the primary cauſe of the misfortunes of her ſucceſſor.

In order the better to live above the reach of dependence, Elizabeth conſtantly refuſed to take a huſband, with whom ſhe muſt have divided the empire; but ſhe did not the leſs experience the delights of love, and even the ſweetneſs of maternal affection; and as ſhe added to her other weakneſſes that of being a devotee, Alexis-Gregoriewitſch Razoumoffſky, her maſter of the buck-hounds, found means to perſuade her to give him her hand privately. The Counts Tarrakanoff and their ſiſter were the fruits of this clandeſtine marriage. Razoumoffſky was not however the only lover of Elizabeth; ſhe had occaſion frequently to change her favourite; but unfaithful in her pleaſures, and conſtant in her tenderneſs, ſhe always preſerved towards Razoumoffſky, that ſentiment which had induced her to deſcend ſo low as to him, when he was only a grenadier in a regiment of guards.

To her inclination for voluptuouſneſs, Elizabeth added beſides a fondneſs for good cheer, and afterwards abandoned herſelf to the love of wine. Feaſts, balls, maſquerades, the moſt puerile amuſements diverted her attention from buſineſs, and filled up thoſe days which ſhe had promiſed to employ for the good of the empire

Count Ivan Ivanowitz Schouwaloff was one of the favourites of Elizabeth, but he made no other uſe of his credit than to augment his riches, which were already immenſe, and he left to his couſin Peter Schouwaloff the rage for intrigue. The artful flatterer of the Empreſs, Ivan Schouwaloff, never ſpoke to her but of humanity and glory. He extorted from her by this method endleſs donations, and he inſpired her

with the desire of having a history of the reign of Peter I. written, a desire which he likewise found means to turn to his own profit, by attracting the praises of Voltaire.

But he who, without being the lover of Elizabeth, possessed, during a long time, the greatest ascendancy over her mind, was the Grand-chancellor Alexis Bestuscheff-Riumin, the boldest and most intelligent man in all Russia. He governed at once the Empress, the favourites, the ministers. He regulated alone, so to speak, all the exterior as well as the interior of the empire.

Bestuscheff had applied himself to business and to intrigue for more than forty years. After having accompanied the Russian ambassador to the congress of Utrecht, he had perfected himself in England, in the school of the ministers of George I. On his return to Petersburgh, he had been named minister to the court of Stockholm, afterwards to that of Copenhagen. He became after this attached to Anna Ivanowna, Dutchess of Courland, who, on ascending the throne, sent him to Hamburgh, in quality of envoy extraordinary to the circle of Lower Saxony. Devoted to the ferocious Biren, he was arrested with him, but had sufficient skill and good fortune to escape sharing his exile. When Elizabeth succeeded to the throne, Lestoc presented Bestuscheff to her, who, soon afterwards, elevated to the dignity of Grand-chancellor, employed his credit to repay Lestoc with the blackest ingratitude.

Bestuscheff was not only jealous of the favour of Lestoc, but hated in him the friend of France. The departure of La Chetardie had left at the court of Petersburgh an extensive field for the intrigues of Austria and of England, and his return could not arrest their efforts. Bestuscheff found means to persuade Elizabeth that the French ambassador was returned only to raise a cabal against her. He had the infamous audacity to procure the assassination of a courier

a courier of this minister, and putting himself in possession of his cyphered dispatches, which he interpreted according to his own fancy, he went to the Empress and presented them, assuring her that they were filled with calumnies and dangerous plots. Elizabeth believed it, and gave orders to La Chetardie to withdraw himself. He took his departure immediately. Informed of the assassination of his courier, he apprehended that a similar attack might be made upon himself. He was not mistaken. Before he reached the frontiers of Russia, he was assailed by the satellites of Bestuscheff, who several times fired at him, and killed a servant behind his carriage.

A. D. 1742. Some time after Bestuscheff succeeded in inspiring the Empress with suspicions of Lestoc, The unhappy Lestoc was arrested, stripped of all his possessions, and exiled to a village in the province of Archangel. Thus the two men who had contributed most to raise Elizabeth to empire, were, upon a slight suspicion, sacrificed by her: a melancholy example of those who reckon upon the gratitude of princes!

However, Elizabeth wishing to extinguish in the family of Anne Ivanowna the hopes of re-ascending the throne, nominated for her successor Charles-Peter-Ulric, son of the Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, and of Anne, daughter of Peter I.; and having invited him to Petersburgh in 1742, made him abjure Lutheranism for the Greek religion, caused him to take the name of Peter Fedorowitz, and declared him Grand-duke of Russia and her presumptive heir. This Prince was then only fourteen years old.

The very day following that on which Peter was declared the successor of the Empress Elizabeth, three ambassadors from Sweden arrived at Petersburgh to announce to this young prince that the senate of Stockholm had chosen him to succeed Frederick I. who, on account of his great age, was no longer capable of swaying the sceptre. Peter having just

devoted himſelf to Ruſſia, did not think himſelf at liberty to accept the election of the Swedes; and it appeared that fortune offered to him, almoſt at the ſame inſtant, two crowns, only to render more fatal to him that which he preferred. On making his acknowledgments to the Swediſh ambaſſadors, this prince charged them to requeſt the ſenate to chuſe for king the biſhop of Lubec, Adolphus-Frederick of Holſtein, his uncle, who was in effect elected at the end of ſome months.

A. D. 1745. Three years afterwards an idea was entertained of marrying the Grand-duke to Sophia-Auguſta of Anhalt Zerbſt, his couſin-german, who was nearly a year younger than him, and who, in embracing the Greek ritual, changed her name to Catharine Alexiewna, which ſhe has rendered ſo illuſtrious.

All Europe was deceived reſpecting the cauſes of this alliance, which was attributed ſolely to the mediation of the King of Pruſſia. It is true that Frederick had deſired it; but without a motive remote from politics, the ſolicitations of this monarch would have produced no effect.

It has been mentioned in the preceding book, that long before ſhe aſcended the throne of the Czars, Elizabeth had been engaged to the young Prince of Holſtein-Eutin, brother of the Princeſs of Anhalt-Zerbſt, mother of Catharine, and that at the very time when the marriage was to have been celebrated the prince fell ſick and died. Elizabeth, who loved him to exceſs, abandoned herſelf to the deepeſt ſorrow, and in her deſpair made a vow of renouncing all thoughts of marriage, a reſolution which, as I have already ſaid, was at leaſt publicly obſerved. If ever ſince that period we have ſeen Elizabeth yielding to the paſſion with which ſeveral of her courtiers and ſoldiers inſpired her, ſhe did not the leſs preſerve a lively tenderneſs for the object of her firſt affection.

She

She rendered to his memory a ſort of religious veneration, and never ſpoke of him without ſhedding tears.

The Princeſs of Anhalt-Zerbſt, who was not ignorant of the tender recollection which Elizabeth preſerved of her brother, reſolved to avail herſelf of it, in order to ſecure a throne to her daughter. Her project was confided to the King of Pruſſia, who greatly commended it, and ſoon afterwards gave it every aſſiſtance in his power.

The Princeſs of Zerbſt repaired to Peterſburgh, where Elizabeth gave her a cordial reception. Her daughter, who was pretty, and attired in all the graces of youth, made immediately a very ſtrong impreſſion on the heart of the young Grand-duke; and as he himſelf was then very well made, and endowed with an extremely fine perſon, the attachment became reciprocal, and was very ſoon the ſubject of court converſation. Elizabeth herſelf remarked it, and it did not appear to diſpleaſe her. The Princeſs of Zerbſt, who watched the favourable moment, loſt no time, flew to throw herſelf at the feet of the Empreſs, depicted the attachment of theſe two lovers as an inſurmountable paſſion, and recalling to her mind the love which ſhe herſelf had for the Prince of Holſtein her brother, ſhe conjured her to be the author of matrimonial felicity to the niece of this prince ſo deeply regretted.

Doubtleſs there was no need of all this in order to perſuade the Empreſs. She mingled her tears with thoſe of the Princeſs of Zerbſt, and promiſed her, with an embrace, that her daughter ſhould be Grand-dutcheſs.

The next day the choice of Elizabeth was announced to the council and to the foreign miniſters. The marriage was fixed for a day not very remote, and the preparatives were made with a magnificence worthy of the heir of the throne of the Ruſſias.

But fortune, which till this moment had appeared ſo favourable to the Grand-duke, began to frown upon him, and Catharine was threatened with the loſs of her lover as Elizabeth had loſt her's. The Grand-duke was attacked with a violent fever, and in a ſhort time a very malignant ſmall-pox declared itſelf. This prince did not, however, fall a victim to this cruel malady, but he retained frightful traces of it. The metamorphoſis was terrible. He loſt the charms of his countenance, and became deformed and almoſt hideous.

The young princeſs was not permitted to approach the apartment of the Grand-duke. Her mother rendered her an account of the progreſs of this prince's diſorder. Perceiving how much he was altered, and in the hopes of weakening the effect which the firſt ſight of him might produce upon her daughter, ſhe repreſented him as one of the uglieſt men that ſhe could poſſibly imagine, and recommended to her at the ſame time to conceal the diſguſt with which he might inſpire her. The young princeſs beheld the Grand-duke on his re-appearance with a ſecret horror. She contrived however to reſtrain herſelf; and running to the prince, embraced him with every appearance of joy. On returning, however, to her apartment, ſhe became ſenſible of the whole extent of her misfortune, fell into a ſwoon, and was three hours before ſhe recovered the uſe of her ſenſes.

The chagrin which the young princeſs had juſt ſuffered, did not ſuggeſt any pretext for deferring her marriage with the Grand-duke. The Empreſs looked forward to this alliance with pleaſure, the Princeſs of Zerbſt paſſionately deſired it, and the counſels of ambition, already more powerful over the heart of Catharine than the wiſhes of her mother and thoſe of the Empreſs, did not permit her to heſitate.

The

The marriage was accordingly celebrated; but notwithſtanding the attachment which had manifeſted itſelf between the Grand-duke and the Princeſs from the firſt moment that they met, nature had not deſtined them to love each other long, and the alteration which had taken place in the features of the prince was not the only cauſe of the indifference of his youthful bride. Peter had a defect which, although eaſy to remove, ſeemed ſo much the more cruel: the violence of his love, his reiterated efforts, could not accompliſh the conſummation of his marriage. If the Prince had confided his ſecret to ſome one who poſſeſſed a little experience, the obſtacle which oppoſed itſelf to his deſires might have been overcome. The loweſt of the diſciples of Moſes, or the moſt inſignificant ſurgeon, could have freed him from it. But ſuch was the ſhame with which this misfortune overwhelmed him that he had not even the courage to reveal it; and the Princeſs, who received his careſſes with the utmoſt repugnance, and who was not at that time more experienced than himſelf, neither thought of conſoling him, nor of making him employ the means to bring him back to her arms. Nevertheleſs they lived for ſome time in apparently good underſtanding, which Catharine prolonged as much as ſhe thought it was neceſſary.

This Princeſs, educated not far from the court of the great Frederick, where every thing breathed the love of the ſciences and of the fine arts, joined to beauty and to the ſuperior underſtanding which ſhe had received from nature, extenſive knowledge, and the facility of expreſſing herſelf with elegance in ſeveral languages.

Peter likewiſe poſſeſſed ſenſe, but his education had been dreadfully neglected. He had an excellent heart, but was deficient in politeneſs. He was of a very good ſtature, but ugly and almoſt deformed. He frequently bluſhed at the ſuperiority of his wife, and his wife bluſhed to behold him ſo little worthy

of

of her; in a word, he did not know how to make her happy. From thence aroſe that mutual hatred which the courtiers were not ſlow in diſcovering, and which increaſed ſo rapidly.

By an unaccountable caprice, Elizabeth ſeemed to apprehend that her nephew was too well inſtructed, and that he rendered himſelf too much the object of popular approbation. From the moment that ſhe had choſen him for her ſucceſſor ſhe regarded him as a rival. This perhaps was the reaſon that ſhe deprived him of Colonel Bruhmer, who had laid the foundation of his education in Holſtein, and that ſhe placed Tſchoglokoff about him, one of the moſt narrow minded men in Ruſſia. In vain did ſome virtuous men, for ſuch were to be found even at the court of Peterſburgh; in vain did ſome eſtimable women, for there were ſome even about Elizabeth; in vain, I ſay, did thoſe perſons, afflicted at beholding the ignorance, and the ſpecies of dereliction in which the young Peter was permitted to remain, attempt to make his aunt ſenſible of the danger of it, the Empreſs turned a deaf ear to their repreſentations, and ſometimes repulſed them with ſeverity.

We may quote, among other examples, that of a lady of the bed-chamber, named Johanna, who had the courage to aſk this Princeſs, why ſhe excluded the Grand-duke from all the deliberations of council. "If you do not permit him to learn any thing which "he ought to know in order to govern," added ſhe, "what do you wiſh that he ſhould become; and what "do you mean ſhould become of the empire?" Elizabeth looking on her with anger, made no other reply than this: "Johanna, doſt thou know where "Siberia is?" Neverthelefs the generous Johanna's apprehenſion was her only puniſhment, and ſhe was cautious not to make any farther remonſtrances to her miſtreſs.

But if ſome voices had preſumed to elevate themſelves in favour of Peter, there were many others which

which made themſelves heard againſt him. The courtiers had beheld his arrival with a jealous eye, and conſidered him as a man who would of neceſſity at leaſt divide with them, if not bereave them entirely of, the power which they enjoyed. Among thoſe who ſought the moſt to injure him, may be reckoned the Grand-chancellor Beſtuſcheff. From the commencement of the marriage of the Grand-duke, he reſolved to exclude this Prince from the throne; and, however daring, however dangerous this project might appear, he was occupied inceſſantly in contriving the means of inſuring its ſucceſs. His provident genius did not indeed flatter him with the proſpect of ſeeing Peter completely diſinherited; but he wiſhed at leaſt to have him exiled to the employments of a military life, and to place Catharine at the head of affairs.

As ſoon as the plan of Beſtuſcheff was well digeſted, he communicated it to ſeveral other courtiers whom he knew to be filled with that hatred which animated himſelf. There were even women who joined in this conſpiracy, and theſe were not the leaſt uſeful in forwarding the deſigns of the chancellor. This miniſter conducted his intrigue with the utmoſt addreſs. He every day wrote inſtructions, which he gave to the perſons of his party, on little ſcraps of paper, and conceived in terms which no one could underſtand but themſelves. He afterwards encloſed theſe papers in a box with a double bottom, and under the appearance of preſenting ſnuff, he diſtributed them according to his deſigns. By this method his confidants knew what they had to do or ſay through the day. Their principal employment was to criminate the Grand-duke in the eyes of Elizabeth. They exaggerated his ſlighteſt faults, they aggravated his moſt trivial failings, they imputed vices to him of which he was not yet guilty, and which they wiſhed him to contract. They even went ſo far as to raiſe an apprehenſion in the Empreſs, that her nephew

nephew would become dangerous to her government.

The weak Elizabeth was but too ready to lend an ear to thoſe perfidious inſinuations. Naturally timid and ſuſpicious, ſhe concluded by feeling an abhorrence for him whom ſhe had no occaſion to miſtruſt for a ſingle moment.

But what then was the reaſon of the conduct of the ambitious Beſtuſcheff? Penetrating and crafty, this miniſter very quickly diſcovered in the Grand-duke a feebleneſs of character. He had, doubtleſs, equally obſerved, that the Grand-dutcheſs was exactly the oppoſite of her huſband. Ought he not then to have hoped, that ſhould they aſcend the throne, it would be more eaſy for him to govern the Prince than the Princeſs? No, he did not flatter himſelf with this, for he knew that Peter was informed of what he had done againſt his intereſt in Holſtein.

On paſſing through Kiel, at the time of his miſſion to Hamburgh, Beſtuſcheff had the audacity and the ſkill to carry off from the archives of the Dukes of Holſtein, the will of the Empreſs Catharine I. and the original acts relative to the connections of theſe dukes with the court of Peterſburgh, and to the claims of the children of Ann Petrowna to the inheritance of the throne of Ruſſia. Guilty of ſo flagrant an offence, Beſtuſcheff did not imagine that Peter could ever forget it, and he wiſhed to deprive him of the power of puniſhment.

Beſtuſcheff likewiſe reflected, that Peter muſt be irritated againſt him for ſupporting the houſe of Auſtria with Elizabeth, to the prejudice of the King of Pruſſia, to whom this young Prince paid a ſpecies of idolatry.

The Grand-chancellor had found means to gain over to his party almoſt all thoſe for whom Peter had any affection; and thoſe poltroons ſurrounded the prince only as ſpies, and in order to injure him. In this number was Kyrille Razoumoffsky, who had made

made one of thoſe fortunes which are regarded as prodigies in other countries, but which are very common in Ruſſia. Kyrille was a young peaſant, who, as ſoon as he was informed of the favour which the maſter of the buck-hounds, his brother, enjoyed with the Empreſs, departed from the Ukraine, his native country, and arrived with his guitar at Peterſburgh. From thence, he was immediately ſent to Berlin, and placed as a boarder for ſome time at the houſe of the celebrated Euler, whom he afterwards had the merit of attracting into Ruſſia. Very ſoon after his return from Pruſſia, Kyrille was created count, commandant of the Iſmaïloff guards, hetman of the koſacs of the Ukraine, and even preſident of the academy of arts and ſciences. Although of vulgar extraction, and with an education long neglected, Kyrille Razoumoffsky eaſily inſinuated himſelf into the good graces of the Grand-duke; and though newly arrived at court, he betrayed the Prince with an effrontery and a baſeneſs worthy of an ancient courtier.

To the deſire of aiding the deſigns of the Grand-chancellor, very ſoon were ſuperadded in the heart of Kyrille Razoumoffsky, motives of a perſonal vengeance. In proportion as his dignities increaſed, he ſuffered with impatience the witticiſms of the Grand-duke, who, to ſay truth, in the orgies to which Kyrille himſelf excited him, ſometimes recalled to his mind too openly, too rudely, his birth, his guitar, and the ſervile occupations of his early youth.

The Grand-duke had another favourite who did not betray him, but who, unfortunately, was neither endowed with ſufficient foreſight, nor ſufficient addreſs to prevent his being betrayed; this was his aid-de-camp general, Goudowitz. Born in the Ukraine, Goudowitz wiſhed to become hetman of it, and Peter was favourable to this pretenſion, even in the face of Kyrille Razoumoffsky. From this moment, Kyrille ſwore in his heart an implacable hatred to the Prince.

He

He offered to the Grand-chancellor a country-houſe, which he poſſeſſed near Kamenoï-Noſs, that they might there deliberate more at their eaſe on the project of ruining the Grand-duke, and it was there that all thoſe perfidious councils were ſince held, at the head of which, at that time, were Beſtuſcheff, Kyrille, and afterwards Schouwaloff, the young Princeſs D'Aſchkoff, and Maria Séménowna Tſchoglokoff, maid of honour to the Empreſs, and one of her moſt dangerous confidantes. The conſpirators concerted together reſpecting more perſons, who, in their judgment, might be uſeful aſſociates. They gave mutually an account of the engines already played off, prepared new ones, and, finally, adopted the meaſures the beſt calculated to deprive the laſt deſcendant of Peter I. of the throne.

For example, they endeavoured to perſuade the Empreſs that her nephew was addicted to drunkenneſs, even long before he had acquired the habit of drinking to exceſs, a habit which he doubtleſs contracted from want of employment, from laſſitude, and from the treacherous ſuggeſtions of thoſe who ſurrounded him. The following is the manner in which they went to work.

Séménowna Tſchoglokoff converſing one day with Elizabeth, and perceiving that this Princeſs was not pleaſed with the Grand-duke, ſaid to her with an afflicted air, it was very melancholy that this Prince, ſtill ſo young, ſhould abandon himſelf to drinking. Elizabeth, who for the firſt time heard the Grand-duke accuſed of this vice, believed it to be a calumny, and challenged Séménowna to prove what ſhe had aſſerted. "Nothing is more eaſy," replied the impudent Séménowna. "Your Majeſty will be able "to judge from your own obſervation." A few days afterwards, knowing that the Grand-duke was indiſpoſed and kept his room, ſhe went to ſee him, and requeſted him to permit her to keep him company at dinner. Peter gave his conſent, and made her place herſelf

herſelf at table by him. During the repaſt, Séménowna with great gaiety and with careſſes, ſaid to the Prince, that ſhe would cure him with a bottle of champagne. The bottle was called for; the dexterous Séménowna ſeized upon it, threw into it ſecretly a pinch of Spaniſh ſnuff, and making the Grand-duke ſwallow ſeveral bumpers to the health of his aunt, ſhe completely intoxicated him. Immediately the perfidious maid of honour gave the Empreſs notice of it. Elizabeth arrived, and, ignorant of the proceſs of the ſcene which had juſt paſſed, could not behold her unfortunate nephew without indignation. Already too much diſpoſed to prejudice againſt him, ſhe believed the more readily in the ſequel all that Séménowna Tſchoglokoff and her accomplices wiſhed to impute to this Prince; and, emboldened by this ſucceſs, the conſpirators preſumed to allow themſelves to propagate the moſt unfounded reports.

Beſides, the ſtate of inaction, and of neglect in which Peter languiſhed, and the unfortunate eaſineſs of his character, were but too well calculated to favour the deſigns of his enemies.

When the Empreſs was impreſſed with the belief that he abandoned himſelf to exceſſes, ſhe not only withdrew the preſent of fifty thouſand roubles which ſhe was accuſtomed to give him on the anniverſary of his birth, but ſhe ſo curtailed the proviſions of his table, that the prince and his companions ſometimes had not a decent ſufficiency. Peter on theſe occaſions permitted complaints, mingled with ill-humour, to eſcape him, and theſe complaints were carefully treaſured up, empoiſoned, and conveyed to the Empreſs.

Soon after the marriage of the Grand-duke, his aunt had made him a preſent of Oranienbaum, a pleaſure-houſe, which had belonged to the too celebrated Menzikoff, and as ſoon as the fine weather permitted him to quit Peterſburgh, where he lived rather as a ſtate priſoner, than as the heir of the throne,

throne, Peter retired to this houſe. There, freed from the preſence of his aunt, and baniſhing all conſtraint, he amuſed himſelf by cauſing his attendants to aſſume a German uniform, and in making them go through the Pruſſian exerciſe. Elizabeth commended this occupation, which ſhe thought calculated to deſtroy in her nephew a taſte for dangerous pleaſures, and even all inclination for political concerns, which ſhe regarded as ſtill more dangerous. She gave orders at the ſame time, that a great number of ſoldiers ſhould be draughted from different regiments, which were put in garriſon at Oranienbaum, and added to thoſe of the Grand-duke; but this attention which appeared a favour granted to the Prince, was moſt probably only a farther precaution employed againſt him. Whatever might be the caſe, he received them with tranſport, and gave himſelf up to his military and Pruſſian inclination with redoubled ardour.

Many Germans have long been in the uſe of going to try their fortunes in Ruſſia. The elevation of a Holſteineſe prince to the rank of Grand-duke, had attracted thither a ſtill greater number. The ſoldiers whom Peter had at Oranienbaum were almoſt all of that nation. He had likewiſe made choice of ſeveral others who underſtood muſic, or who had qualifications for performing ſtage plays, and he made them repreſent the beſt pieces of the German theatre.

But neither the theatre nor military exerciſes could occupy the whole day of this Prince, and the void was but too frequently filled up by thoſe habits in which he had begun to indulge, in the idleneſs of the palace at Peterſburgh.

The party formed againſt him being well acquainted with his extreme fondneſs for every thing Pruſſian, had found means to perſuade him that in Pruſſia all the officers inceſſantly ſmoked, drank, and gamed. The young men who were about him, joined, if not from malignity, at leaſt from libertiniſm, example

ample to precept, and after this he became a ſmoker, a drinker, a gameſter.

Catharine at that time obſerved a conduct entirely oppoſite to that of her huſband. Directed by her vigilant mother, her ſole employment was to make herſelf partiſans among the moſt powerful perſonages of the court. Her violent inclination for pleaſure became dormant at the voice of ambition; and if ſhe did not ſucceed in gaining the friendſhip of the Empreſs, ſhe at leaſt found means to command her eſteem.

However, what will appear perhaps a little difficult to believe, the Princeſs of Zerbſt did not obſerve ſo much circumſpection with regard to herſelf, as ſhe inſpired her daughter with. Elizabeth regarded her as a friend, a ſiſter, and repoſed in her the moſt unbounded confidence. Proud of the credit ſhe poſſeſſed, the Princeſs of Zerbſt was not ſlow in abuſing it. She preſumed to mingle in the intrigues of courtiers, to render herſelf the diſpenſer of favours, and, finally to inſinuate herſelf into the ſecret of the moſt important affairs. Her haughtineſs diſguſted the favourites, her curioſity fatigued the miniſters. They united together to awaken the jealouſy of the Empreſs, and to deliver her from a yoke which ſhe had permitted to be impoſed on herſelf, without being conſcious of it. Their efforts were not unſucceſsful. Elizabeth withdrew almoſt inſtantaneouſly that confidence which ſhe had granted to the mother of Catharine.

The Princeſs of Zerbſt, in deſpair at this reverſe, endeavoured by every method to remedy it. She requeſted the counſels of the King of Pruſſia and of the King of Sweden; but ſhe was rigorouſly watched. It became very difficult for her to maintain any correſpondence. The following is the mode which ſhe one day adopted, in order to convey a letter to the King of Sweden. A ball was given at court; the Princeſs of Zerbſt was preſent with the Grand-dutcheſs,

her daughter. Leſtoc, who was exiled ſhortly after, was likewiſe preſent. All at once, the Grand-dutcheſs advanced towards Leſtoc, who, according to his cuſtom, was amuſing himſelf in chatting with ſome ladies, and throwing him a glove, ſhe told him that ſhe intended dancing with him. Leſtoc perceived that it contained a paper. Upon this, the dextrous courtier ſaid, laughing, to the Grand-dutcheſs; "I "accept the challenge, madam, but inſtead of reſtor-"ing you your glove, I entreat you to give me the "other, that I may preſent them both as a gift from "you to my wife: the favour will be then complete." The country-dance being finiſhed, Leſtoc ſlipped away, concealing the gloves under his waiſtcoat, for fear that the Empreſs had been informed of it, and had ordered him to be ſearched at the door.

All the ſtratagems which the Princeſs of Zerbſt employed were not equally fortunate. Every day produced ſome new complaint againſt her, or diſcovered ſome new intrigue. The reſentment of the Empreſs had arrived at its height; ſhe ordered the Princeſs to quit Ruſſia.

A. D. 1751. The Princeſs of Zerbſt experienced, on parting from her daughter, the moſt violent affliction. To put the finiſhing ſtroke to her misfortune, ſhe durſt not ſettle near the King of Sweden, her brother, who was apprehenſive that her preſence at Stockholm might give umbrage to the Empreſs. Equally rejected by her other relations, ſhe took her departure for the court of France, and obtained to the time of her death an aſylum in the Luxemburgh.

Catharine beheld the departure of her mother with conſiderable regret; but the expectation of the throne, which had borne her up againſt other vexations, ſtill ſuſtained her, and love in a very ſhort time came to mingle its conſolations with thoſe of ambition.

The young people who ſurrounded the Grand-duke did not all abandon themſelves, like this prince, ſolely to the pleaſures of the table, to play and to military

military exhibitions. There was one in particular who rendered himſelf as much diſtinguiſhed by his taſte for the fine arts as by the graces of his perſon: this was Soltikoff. Chamberlain to the prince, he was in all his parties, but was aſhamed of them. He was tolerably well acquainted with French literature, he knew by heart the choiceſt morſels of Racine and Voltaire, to which his voice ſeemed to add new charms. Although ſcarcely emerged from childhood he had already obtained the favours of ſeveral of the court belles, and his ſucceſs rendered him arrogant. Soltikoff it is true, paſſed for being a little deficient in courage among men, but he was not the leſs preſumptuous nor the leſs forward in the ſociety of women. Perhaps he might have trembled at the ſight of a naked ſword, but to extend the number of his gallant conqueſts, he had frequently appeared to brave the deſerts of Siberia. In a word the married men regarded him as the moſt agreeable and the moſt dangerous man in Peterſburgh.

It was not long before Soltikoff raiſed his eyes towards the wife of his maſter, and vanity, ſtill more than love, inſpired him with the bold deſign of captivating her heart. He began by carefully ſtudying the inclinations of the princeſs. He perceived that notwithſtanding the conſtraint in which ſhe lived, Catharine had a great fondneſs for pleaſure, and that the ſolitude of Oranienbaum rendered diſſipation neceſſary to her. He immediately procured for her ſome new amuſement every day. He perſuaded the Grand-duke to give feſtivals; he took upon himſelf the charge of inventing them, of directing them, and he did not allow the Grand-dutcheſs to remain ignorant that ſhe was their ſole object, and that it was to him alone that ſhe was indebted for them. Catharine was not inſenſible to attentions ſo gallant, ſo unremitting. The ſeducing figure and the wit of Soltikoff had made an impreſſion upon her. His aſſiduities completely won her; but Soltikoff well knowing that

the heart of the Grand-dutcheſs was not an ordinary conqueſt, dreaded explaining himſelf in an incautious manner. It is even poſſible that he only wiſhed at that time to feign a paſſion which proved in the end altogether real. They at laſt had become attached to each other, for a long time, without having declared their affection.

A melancholy event accelerated this declaration. Soltikoff loſt his father. His duty obliged him to take his departure for Moſcow. He obtained permiſſion to this effect from the Grand-duke, and on taking leave of Catharine he could not refrain from letting her ſee what pangs his departure coſt him. The Princeſs who beheld his tears, was no leſs touched than himſelf with the motive which cauſed them to flow, and fixing her eyes, with a very expreſſive air, upon Soltikoff, ſhe conjured him to abridge the period of his abſence as much as he could, and to return to forget his ſorrows in the boſom of a court where without him it was impoſſible to enjoy pleaſure.

The character of Soltikoff may permit us eaſily to judge of what an impreſſion theſe words were productive. He thought he perceived a return of affection on her part, and his pride redoubled. His journey laſted but a few days. What were domeſtic occupations when put in competition with the happineſs which awaited him? What was Moſcow to him in compariſon of Peterſburgh? He abandoned every thing to haſten, and to ſecure his triumph.

However, on approaching the Grand-dutcheſs, the preſumptuous ideas which had filled his mind at a diſtance from her, began to vaniſh away. His audacity abandoned him. The moſt ſerious, the moſt melancholy reflections overwhelmed his ſpirit. He foreſaw all the danger of his attachment. He durſt not preſume to flatter himſelf that Catharine could forget what ſhe owed to her rank, to her huſband, to receive the attentions of a ſimple chamberlain. But were he ſo happy as to find that ſhe deigned to return his

his paſſion, was it poſſible for him to believe he could elude the penetrating obſervation of the jealous courtiers who ſurrounded him? How, in a word, riſk an avowal of which perpetual impriſonment, or even the loſs of life might become the price? He trembled, he was ſtruck with terror, he reſolved to renounce thoſe hopes which he believed to have been too ambitiouſly conceived.

In this ſtate of inquietude and ſorrow, Soltikoff could no longer diſplay that brilliant gaiety, which had till then diſtinguiſhed him. He tried in vain to aſſume at times an unembarraſſed air. The deepeſt melancholy preyed upon his heart, and was depicted on his countenance; his health viſibly declined. The Grand-dutcheſs was alarmed at it, and one day that ſhe found herſelf alone with him, demanded the reaſon. Soltikoff being then unable to reſiſt the paſſion which he felt, made the confeſſion. Catharine liſtened to it without anger, ſhe even appeared to pity him, but adviſed him to renounce a propenſity of which he could not but feel the impropriety and the danger. Although ſtill very young, Soltikoff underſtood the female ſex too well not to know that ſhe who permits herſelf to liſten to a lover, already begins to approve him. He gained new confidence. He threw himſelf at the knees of the Grand-dutcheſs, and had the preſumption to embrace them. The Princeſs was diſtreſſed, ſhe let fall ſome tears, and flying precipitately from the tranſports of Soltikoff, to go and ſhut herſelf up in her cloſet,' ſhe repeated that line with which Monimia addreſſes Xiphares in the tragedy of Mithridates:

"Et meritez les pleurs que vous m'allez coûter." *

From this moment the chamberlain recovered his gaiety with hope, and every thing around him announced this alteration.

* And merit the tears you are going to coſt me.

Whilſt the Grand-duke and the Grand-dutcheſs paſſed the fine ſeaſon at Oranienbaum, the Empreſs Elizabeth remained at Peterſhof, and from time to time invited this couple thither to partake of the pleaſures of her court. It was on one of theſe occaſions that Soltikoff became completely happy. In order to avoid ſpectacles, feaſts, where too many indiſcreet obſervations laid her under conſtraint, Catharine feigned indiſpoſition. The Grand-duke was ſo blinded with reſpect to his chamberlain, that he himſelf entreated him to ſhare the ſolitude of his wife, and to employ all the allurements of his wit in order to amuſe her. This was preciſely what the two lovers wiſhed; accordingly they did not fail to take advantage of it. But ſcarcely had the Grand-dutcheſs yielded, than ſhe abandoned herſelf to all the apprehenſion with which the idea of her weakneſs could inſpire her. She foreſaw the dangerous conſequences of the pleaſures which ſhe taſted with Soltikoff, and imparted her fears to him. The chamberlain obſerved to her, that if ſhe could find a method to bring her huſband to her arms, the conſequences which ſhe ſo much dreaded would become of advantage to her. He took upon himſelf at the ſame time to procure the ſucceſs of the project.

A. D. 1753.

The Grand-duke had, as has been already ſaid, begun to abandon himſelf to the exceſſes of the table, and, when heated with wine, ſometimes converſed with his friends reſpecting the obſtacle which eſtranged him from his wife. The cauſe of his impotence was then known, and the method of removing it eaſy; but the Grand-duke feared to make uſe of this method. Soltikoff reſolved to make him determine upon it. He wiſhed however in the firſt place to obtain the conſent of the Empreſs. An opportunity very fortunately preſented itſelf.

Madam de Nariſchkin, ſiſter and confidant of Soltikoff, was pregnant. Soltikoff was chatting with her when

when Elizabeth approached Madam de Nariſchkin to congratulate her on the happineſs ſhe enjoyed in knowing how to create an heir.—"I wiſh ſincerely," added ſhe, "you could communicate this virtue "to the Grand-dutcheſs." Soltikoff ſaw that this was the favourable moment for letting the Empreſs know what it was that oppoſed the happineſs of the Grand-duke. He revealed it to her. He likewiſe informed her, that he had formed the deſign of profiting by the aſcendancy which he had over the Prince, to perſuade him to rid himſelf of an obſtacle ſo eaſy to be removed. Elizabeth approved it, and even recommended to him to neglect nothing which could procure ſucceſs in a project on which depended the tranquillity of her nephew, and that of the empire.

Soltikoff, emboldened by this firſt ſtep, propoſed the very ſame day to the Grand-duke to ſubmit to the operation preſcribed by the legiſlator of the Hebrews. He repreſented to him that he would experience but a very ſlight pain, and that he would only be obliged to keep his apartment ſome days, to taſte afterwards the moſt delicious pleaſures. The Prince, naturally timid, manifeſted an extreme repugnance. The wiſhes of his aunt, the enthuſiaſm of Soltikoff, the wiſh he himſelf felt of enjoying an unknown pleaſure, the ſhame of not being like other men, nothing could make him come to a reſolution.

But Soltikoff was too much intereſted in this undertaking to be diſcouraged by theſe firſt difficulties. He gained over the other favourites of the Grand-duke, by aſſuring them, that what he had done was by the orders of the Empreſs. One night that this prince ſupped with him, and having, according to cuſtom, drank to exceſs, they turned the converſation upon the pleaſures of love. The Prince permitted ſome expreſſions of regret to eſcape him, on the impoſſibility of having the power of enjoying them. Upon this, all the company threw themſelves at his

knees, and conjured him to yield to the advice of Soltikoff. The Grand-duke appeared irreſolute. Some words which he ſtammered out were interpreted into conſent. Every thing was prepared. The famous phyſician Boerhave was introduced, with a ſkilful ſurgeon. He had no longer any power of defending himſelf, and the operation was very happily performed. The Empreſs Elizabeth was ſo well ſatisfied with the conduct of Soltikoff, that ſhe teſtified her gratitude by preſenting him with a magnificent diamond.

The young chamberlain had been till then too happy not to experience ſome diſturbance of his happineſs. The Grand-dutcheſs did not always obſerve ſufficient precaution to conceal the paſſion which ſhe had for him. The courtiers, always malignant, always envious, began by remarking a preference which offended them, and they very ſoon diſcovered the real cauſe. Immediately the ruin of Soltikoff was reſolved upon. Even thoſe who teſtified the greateſt friendſhip towards him, and of courſe had it moſt in their power to injure him, continued ſecretly to convey to the Empreſs their ſuſpicions reſpecting the attachment between the Grand-dutcheſs and the chamberlain. Greatly addicted to gallantry herſelf, Elizabeth ſhould not perhaps have been too deeply offended at this intrigue; but ſhe was ſtately, and in the firſt moments of her indignation, ſhe declared that an exile into Siberia ſhould be the price of the temerity of Soltikoff. She likewiſe declared, that as ſoon as the Grand-duke, perfectly cured of the conſequences of the operation which he had undergone, could begin to enjoy the privileges of a huſband, it was her will that the Grand-dutcheſs ſhould conform to the ancient cuſtom of the Ruſſians, and give the tokens of virginity, which ſhe muſt have preſerved till then.

Soltikoff, informed of the danger which threatened him, immediately applied himſelf to deviſe

the

the means of escaping it. He perceived, that the best mode to prevent the storm from bursting on his head, was to brave it. Assuming then an air of assurance, and with all the appearance of injured innocence, he flew to the Grand-duke to complain of the reports which had been so daringly spread. He reminded the Prince, that he had only presented himself before the Grand-dutchess in conformity to the orders which he had himself given him, and he protested that he had never regarded that Princess but with all the respect due to her rank. He observed at the same time, that the calumniators who wished to ruin him sought, by a round-about but certain method, to attack the heir of the empire, since by these infamous reports the honour of the throne would find itself much more deeply exposed than that of a simple chamberlain. He finally added, in order that he might no longer furnish a pretext for the jealousy of his enemies, and to appease the Empress, that he begged the Grand-duke's permission to retire to Moscow.

The discourse of Soltikoff not only deceived the credulous Prince, but persuaded him, that his own glory required he should retain the chamberlain in the service of his wife. He ordered him to remain; afterwards he demanded an audience of the Empress, in which he complained of the insolent language which was allowed; he defended Soltikoff with so much vehemence, and by such plausible reasons, that Elizabeth began herself to believe that the reports which had been made to her could be the offspring only of calumny.

Whilst this scene was going forward in the apartment of Elizabeth, the Grand-dutchess did not remain idle; she was more interested than any one, in causing these injurious reports to be quashed, and in the preservation of her lover. And who could better than herself undertake her own defence? Informed by Madam de Narischkin of the pains which the

the Grand-duke had taken to juſtify Soltikoff, and of the ſucceſs which he had juſt obtained, ſhe preſented herſelf immediately before the Empreſs. Laying aſide the mildneſs in which ſhe had always, till then, appeared clothed in the preſence of the ſovereign, ſhe broke out into reproaches for her having given credit to ſuch odious ſuſpicions. She repreſented how uncertain and deceitful the proof which the Empreſs demanded of her virtue might be, and how ſuch a requeſt overwhelmed her with ſhame, ſince on occaſions of this kind the ſmalleſt doubt left an indelible ſtain. Grief, revenge, paſſion, lent ſo great a force to her eloquence, that Elizabeth could not reſiſt it; ſhe appeared moved, ſoftened, perſuaded, and the victory of Catharine was ſtill more complete than that of the Grand-duke.

In the evening there was, according to cuſtom, a grand party at the palace, and the Empreſs haſtened to take advantage of it, to teſtify in the eyes of her courtiers, that Soltikoff had no longer any thing to dread from her. The chamberlain was engaged at play: Elizabeth, advancing cloſe to the back of his chair, aſked him, with that grace which ſhe knew how to infuſe into every thing ſhe ſaid, if he was happy. "Never, Madam," replied Soltikoff. "I am "ſorry for it," rejoined ſhe: "but this is perhaps in "ſome meaſure your own fault. It is ſaid that you "intend quitting the Grand-duke; I cannot believe "it, and I invite you to remain with him. Depend "upon it, that if your enemies make any further at-"tempts to malign you, I will be the firſt to ſtand up "in your defence."

Had it been true that Soltikoff was forming a ſerious deſign of withdrawing himſelf from court, theſe words would have been ſufficient to retain him; and ſuppoſing the courtiers to have procured the moſt poſitive proof of his preſumption, they would henceforward have impoſed ſilence on them.

However, the Grand-duke, feeling no longer any incon-

inconvenience from the operation which he had undergone, at laſt had the courage to enjoy his privileges as a huſband. All was prepared; he paſſed the night with his conſort, and believed himſelf perfectly happy. The next day he ſent to the Empreſs, at the inſtigation of Soltikoff, a ſealed caſket, which contained the tokens of the pretended virginity of the Grand-dutcheſs. Elizabeth appeared to be perſuaded of their authenticity. Some people no doubt laughed at this inwardly, but every one was eager loudly to felicitate the Prince upon his happineſs.

From this period Soltikoff thought he had no danger to guard againſt: he enjoyed, without diſturbance and without remorſe, pleaſures from which, the moment that the Grand-duke had paſſed into the arms of Catharine, did not permit him to apprehend any ill conſequences. Catharine herſelf had no longer occaſion to employ extreme circumſpection: her firſt ſucceſs had inſpired her with greater courage. Beſides, the example of the Empreſs Elizabeth, whoſe manners became more and more corrupted, and who abandoned herſelf every day to new propenſities, ſeemed to excuſe her own attachment. The Empreſs entertained no ſuſpicions of an intrigue which ſhe might eaſily have perceived, or if ſhe remarked it, ſhe did not any longer diſcover at leaſt either ſuſpicion or anger.

A. D. 1754. Time, which weakens, and frequently extinguiſhes, the moſt ardent paſſions, did not in any degree diminiſh that of Catharine. That Princeſs was on the point of becoming a mother; Soltikoff gained every day a greater aſcendancy over her heart; but his good fortune had arrived at its ſummit; he became himſelf the artificer of his own deſtruction.

The Grand-chancellor, Beſtuſcheff, was dumb, as well as the other courtiers, with reſpect to the favour which Soltikoff enjoyed, but ſtill continued to watch him with the ſtricteſt attention. Occupied inceſſantly with the project of depriving the Grand-

duke

duke of the throne, the old miniſter thought that the moſt certain means of ſucceſs was, in the firſt place, to ruin the favourite of the Prince, and that in order to ruin him he muſt firſt gain him.

Beſtuſcheff, whom the title of Grand-chancellor, the general adminiſtration of affairs, his credit, his deep ſkill in politics, rendered the moſt powerful man of the empire, became the humble flatterer of Soltikoff. He laviſhed on him marks of deference, praiſes and careſſes. He revealed to him the moſt important ſecrets; he frequently conſulted, or feigned to conſult him; he at laſt got ſuch complete poſſeſſion of his confidence, that the chamberlain, miſled by ambition, believed he had not a more ſincere friend than the crafty miniſter. He himſelf, who now ſaw the influence that he poſſeſſed over Soltikoff, and who only meditated delivering himſelf from ſo dangerous a rival, cauſed him to adopt this fatal meaſure: He told him, that in order to increaſe his aſcendancy, and to render himſelf complete governor of the mind of the Grand-duke, he muſt baniſh from that Prince the perſons who poſſeſſed birth, ambition, talents, and only permit him to be ſurrounded by low and obſcure people, or who, provided by Soltikoff himſelf, would be entirely devoted to him. Soltikoff did not perceive the ſnare. He was already incapable of penetrating into the motive of ſo perfidious an advice. The favour which he enjoyed rendered every thing poſſible; his ambition increaſed; he wiſhed to aſſure to himſelf an abſolute empire; he haſtened to do all that the old chancellor had told him. Thus one moment of imprudence deſtroyed a triumph of ſeveral years.

This freſh ſtorm, brewed againſt the favourite, all at once augmented. The young courtiers, finding themſelves ſecluded from the heir of the throne, murmured, and united their efforts to thoſe of the friends of Beſtuſcheff. The chancellor ſtimulated the audacity of the Tſchoglokoffs and the Razoumoffſkies.

They

They at laſt united as one man, for the purpoſe of laying their complaints before Elizabeth. Beſtuſcheff perceived that it was time to ſpeak himſelf to the Empreſs. He had therefore a ſecret conference with her, in which he reminded her of all ſhe already knew of the weakneſs, of the abſurdities of the Grand-duke, and of the exceſſes to which he abandoned himſelf. He told her that theſe exceſſes, that theſe irregularities, were to be attributed to Soltikoff alone, who, that he might the better enſlave the Prince, permitted only abject and debauched companions to approach him. He renewed the ſuſpicions too well founded, and for a long time ſpread abroad, reſpecting the criminal correſpondence which the chamberlain kept up with the Grand-dutcheſs. He finally repreſented him as a treacherous favourite, whoſe ambition threatened Ruſſia with a horrible reign.

The Empreſs, irritated, reſolved anew to puniſh Soltikoff; but, directed by the old chancellor, ſhe took this time means more certain than the firſt. The ſecret was kept, and the diſgrace of the chamberlain was concealed under the pretext of an honourable miſſion. Elizabeth gave him orders to take his departure for Stockholm with the title of envoy extraordinary, to notify to the King of Sweden the birth of Paul Petrowitz, of whom the Grand-dutcheſs was juſt delivered. The preſumptuous Soltikoff at that time beheld in this employ only a new mark of the favour of the Empreſs. He accepted it with gratitude, quickly ſet out for Sweden, and was going to return in the ſame manner; but ſcarcely had he quitted Stockholm on his way to Peterſburgh, when a courier ſtopped him on the road, and delivered him an order to go and reſide at Hamburgh, in quality of miniſter plenipotentiary from the court of Ruſſia.

The eyes of Soltikoff were now opened. He ſaw that he had been cruelly deceived. He wrote to the Grand-dutcheſs, and entreated her to ſolicit his recal. That Princeſs, not leſs affected than himſelf at his abſence,

abſence, was haſtening immediately to employ her credit and her eloquence with the Empreſs to prevail on her to recal him; but the chancellor, who had foreſeen every thing, paid her a viſit, in order to repreſent to her the dangers of this project. He told her without circumlocution, that the ſteps ſhe was going to hazard in favour of Soltikoff would fortify the ſuſpicions entertained of her, and would end in her ruin. She ſtood convinced. Ambition reduced love to ſilence.

Catharine, however, preſerved for ſome time the paſſion with which the chamberlain had inſpired her. She frequently wrote to and received letters from him. Misfortune ſeemed even to augment her tenderneſs; when all at once the preſence of a ſtranger, whom chance had conducted to the court of Ruſſia, obliterated from her mind a lover whom ſhe beheld no longer.

A. D. 1755. The young Count Staniſlaus Poniatowſky, to whom Catharine has ſince given, and afterwards taken away, the throne of Poland, was the happy ſucceſſor of Soltikoff. Born a ſimple gentleman, and unpoſſeſſed of fortune, but endowed with a fine figure and filled with ambition, Poniatowſky carried about through Germany, and in France for ſome time, his reſtleſſneſs and vague expectations. He was at firſt tolerably ſucceſsful at Paris, where the friendſhip of the Swediſh ambaſſador procured him ſome diſtinguiſhed connections; but his mother, who dreaded on his account the too ſeductive pleaſures of that city, wrote to him, with orders to depart from it. She was in the right; for Poniatowſky had been already impriſoned for debt, and had been releaſed merely by the generoſity of the wife of a manufacturer of glaſs named Geoffrin. He quitted France, and went over to England, where he met again Sir Hanbury Williams, with whom he had been acquainted at Warſaw, and who, nominated by the court of London as ambaſſador to Peterſburgh, carried him in his

his ſuit. Without having any title which could attach him to the embaſſy, the young Poloneſe laboured in the ambaſſador's office, and ſerved him in quality of ſecretary. He at firſt intended to devote himſelf entirely to diplomatic purſuits; but the taſte for diſſipation which for a long time had led him away, his youth, the ſeducing opportunities which were every day preſenting themſelves to him, very ſoon hurried him back to pleaſure. He was gay, genteel, brilliant, and formed to ſucceed in a court of which amuſement ſeemed to be the principal concern. Accordingly, he was not ſlow in perceiving the impreſſion which he had made upon the heart of Catharine.

A. D. 1756. Poniatowſky was bold even to preſumption. However, the rank of the Grand-dutcheſs intimidated him, and the numerous courtiers whoſe eyes were upon him reſtrained him ſtill more. The two lovers for ſome time converſed only by their looks, but to theſe converſations in dumb-ſhew ſome of another ſort afterwards ſucceeded, in which they came to an explanation with regard to their attachment, and reſpecting the methods which they ſhould adopt in order to give themſelves up to it without conſtraint.

Envy, which at that time ſtudied the inclinations of the Grand-dutcheſs only to cenſure and thwart them, haſtened to inform the Empreſs of the new intrigue of her adopted niece.

Elizabeth did not eſteem her nephew, and gave herſelf as little concern about the honour of the Grand-dutcheſs; ſhe did not in general obſerve greater ſeverity with regard to the manners of others than to her own; in a word, ſhe was always reluctant to puniſh; but her extreme facility in following the counſels of all who ſurrounded her, frequently cauſed her to act with a rigour entirely foreign to her character. She gave orders to Poniatowſky to quit Ruſſia immediately. Poniatowſky obeyed.

In

In continuing to form the cabal againſt the Grand-duke, and in baniſhing Soltikoff from the court, the chancellor Beſtuſcheff had neglected nothing to ſtrengthen his party by the ſupport of the Grand-dutcheſs. He appeared every day to attach himſelf more and more to this Princeſs. He humoured her propenſities; he became even ſubſervient to them; he at laſt obliterated from her mind that he had been the principal cauſe of the loſs of her firſt lover. She thought that he might be of ſervice in procuring the reſtoration of the ſecond. The old miniſter gave her his promiſe, and was in earneſt to employ means for this end. Poniatowſky appeared to him as an object far leſs to be dreaded than Soltikoff. He knew that the heart of Catharine could not remain in an inactive ſtate: he was better pleaſed, then, to ſee her choice fall upon a foreigner than upon a Ruſſian.

The grand-chancellor was on intimate terms with the Count de Bruhl, prime miniſter to the King of Poland. He wrote to inform him of the attachment of the Grand-dutcheſs to Poniatowſky, and of the advantage which he might derive from ſending this young Poloneſe back to Ruſſia, by giving him a character which ſerved as a plauſible pretext for his return. The Count de Bruhl was ſenſible of the importance of this project; however, the execution of it was rather embarraſſing; it was neceſſary to infringe, in favour of Poniatowſky, two laws which were abſolutely againſt him.

The firſt of theſe laws forbade every native of Poland, poſſeſſing a ſtaroſtie, to quit the kingdom.

The ſecond declared, that a Poloneſe could never take charge, at a foreign court, of the direction of the affairs of Saxony, nor a Saxon thoſe of Poland.

But Bruhl had a method of ſilencing the laws, when placed in oppoſition to his will. The neceſſity of acquiring an aſcendant at the court of Ruſſia, and the deſire of conciliating farther the friendſhip of the

the Ruſſian chancellor, whom the Saxon regarded as one of his principal ſupporters, carried every thing before them. Poniatowſky was publicly inveſted with the order of the white eagle, and very ſoon afterwards a ſecret council was held, in which he was nominated miniſter plenipotentiary of the republic, and of the King of Poland, to the Empreſs Elizabeth. They did not even deign, on this occaſion, to aſſemble the *ſenatus concilium*, as was cuſtomary.

All the patriots of Poland were fired with indignation. They were not ignorant that the new plenipotentiary was the creature of the Czartorynſkies, and the partiſan of England and of Pruſſia.

Durand, an intelligent and courageous man, *chargé des affaires* from France, flew to the Count de Bruhl to reproach him with the choice which he had juſt made, at a moment when it was of ſo much conſequence for Poland to keep on terms with the courts of Vienna and of Verſailles. The Count de Bruhl thought to deceive the agent of France by a falſehood; he aſſerted that he had been in no degree inſtrumental in the nomination of Poniatowſky; but, notwithſtanding, he only diſplayed greater zeal in haſtening his departure.

Become the patron of Poniatowſky, the Count de Bruhl neglected nothing in order to procure that ſucceſs which might juſtify his choice. He was informed of that ſtate of formality which an affectation of Aſiatic luxury eſtabliſhed at the court of Ruſſia. He was not ignorant that the Empreſs Elizabeth laviſhed on her favourites, and on the inventors of her ſumptuous and abſurd *fêtes*, the money which ſhe ought to have employed in anſwering the exigencies of the empire; he knew, in a word, that the Grand-duke and the Grand-dutcheſs languiſhed in a penury unbecoming their rank. He remitted therefore to Poniatowſky ſix thouſand ducats, that he might lend them to the Prince and his conſort on their moſt preſſing occaſions, and to conciliate to himſelf, by

this means, their entire benevolence. Poniatowſky very artfully took advantage of the advice and the munificence of Bruhl. He was already ſecure of the heart of the wife; and very ſoon became ſucceſsful with the huſband. He ſpoke Engliſh and German with him; he drank, ſmoked, violently abuſed France and the French, and beſtowed exceſſive praiſes on the King of Pruſſia. He feigned beſides to be occupied only in the purſuit of pleaſure. But the Poles, the Ruſſians themſelves were not ſlow of penetrating into his ambitious deſigns, and maintained that he was ſacrificing to his own intereſts thoſe of his maſter and of the Czartorynſkies: time has ſhewn that they were not miſtaken.

And what might not a man of ability then effect at the court of Peterſburgh? What were the principal perſonages of this court, abandoned to oſtentation, to intrigue, to depravity?

The Empreſs Elizabeth had inſenſibly quitted moderate pleaſures for groſs exceſs, and her taſte for devotion augmented with that for voluptuouſneſs. She continued for whole hours on her knees before an image to which ſhe ſpoke, which ſhe even conſulted; and ſhe paſſed by turns from bigotry to debauchery, and from debauchery to bigotry. She frequently drank to intoxication, and too ſenſual, too impatient in that ſtate, ſhe would not even permit herſelf to be undreſſed. Her women only ſlightly tacked together the clothes with which they dreſſed her in the morning, that they might take them off in the evening with a few touches of the ſciſſars, they afterwards carried her to bed, where ſhe endeavoured to recover ſtrength in the arms of a new gallant.

The Grand-dutcheſs, blinded by her paſſion, and appearing to have entirely forgotten that prudence which had been ſo frequently recommended to her by her mother, and of which ſhe underſtood how to make uſe afterwards, imitated with boldneſs the irregularities of her aunt. She followed only the counſels

ſels of Beſtuſcheff, of Williams, the Britiſh ambaſſador, and of Poniatowſky. A foreigner accordingly, then at Peterſburgh, remarked, in making alluſion to theſe three men, that ſhe could not fail of being ill conducted, ſince ſhe permitted herſelf to be directed by roguery, folly and fatuity. Poniatowſky never quitted her. She conſecrated to him her whole days and nights; and obſerved ſo little myſtery in this commerce, that all the Ruſſians accuſed the young Poloneſe of being the father of the child which ſhe then carried in her womb. This child was the Princeſs Anne, of whom the Grand-

A. D. 1758. dutcheſs was delivered ſoon after, and who died almoſt as ſoon as born.

The Grand-duke was the only perſon at court who did not yet perceive the irregularities of the Grand-dutcheſs. But whether it was, that though he might be in a condition to ſatisfy the love with which ſhe formerly inſpired him, this love became immediately cold, or whether it was that the repugnance which he obſerved in her cauſed the ſame feeling in himſelf, he approached her but very rarely. This Prince beſides abandoned himſelf more than ever to his mania of aping the King of Pruſſia; he imitated, with a puerile affectation, the air, the manners, the tone of this monarch. He made his little troop at Oranienbaum wear the Pruſſian uniform, and aſſumed it himſelf; he fatigued his ſoldiers by uſeleſs manœuvres and exerciſes; from theſe he paſſed to the exceſſes of the table, and when he was drunk, announced that he would one day be the conqueror of the north, and would imitate Frederick in every thing. But how wide a difference was there between the imitator and the model!

The Grand-chancellor, occupied inceſſantly in his project of vilifying, of calumniating this Prince, and in encouraging the propenſities of the Grand-dutcheſs, in hope that, when ſhe aſcended the throne, ſhe would maintain him in his place, forgot the inte-

reſts of the empire to attend ſolely to his own. The other miniſters, who for the moſt part were only his tools, did exactly the ſame.

The Razoumoffskies, the Schouwaloffs, the Tſchoglokoffs, the Nariſchkins, the Woronzoffs, and the croud of courtiers who witneſſed the degradation of their rulers, deſpiſed and flattered them in the moſt contemptible manner.

The people, who could eaſily perceive the diſorders of the court, ſeemed not to dare to raiſe their eyes to it. They revered, in Elizabeth, the blood of Peter I. without diſturbing themſelves about her vices; ſo great ſtill was the influence of the impulſion given by the deſpotic reformer of Ruſſia! ſo much is the Ruſſian formed for an implicit ſervitude.

As ſoon as the Grand-chancellor Beſtuſcheff had accompliſhed the reconciliation of the court of Vienna with that of Peterſburgh, the Empreſs Elizabeth, and Maria Thereſa of Auſtria, formed againſt the King of Pruſſia an alliance offenſive and defenſive, to which the King of Poland, Auguſtus III. had acceded as Elector of Saxony.

The Engliſh and French, regarded, with reaſon, as the two firſt nations of Europe, and formed for reciprocal eſteem, ſeemed capable only of hating each other. The right of poſſeſſion of ſome uncultivated lands in America renewed the war between them; and this firſt ſpark, iſſuing from the extremities of Canada, occaſioned a conflagration which ſoon ſet on fire the two worlds. Frederick II. became the ally of England, and, always the adverſary of Maria-Thereſa and of Auguſtus III. commenced his hoſtilities by the invaſion of Saxony, and by the capture of the whole Saxon army, entrenched in the camp of Pirna, and compoſed of ſeventeen thouſand men. During this period another Pruſſian army entered Bohemia, and beat the Auſtrians in two or three rencounters.

The Empreſs Elizabeth ſent Field-marſchal Apraxin with forty thouſand Ruſſians, to avenge the Elector

tor of Saxony, and to assist Maria-Theresa in driving the Prussians from Bohemia, and in recovering Silesia, which sixteen years before Frederick had taken from her. Apraxin soon put himself in possession of Memel, and advanced afterwards almost up to Gross-Jœgersdorff, where the Prussians, commanded by Marescha Lewald, came to attack him. The victory was for a long time disputed, but at last it remained with the Russians, who, after having killed more than two thousand men of the Prussians, obliged them to quit the field of battle, and to leave behind them twenty-nine pieces of cannon.

If Apraxin had profited by this first advantage, and by the terror which he had just inspired, he might easily have marched on to Berlin. But, to the great astonishment of the Russians, and to the scandal of their allies, he fell back towards Courland, and hastened to establish himself in winter quarters. The following is the motive of this conduct. The Grand-duke, in despair at seeing his aunt give assistance against a monarch whom he idolized, made application to Bestuscheff to persuade him to recal the Russians. Bestuscheff did not like Frederick, and was on the contrary one of the most ardent friends of the court of Vienna. He least of all wished to do any thing which might give pleasure to the Grand-duke. But the Empress Elizabeth having just fallen sick, the Grand-duke might in a day or two ascend the throne; and Bestuscheff wishing, at whatever price, to maintain his authority, sacrificed his hatred, his affections, the honour of the empire, to his ambition. He gave orders to Field-mareschal Apraxin to renounce his conquests and to return; but the chancellor was for this once the dupe of his own policy.

Although Bestuscheff had made himself a great number of partisans, and a still greater number of tools, he had also many enemies, and these enemies had a glimpse of the means of ruining him, which they laid hold of with avidity. They perceived that

it would be very eaſy for them to cauſe hatred and diſorder to ſucceed the coldneſs which had ſubſiſted for a long time between the Grand-duke and the Grand-dutcheſs, and that they might procure the puniſhment of Beſtuſcheff for having been the primary cauſe, not only of theſe diſagreements, but even of the eſtrangement of the Empreſs from her nephew.

This plan well digeſted, they began by making the Prince obſerve the frequent converſations which Poniatowſky had with the Grand-dutcheſs. Their geſtures were watched; care was taken to catch at the moſt trifling words which eſcaped them, and which could ſerve as the pretext to ſome alluſion. One night, among others, that the Grand-dutcheſs was at table in the midſt of a numerous company, and oppoſite to Poniatowſky, the converſation turned upon the addreſs which ſome ladies had in managing horſes, and of the dangers to which they expoſed themſelves in this exerciſe, Catharine, who had her eyes fixed upon her lover, replied with vivacity: "There are few women ſo courageous as I am; I "poſſeſs unbridled temerity." Theſe words were inſtantly reported to the Grand-duke, who was eaſily furniſhed with the mode of making a malignant application of them.

When the jealouſy of the Grand-duke was once awakened, they were in haſte to furniſh him with poſitive proofs of the love of his wife for the Poloneſe, and of the criminal commerce which they carried on. The Prince was overwhelmed, thunderſtruck. He deplored his misfortune and his imprudence. He laid aſide the deference, the reſpect which he had till then expreſſed for the Grand-dutcheſs, and he forbade Poniatowſky her preſence. He afterwards haſtened to the Empreſs, from whom he demanded vengeance for the inſult he had received. He told her at the ſame time, that the chancellor had not only encouraged the irregularities of the Grand-

dutcheſs,

dutcheſs, but had likewiſe frequently betrayed even the confidence of his aunt herſelf. He finally made her acquainted with the order ſent by this miniſter to Field-mareſchal Apraxin, to make him evacuate Pruſſia.

The Empreſs, touched with the grief of her nephew, and indignant at the perfidy of Beſtuſcheff, gave immediate orders for his arreſt. The chancellor was at the ſame time deprived of his place, judged, declared guilty of high-treaſon, and condemned to loſe his head; but Elizabeth contented herſelf with baniſhing him to Goretowo. Thus paſſed in an inſtant from power to ſlavery, the man whoſe word alone cauſed Ruſſia to tremble, and who had an influence over the deſtiny of a conſiderable part of Europe.

Count Michaël Woronzoff ſucceeded Beſtuſcheff in the office of Grand-chancellor.

The Grand-dutcheſs, to whom the reſentment of her huſband ſeemed to preſage the moſt dreadful conſequences, beheld herſelf immediately in a ſtate of total neglect. The courtiers who had been her greateſt flatterers were the firſt to abandon her. She was ſenſible how imprudent ſhe had been, but did not loſe courage. Wiſhing to employ that eloquence which had formerly ſucceeded ſo well with the Empreſs, ſhe demanded an audience of this Princeſs: Elizabeth refuſed her. Catharine then thought it her duty to make application to the French ambaſſador, becauſe, both on account of his ſituation and from his perſonal merit, this miniſter enjoyed high favour. She conjured him to intercede for her, and to repreſent to the Empreſs that ſhe was overwhelmed with her diſgrace, and that as ſhe had been ſo unfortunate as to diſpleaſe her, her repentance merited a pardon.

The ambaſſador laviſhed on this Princeſs all the conſolations and the counſels which his policy could ſuggeſt to him, but he did not conceive it his duty to take upon himſelf the charge of bringing about

a reconciliation which appeared to him very difficult, and which he deſpaired of effecting.

Catharine remained then for ſome time in this painful ſituation. She had to ſupport at the ſame time the hatred of the Grand-duke, the diſdain of the Empreſs, the inſulting dereliction of a court which ſome days before haſtened to cringe at her feet, and, what afflicted her ſtill more, the apprehenſion of loſing Poniatowſky for ever.

Poniatowſky was not leſs tormented than her. The court of Warſaw had juſt recalled him, and he could not reſolve on quitting Ruſſia. Feigning indiſpoſition, he kept himſelf during the day concealed in his hotel, and at night ſtole myſteriouſly to the Grand-dutcheſs. But numerous ſpies obſerved this pair: their interviews were diſcovered, and care was taken to render an account of them to the Empreſs.

Upon the return of the ſummer ſeaſon, the difficulties of meeting each other ſtill increaſed. The Grand-dutcheſs was under a neceſſity of following her huſband to Oranienbaum, and Poniatowſky was obliged to employ every ſpecies of diſguiſe in order to penetrate into this caſtle. One night that he had been at conſiderable pains to conceal his ribbon of the White Eagle, he was walking in an alley of the park where Catharine had given him the meeting; he was recognized by a ſervant, who ran to give this information to the Grand-duke. The Prince, wiſhing to avenge himſelf on Poniatowſky, immediately ordered the ſtouteſt of his Ruſſian officers to be ſummoned, and, after having given one of them the ſignal by which to diſtinguiſh the Poloneſe, he ordered him to go and ſurpriſe him in the park, and to bring him, either by fair means or by force, to the corps-de-garde.

The Ruſſian immediately ſet out, joined the man who had been pointed out to him, and demanded who he was, and what he wanted? Poniatowſky replied,

plied that he was a German taylor, and that he had come to Oranienbaum to take meaſure of a Holſteineſe officer for a coat. "I have orders to conduct "you to the corps-de-garde," ſaid the Ruſſian to him. "I cannot conſent to this; I have not ſuffi-"cient time," replied the Poloneſe.—"Oh! whether "thou haſt time or not, thou muſt follow me;" replied the Ruſſian: and throwing a handkerchief over his neck, in which he had made a ſlip-knot, he dragged him to the fort.

As ſoon as the Grand-duke was ſure of the arreſt of Poniatowſky, he aſſembled a council of war, and inſiſted that the Poloneſe ſhould be condemned to the gallows, for having intruded clandeſtinely within the limits of his fortifications. General Tottleben, whom the Empreſs had placed about him in order to watch his conduct, pretended to applaud this reſolution; but he obſerved, that as Poniatowſky was inveſted with the character of a foreign miniſter this ſentence could not be executed till after they had obtained the approbation of the Empreſs. A courier was immediately diſpatched to Peterſburgh. Kratſchinſky attached to Poniatowſky, by the ties of friendſhip, and by the title of gentleman of the embaſſy, and lover of the Counteſs of Romanzoff, employed this laſt with Elizabeth, whoſe confidant ſhe was, to prevail on her to reſtore the Poliſh miniſter to liberty. During this time ſome courtiers of the Grand-duke had, at the inſtigation of Catharine, tempted the avarice of the Prince's miſtreſs; and through the medium of a ſum of money, this young woman had perſuaded her lover to releaſe Poniatowſky.

Poniatowſky was then conducted into the preſence of the Grand-duke, as if the Prince had been ſtill ignorant who his priſoner was. He aſſumed even the air of being hurt that he had been treated with ſo much indignity on his account, and ſcolded the officer who arreſted him; but he afterwards amuſed himſelf greatly with this adventure, and took pleaſure

above

above all things to relate it in the preſence of the Grand-dutcheſs.

It was a ſhort time before this, that, whether yielding to an involuntary inclination, or whether he wiſhed to indemnify himſelf for the infidelities of his wife, the Grand-duke had choſen for a miſtreſs, one of the daughters of the ſenator Woronzoff, brother of the new chancellor. Theſe ladies were three ſiſters; the eldeſt of whom, Madam de Boutourlin, paſſed with reaſon for one of the moſt beautiful and moſt coquettiſh women in Ruſſia. The youngeſt, who has ſince performed ſo courageous a part under the name of the Princeſs D'Aſchkoff, was not very handſome, but lively and very intelligent. As to the third, Elizabeth Romanowna Woronzoff, to whom the Grand-duke gave the title of Counteſs, and of whom he was ſo paſſionately enamoured, ſhe poſſeſſed neither wit, grace, nor beauty. Her complaiſance ſeduced him, her caprices amuſed him, and the habit of living with her became very ſoon to him an imperious neceſſity. The ſenator Woronzoff, a mean and ambitious courtier, proſtituted his daughter to the Prince in the baſeſt manner.

Mareſchal Apraxin was deprived of the command, ſent priſoner to Narva, and tried by a council of war, which had predetermined not to bring him in guilty.

General Fermer, who ſucceeded Apraxin, took poſſeſſion of Kœnigſberg, impoſed heavy contributions, went to lay ſiege to Kuſtrin, beat a Pruſſian army, flew to the ſuccour of this place, and entered in triumph into the city. After ſo fortunate a campaign, Fermer knowing the attachment of the Grand-duke to the Pruſſians, and apprehending that this Prince might one day puniſh him for his victories, made the ſtate of his health a pretext for demanding permiſſion to retire.

Soltikoff ſucceeded to Fermer, and obtained a ſeries of ſucceſſes no leſs brilliant. He conquered ſucceſſively,

ceſſively, the Pruſſians, near Croſſen and Franckfort-upon-the-Oder, and made himſelf maſter of theſe two cities. At Franckfort the Ruſſians were joined by the Auſtrian army, commanded by Generals Laudohn and Haddick. Frederick, who had in vain exhauſted all his talents and his activity to prevent this junction, attacked the Ruſſians at Kunerſdorff. But his military ſkill, his exertions, and the valour of his troops, were ſtill unavailing; he beheld victory torn from him. The battle of Kunerſdorff was one of the moſt bloody of that war, as two and thirty thouſand men loſt their lives in it. The Ruſſians took ſeven thouſand priſoners, and carried off ſix-and-twenty pair of colours, a hundred and ſixty pieces of cannon, and a great part of the ammunition and baggage of the Pruſſian army. It ſeemed as if all the Ruſſian generals had an invincible aſcendant over Frederick. However, this monarch had the advantage, not only of knowing their orders, and their plans of the campaign, which the Grand-duke tranſmitted to him by means of the ſecretary of ſtate, Voſkoff, but likewiſe that of being frequently guided by them.

A. D. 1759. General Soltikoff, reſtrained without doubt by the ſame motives which influenced his two predeceſſors, appeared to diſdain attempting any new victories, and remained in a ſtate of inaction till the cloſe of the campaign.

A. D. 1760. The following year, the Ruſſian general, Tottleben, ſeconded by the Auſtrian general, Laſcy, took poſſeſſion of Berlin, made the garriſon priſoners of war, laid the inhabitants under contribution, and permitted his ſoldiers to carry off the pictures, and to mutilate a part of the beautiful ſtatues of the gallery of Charlottenburgh.

A. D. 1761. The courtiers, envious of the glory of Soltikoff, the Grand-duke and the ambaſſador of England, Keith, provoked at thoſe talents which were oppoſed to Frederick, the miniſters of Auſtria and

and of France; more diſcontented ſtill, that he had not done every thing which he might have done; all parties, in a word, conſpired to form a cabal againſt this general, and cauſed him to be ſuperſeded by the Mareſchal Boutourlin.

However, the Empreſs Elizabeth had totally loſt her health, and the neceſſity of taking ſome repoſe, added to her natural indolence, made her more than ever neglectful of buſineſs. Scarcely could the new Grand-chancellor Woronzoff prevail on her to give her ſignature; ſhe only found reſolution to abandon herſelf to pleaſure. Banquets, balls, maſquerades, ſtill occupied her attention. She went to the play at eleven in the evening, paſſed the reſt of the night at table, and went to bed at five in the morning. The moſt important affairs appeared to her only as mere trifles. Informed of her nephew's attachment to the young Woronzoff, to whom ſhe preſently gave the nickname of Pompadour, ſhe took pleaſure in making her repeat the moſt minute details of their orgies, and ſeemed to ſeek in them an apology for her own weakneſſes; but did not the leſs diſplay to the Prince an indifferent and frequently a repulſive countenance.

The Grand-dutcheſs, who awaited with impatience the moment which was to reconcile the Empreſs to her, thought it her duty, after a pretty long ſilence, to renew her attempts. She demanded pardon, but it could not be granted, except on conditions which ſhocked her. A propoſal was made to her to acknowledge herſelf guilty, and to throw herſelf on the clemency of her huſband and of the Empreſs

Catharine upon this recovered all her haughtineſs. She avoided making her appearance at court, kept herſelf ſhut up in her apartments, and aſked permiſſion of the Empreſs to retire into Germany, a permiſſion which ſhe was very certain would not be granted, ſince knowing the extreme tenderneſs of Elizabeth for the young Paul Petrowitz, ſhe had no

reaſon

reaſon to apprehend that this Princeſs would conſent to remove the mother of a child whom ſhe would by that expoſe to the hazard of being one day declared a baſtard. This project of Catharine's procured the wiſhed-for ſucceſs: an accommodation followed it immediately. At the very moment when ſhe was thought to be completely ruined, and to the great aſtoniſhment of all the courtiers, ſhe made her appearance at the play by the ſide of the Empreſs; who laviſhed careſſes on her.

It is true, that in the ſecret converſation which the Grand-dutcheſs had with Elizabeth, ſhe promiſed not to ſee Poniatowſky any more, and from this moment in reality ſhe infuſed a much greater portion of reſerve into her conduct. Poniatowſky demanded almoſt immediately his audience of leave. But, as ambition ſtill more than love attached him to Catharine, and as he was willing to neglect nothing that might kindle ſtill farther a flame, which ſince then procured him the throne of Poland, he found new pretexts to protract ſtill longer his ſtay in Ruſſia.

The cabal formed by Beſtuſcheff had not been quaſhed by the diſgrace of that miniſter, and the enemies of the Grand-duke continued on every occaſion to injure him in the good opinion of his aunt. They above all took advantage of the indiſpoſition of this Princeſs, to perſuade her that the Grand-duke was rejoiced at the ſituation in which ſhe was, and expreſſed the utmoſt impatience to enjoy his inheritance. The Empreſs, already too much exaſperated againſt her nephew, was cruelly wounded by this report. In the firſt emotions of her anger, a menace eſcaped her of depriving him of the throne. Some people imagined from this, that ſhe would give the inheritance to Prince Ivan, whom ſhe had dethroned twenty years before, and who languiſhed in a dungeon. Others thought with greater reaſon that ſhe had a deſign of putting Paul Petrowitz in her place. A few days afterwards, at a time when the Grand-

duke

duke was at Oranienbaum, ſhe gave orders, all at once, that an exhibition ſhould be prepared, and contrary to her general cuſtom, ſhe neither invited to it the foreign miniſters, nor her courtiers. The Grand-dutcheſs, her ſon, and the moſt intimate favourites alone accompanied her. Scarcely had ſhe entered into her box when ſhe complained on beholding ſo few ſpectators, and ſaid that the ſoldiers of her guard muſt be called in. On a ſudden the theatre was filled with them. Then taking in her arms the young Paul Petrowitz, ſhe preſented him to theſe ancient warriors to whom ſhe was indebted for the throne; and commending the graces, the intereſting phyſiognomy, the dawning qualities of the heart and mind of the child, ſhe appeared to demand for him the ſame good will from them which they had manifeſted towards herſelf. The ſoldiers replied by ſhouts of applauſe. Had Elizabeth explained herſelf any farther, the Grand-duke would have been for ever excluded from the throne; but, notwithſtanding the enthuſiaſm of her guards, that Princeſs ſtopped ſhort. Perhaps ſhe thought it was neceſſary for her to know their diſpoſitions, in order that ſhe might execute her project with greater precaution and ſolemnity; perhaps, likewiſe, it was only her intention to intimidate the Grand-duke.

The news of this ſcene very ſoon ſpread abroad, and engaged the attention of many of the courtiers. A lying report was then revived, without doubt deſtitute of all foundation, but which was ſecretly given credit to at the birth of Paul Petrowitz. It was pretended that the Empreſs Elizabeth had gained over the nurſe of the Grand-dutcheſs's child, and had cauſed her to ſubſtitute in his place a ſon whom ſhe had had by Razoumoffsky.

However, whatever might be the deſigns of the Empreſs Elizabeth, death did not allow her ſufficient time to accompliſh them. A few days after what ſhe had done at the theatre in favour of the young Prince,

ſhe

ſhe felt her health ſenſibly decline. She ſuffered violent pains in her bowels which nothing could alleviate; and to diſtract her attention, ſhe drank to greater exceſs than ever. In vain her phyſicians repreſented to her that ſhe herſelf would ſhorten her days. In vain did the people who attended her endeavour to keep ſtrong liquors from her; ſhe would conſtantly have in her chamber a cheſt, the key of which ſhe kept under her bolſter. It was evident, now, that her end muſt be infallibly approaching. The intriguing part of the court became reanimated, and divided themſelves into two parties extremely oppoſite.

The firſt was formed of the remainder of the friends of Beſtuſcheff, who always caballed in favour of the Grand-dutcheſs, and of whom, after the exile of the Grand-chancellor, Count Ivan-Ivanowitſch-Schouwaloff was declared the chief, although he was in reality but the inſtrument. Schouwaloff, whoſe avarice cauſed the Ruſſian merchants to tremble, and whoſe inſolent knavery filled the Grand-duke with indignation, Schouwaloff perceived very diſtinctly that his power and good fortune were in great danger of terminating with the life of Elizabeth, and ſaw no other means of eſcaping the vengeance of the Prince, than by barring his acceſs to the throne. Guided by a man more bold than himſelf, according to the plan traced almoſt twenty years before by Beſtuſcheff, and ſupporting himſelf by the well-known intentions of the Empreſs, he gave conſent that the Grand-duke ſhould be elected ſovereign of Ruſſia, but wiſhed that the regency ſhould be conferred on the Grand-dutcheſs, under the authority of a council, of which he modeſtly reſerved to himſelf the place of one of the principal members.

Although ſecretly irritated to ſee what Ivan Schouwaloff deſigned for himſelf in this partition, the Grand-dutcheſs ſeconded, with all her efforts, the project of this favourite. She was animated by a double

double motive, fear and ambition. But the more ſhe deſired to obtain the ſupreme power, the more ſhe concealed this deſire. In the eyes of thoſe who approached her but ſeldom, ſhe concealed her plans under an apparent indifference, and inceſſantly repeated to her moſt intimate confidants, "that ſhe "preferred the title of mother to the Emperor, to "that of his conſort." On the other hand, ſhe could not but be ſenſible that ſince her infidelities were known to the Grand-duke, ſhe had every thing to dread from that Prince. He made no ſecret of his hatred for her, and had frequently given her manifeſt proofs of it.

The ſecond party which divided the court, and ſupported the rights which the Grand-duke had to the throne, was conducted by the ſenator Woronzoff, brother of the new Grand-chancellor. This man was at the ſame time the moſt ambitious and the meaneſt man in all Ruſſia. He poſſeſſed wit and courage, but he employed his wit only in contriving the means of intrigue, and his courage in braving contempt. His daughter was publicly the miſtreſs of the Grand-duke; and the ſenator who, as has been already ſaid, had himſelf prepared, nay formed this connection, neglected nothing which could render the tie ſtill firmer. The acceſs which he had to the Grand-duke furniſhed him with frequent occaſions of irritating him ſtill further againſt the Grand-dutcheſs, and of converſing with him reſpecting what he ſhould do on his acceſſion to the throne. He got ſuch complete poſſeſſion of his confidence, that this Prince reſolved on nothing without firſt conſulting him, or without advertiſing him of it through the medium of his daughter. Finally, in compliance with the inſtigations of Woronzoff, and of ſome other courtiers devoted to this ſenator, the Grand-duke reſolved to aſſemble the troops at the moment when the Empreſs's eyes ſhould be cloſed, to cauſe himſelf to be proclaimed Emperor, to repudiate the Grand-dutcheſs,

to

to declare the young Paul Petrowitz a baſtard, and publicly to eſpouſe his miſtreſs Romanowna Woronzoff.

Every thing ſeemed to enſure the ſucceſs of this enterpriſe! The Grand-duke, it is true, did not give ſatisfaction to his courtiers, but he was ſtill reſpected by the people who beheld in him the deſcendant of Peter I. Woronzoff had, beſides, a far greater portion of addreſs than Schouwaloff, and he was well aſſured that England would furniſh him with conſiderable ſupplies.

In the midſt of conſpiracies, of intrigues, of the continual agitations with which the two parties filled the court of the dying Empreſs, and which rendered them every moment greater enemies to each other, appeared all at once a man who undertook to quell every animoſity, and to effect an union of opinions. This man was the Count Nikita Ivanowitz Panin, who, ſince then, occupied for ſo long a time the place of prime miniſter to Catharine, and who then returned from Stockholm, where he had for a long time reſided.

The Count Panin was not of very illuſtrious birth. He commenced his career by being a ſoldier in the horſe-guards of the Empreſs Elizabeth. The protection of Prince Kourakin made him afterwards groom of the chamber. Soon afterwards the Empreſs obſerved him, and thought he could miniſter to her ſecret pleaſures, but her expectations were diſappointed. Panin was poſſeſſed merely of a figure. Elizabeth then ſent him to Copenhagen, and afterwards to Sweden, with the title of her miniſter plenipotentiary. On his return from Stockholm, he was nominated governor to Prince Paul Petrowitz. Panin had received but very little inſtruction; he was one of thoſe middling geniuſes who imagine that what they know, or what they think, is always the beſt. His reſidence in Sweden had made him believe that an ariſtocratical conſtitution and a ſenate, were the maſter-piece of

governments. He adhered obſtinately to his opinions. He was beſides indolent, incorrect, and greatly addicted to ſlander and goſſiping.

In accepting the place of governor to the young Prince, he was obliged to take the ſide either of the Grand-duke, or of the Grand-dutcheſs. Panin did not heſitate. He devoted himſelf entirely to Catharine. Admitted into her confidence, and acquainted with the deſign which ſhe had formed to carry off the ſceptre from her huſband, he eaſily perceived all the danger to which ſhe would expoſe herſelf. He was ſenſible that ſhe might miſcarry; and that then ſhe would inſtantly behold herſelf driven from the throne and from the bed of the Emperor, and that her ſon would ſhare in her diſgrace. It was this laſt misfortune which the governor moſt apprehended.

He at firſt believed, that in order to avoid this, it was neceſſary to perſuade the two oppoſite parties to abandon their exaggerated pretenſions, and he flattered himſelf the only way to obtain their conſent to this ſurrender, was to play off their mutual fears. He reſolved then to make them unanimous in placing the Grand-duke upon the throne, and in cauſing him to be proclaimed Emperor, not by the troops, but by the ſenate, which would limit at the ſame time the power of this Prince, and ſecure the ſituation of his conſort and ſon.

This project once conceived, Panin employed himſelf ſeriouſly reſpecting the means of putting it in execution. Ambition changed on a ſudden, and for a moment, his character. Activity ſucceeded to his uſual indolence; to his uſual talkativeneſs, ſilence. He was even miſtruſtful of the Grand-dutcheſs herſelf, and did not admit her into his ſecret. He went farther; he affected to withdraw from her ſight, and pretended to abandon her party; but when he thought himſelf pretty certain that no ſuſpicion was entertained of his intentions, he paid a myſterious viſit to Count Ivan Schouwaloff.

Ivan-

Ivan Schouwaloff abandoned himſelf to the moſt lively uneaſineſs. He wept, he trembled to behold himſelf the chief of a party, and to ſee attributed to him the dangerous honour of a project conceived by his ambitious couſin, Peter Schouwaloff, who, confined at this period to his bed, by a diſeaſe of which he died ſhortly after, could not ſupport the audacity with which he had for ſome time inſpired the ſelf-important and puſillanimous favourite of Elizabeth.

This circumſtance was favourable to Panin. He took advantage of it. He perfectly well underſtood how to augment the apprehenſions of Ivan Schouwaloff, by exaggerating to him the perils to which he would expoſe himſelf. "How dare you," ſaid he to him, "oppoſe unequal forces to the Grand-duke, "and prepare for yourſelf a dreadful fall, a certain "death, by attempting to exclude from the throne a "Prince, whom the choice of the ſovereign calls "thither, and whoſe birth renders him the ſole legi-"timate heir of it? But even ſuppoſing you ſhould "ſucceed in your attempts to prevent his acceſſion, "can you hope for any length of time to preſerve "your credit, under a minority, the weakneſs of "which will embolden your rivals, and give riſe to "a croud of malecontents, who will inceſſantly uſe "their endeavours to injure you? If you triumph "over one intrigué, can you flatter yourſelf that you "ſhall be equally fortunate in eſcaping another; if "the firſt blow levelled at you does not hit its mark, "may not the ſecond overwhelm you? The moſt "prudent ſtep which you can take is, to join your-"ſelf to the Grand-duke. There is ſtill time. He "himſelf knows the obſtacles which are preparing for "him, and he will think himſelf but too happy, if at "the price of a ſlight ſacrifice, he has nothing more "to apprehend. Leave him, then, the tranquil poſ-"ſeſſion of the throne, but let us make him purchaſe "it on conditions which may diſſipate at this mo-"ment our terrors, and for ever prevent the Prince

" from abuſing his power. It is of no conſequence " at preſent to tell you what theſe conditions are; " but if you pay deference to my advice, I have no " doubt that the Grand-duke will eaſily arrange " matters, and I promiſe to furniſh you with a plan " calculated to conciliate all parties."

Ivan Schouwaloff did not reply a ſingle word; but convinced of the wiſdom of the counſels of Panin, he went to his couſin Peter, and imparted to him what he had juſt heard. Diſeaſe had weakened the courage of Peter Schouwaloff, and diminiſhed the ſoaring of his ambition. He eaſily allowed himſelf to be perſuaded of every thing which Ivan apprehended; nevertheleſs, in renouncing his project, he wiſhed ſtill to reſerve the principal part to himſelf.

He ſent word to the Grand-duke, that having ſome important ſecrets to communicate to him, and his condition putting it out of his power to quit his bed, he entreated he would honour him with a viſit. The Prince came immediately. Peter Schouwaloff addreſſed him with the force and the air of inſpiration of a man, who, drawing towards his laſt moments, wiſhes not to conceal the truth, and has nothing more to dread. " Prince," ſaid he to him, " you know " the prejudices which are entertained againſt you. " The people believe that you are more inclined to- " wards the Germans than towards them; the pre- " lates are afraid of you; the nobles hate you. Every " thing announces to you a turbulent reign. Every " thing proves to you, that in order to prevent the " revolutions, of which you are ſuppoſed to have " formed the deſign, they will proceed to the laſt " extremities. I am ignorant, Prince, of what you " meditate in reality; I know not whether you will " triumph over thoſe who wiſh to ruin you, or whe- " ther they are to triumph over you: but if you do " what it is believed you intend, if you repudiate the " Grand-dutcheſs to elevate to her ſituation, a wo-

" man

" man ſo vilely contemptible as the Counteſs of Wo-
" ronzoff, reflect that you will prepare for yourſelf
" commotions, of which you will ſoon or late be-
" come the victim, and that you will diſgrace your-
" ſelf for ever."

As he liſtened to this diſcourſe, the Grand-duke became pale and red ſeveral times; and when he perceived that Peter Schouwaloff had done ſpeaking, he aſſured him, that the deſign of annulling his marriage had been wrongfully imputed to him, and that he had never determined upon it. But what gives us room to doubt the ſincerity of his proteſtations is, that the Prince ſubjoined theſe remarkable words: " Romanowna gives credit, perhaps, to the reports " which flatter her; ſhe is a giddy girl whom I have " promiſed to marry in caſe of the death of the Grand-" dutcheſs, and ſhe is not yet dead."

Peter Schouwaloff was too ſincerely deſirous of a reconciliation with the Grand-duke, to give to this laſt declaration all the interpretation of which it was ſuſceptible; and contented himſelf with the promiſe which the Prince had made him, to obliterate from his mind all thoſe daring attempts which had been made againſt him.

This reconciliation was accompliſhed without difficulty, but there ſtill remained another not leſs intereſting, and much more difficult to obtain. It is well known with what odious ſuſpicions the enemies of the Grand-duke had inſpired the Empreſs. That Princeſs was in terror leſt her nephew ſhould employ poiſon in order to get himſelf rid of her, and this terror augmented her weakneſs, and filled her with abhorrence for him who was the object of it. Since the time that her diſeaſe prevented her appearance in public, ſhe had ordered the Grand-duke to be forbidden her apartment; and that this order might appear the leſs extraordinary, the ſame command had been given reſpecting the Grand-dutcheſs. The ſecret of theſe diviſions, of theſe diſturbances in the imperial

family, had been ſtill confined to the interior of the palace; but it might eaſily have ſpread abroad in Peterſburgh; and had it been known that the Empreſs died without ſeeing the Prince and his wife, the people, always blindly credulous, would have regarded the unjuſt ſuſpicions of Elizabeth as having ſome foundation, and would have been eager to attribute to the nephew the death of the aunt. It was therefore neceſſary to perſuade this Princeſs to invite the Grand-duke to viſit her.

Ivan Schouwaloff was grand-chamberlain and governor of the Empreſs's houſhold. Panin thought he was a fit perſon to demand the reconciliation which he deſired; but whether it was that Schouwaloff was afraid of giving too much trouble to the feeble Elizabeth, or whether he wiſhed to keep the Grand-duke for ſome time longer in a ſtate of inquietude, and to avoid an eclairciſſement dangerous to all thoſe who had endeavoured to malign this Prince; whether, in a word, he reckoned upon the forged will, which there was a propoſal to bring forward, he refuſed to make this requeſt.

Panin then made application to the confeſſor of Elizabeth. He frankly acknowledged to him, that the commiſſion with which he charged him was a very delicate one, and that in endeavouring to ſave the ſoul of the ſovereign, he might perhaps incur her diſpleaſure; but that the glory which his ſucceſs would merit, ought to be an incitement to brave every danger. He aſſured him at the ſame time of the gratitude of the Grand-duke and the Grand-dutcheſs. The papa, not leſs ambitious, without doubt, of gaining the favour of the heir of the throne, than zealous for the ſalvation of the Empreſs, promiſed to employ all his holy eloquence with her.

Every neceſſary precaution was taken. A moment was choſen, at which Ivan Schouwaloff was abſent, and then the confeſſor, approaching the bed of the Empreſs, ſpoke to her of God, of juſtice, of clemency,

mency, and obtained from her a ſign of conſent. At the ſame inſtant the Grand-duke and Grand dutcheſs were introduced, who placed themſelves on their knees by the bed-ſide, and Elizabeth pronounced mechanically all that her confeſſor dictated to her. She ſaid to the Prince and the Princeſs, "That ſhe had always loved them, and that ſhe expired in wiſhing them every ſort of bleſſing."

All who were witneſſes of this ſcene, perceived that the pardon was not very ſincere; but appearances were ſufficient for the Prince, and his partiſans did not fail to repeat in Peterſburgh, with peculiar emphaſis, the affectionate words pronounced by the Empreſs, and to embelliſh them with a great many falſehoods.

On the other hand, Ivan Schouwaloff, who had not underſtood how to make a merit to himſelf of the reconciliation of the Grand-duke, but who did not wiſh that it ſhould furniſh an occaſion of irritating this Prince, was careful not to contradict any thing which they thought proper to publiſh on the ſubject.

Proud of the important ſervice which he had juſt rendered the Grand-duke, Panin thought that he had acquired ſufficient rights to induce him to conſent to follow implicitly the plan which he had traced out. According to this plan, the Grand-duke, as ſoon as the Empreſs had ceaſed to breathe, was to go to the ſenate, and, by a decree of that aſſembly, take poſſeſſion of the crown.

Panin accordingly demanded an audience of the Grand-duke. It was immediately granted. He firſt informed the Prince, that what he was going to lay before him merited his utmoſt attention. After this he addreſſed him in theſe terms:—"It is on the "firſt ſtep which you take upon aſcending the throne, "Prince, that the ſucceſs of your reign, and the glory "which you will merit, neceſſarily depend. There "are two modes of clothing yourſelf with the ſu-

" preme power. One is to cauſe yourſelf to be pro-
" claimed Emperor by the army; the other, to re-
" ceive the crown from the hands of the ſenate. The
" firſt is the moſt expeditious; the ſecond the moſt
" ſecure. All Europe, and a great part of Aſia, have
" their eyes fixed upon you. Reflect then on the
" honour which you will acquire, if the numerous
" nations ſubject to your domination, and foreign
" nations themſelves, behold that you are generous
" enough to condeſcend to acquire from the free
" choice of the repreſentatives of the Ruſſian nation,
" an authority for which your predeceſſors have been
" indebted to force merely, and to the venality of
" ſoldiers.

" You know how frequent revolutions have been
" in this empire; you know with what facility ſe-
" duced or mutinous troops have crowned or de-
" throned their ſovereigns. The method which I
" propoſe to you is the only one calculated to pre-
" vent dangerous deſigns. The ſenate having elect-
" ed you, will find itſelf intereſted to ſupport that
" choice, and the people, regarding your perſon as
" more ſacred, will always be eager to defend it."

The Grand-duke was ſtaggered, he was going to comply, when all at once two of his courtiers entered. He imparted to them the project of Panin, and requeſted their advice. One of them, who clearly diſcerned the treachery lurking under the plan propoſed to the Prince, counſelled him to ſubmit his deciſion to the aged Prince Troubetſkoï, whoſe long experience and conſummate wiſdom were worthy of directing him. Prince Troubetſkoï had indeed been the witneſs, and a co-operator in ſeveral revolutions, and was perfectly well acquainted with the uſages of Ruſſia.

He was immediately ſummoned. The Grand-duke repeated to him all that he had juſt heard from the mouth of Panin, and did not conceal the inclination which he felt to follow the advice of the count. But

Trou-

Troubetſkoï declared himſelf of a different opinion and ſpoke with all the boldneſs of an old warrior zealous for the honour of his rulers.

"Prince," ſaid he to him, "the plan which it is "wiſhed you ſhould adopt, is not only far more dan- "gerous than that which you have been taught to "fear, but entirely contrary to the cuſtoms of the "empire. The Ruſſian conſtitution is purely mili- "tary, and the ſenate never ought to have any in- "fluence in the election of the Czars. And what "then is the pretended glory which is to be derived "from being crowned by a judiciary corps rather "than by victorious ſoldiers? Choſen by a diet or by "a ſenate, can the kings of Poland and of Sweden "ever pretend to vie with the Emperor of all the "Ruſſias? In truth, the only glory of a monarch is "to reign well. Deſerve then that glory, without "diſturbing yourſelf with a vain formality, and with- "out putting yourſelf under the control of an am- "bitious ſenate, which would very ſoon make you "repent the confidence you had in it. But if, un- "fortunately, your throne ſhould totter, would this "ſenate have ſufficient ſtrength to re-eſtabliſh it? "And ſhould you commence by giving umbrage to "the ſoldiers, by deſpiſing their ancient uſage, muſt "you not ſooner or later have reaſon to dread their "vengeance?"

The Grand-duke now fluctuated in irreſolution. The brilliant novelty of the counſels of Panin flattered him, but the dread of offending the army prevented him from daring to follow them. Not knowing, in a word, which plan to adopt, he ſent one of his chamberlains to conſult the Grand-dutcheſs.

Catharine, whoſe whole ambition had been awakened by the approaching end of Elizabeth, and who felt the neceſſity of gaining the public eſteem by the appearance of a piety which did not exiſt in her heart, ſhe at that time attended the churches, and joined in the public prayers which were put up for the

the re-eſtabliſhment of the health of the Empreſs. Panin had the imprudent diſcretion to keep his project a ſecret from her. She was ignorant that this project contained any thing to her advantage. Beſides, ſhe had paſſed ſeveral days in compoſing herſelf the act of proclamation which ſhould acknowledge the Emperor, as well as the model of the oath to be adminiſtered to the troops; and as ſhe valued herſelf on writing with conſiderable elegance, and flattered her vanity in thinking that theſe two pieces would do her infinite honour in the eyes of the Ruſſians, ſhe was unwilling to ſacrifice a labour which muſt have been loſt had the Prince been elected by the ſenate, as this body would itſelf have dictated the new form of the oath and the new act of proclamation. She therefore ſent this haſty reply to the Grand-duke, "that he muſt conform to the eſtabliſhed cuſtom."

A. D. 1762. At the ſame moment that the Grand-duke received this anſwer, the death of the Empreſs Elizabeth was announced to him. That Princeſs expired after a long illneſs, and in the midſt of excruciating torments. She had reigned twenty years, without having performed one act which could juſtify the revolution that placed on her head the crown of Ruſſia. Her eaſineſs of temper put her under the control of favourites, who too much abuſed their power. Her devotion rendered her frequently impious: her clemency, cruel. She was, in a word, better fitted to vegetate in the indolence of a convent, than to ſit on the throne of one of the moſt extenſive empires in the world.



PETER III FEDOROWITZ

Became Emperor of Russia 5 January 1762,
was dethroned and strangled in July 1762.

Published Feb.ʳʸ 12.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

BOOK III.

Commencement of the Reign of Peter III.—He recals a great Number of Exiles, among whom Munich and Biren were conſpicuouſly diſtinguiſhed—Oukaſe in favour of the Nobility—Peace with Pruſſia—Peter's Admiration of Frederick II.—Miſunderſtanding between Peter III. and Catharine—Intrigues againſt that Prince——The Orloffs, Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, Panin, form the Project of dethroning him—He pays a Viſit to Ivan, confined as a Priſoner in the Fortreſs of Schluſſelburgh—The Deſign he entertained of naming that Prince his Succeſſor——Preparations againſt Denmark.

A. D. 1762. NO ſooner had Elizabeth cloſed her eyes than the courtiers reſorted in crouds to the apartments of the Grand-duke. That Prince, putting off for the moment his feeble and undecided character, welcomed them with dignity, and received the oath of the officers of his guard. An hour afterward he mounted on horſeback, and paraded through the ſtreets of Peterſburgh, ordering money to be liberally ſcattered among the populace. The ſoldiery preſſed forward as he paſſed, crying aloud: "If you are kind to us, we will ſerve you as faith-"fully as we have ſerved our good Empreſs." The people blended ſhouts of joy with the acclamations of the ſoldiers, and although the enemies of the Grand-duke had long uſed every effort to render him an object of averſion or of contempt, his acceſſion to the throne produced not the ſlighteſt ſymptom of diſaffection or diſcontent. As for himſelf, delivered on a ſudden from the tedious and ſervile ſtate of conſtraint in which his aunt had kept him, his deportment clearly announced the ſatisfaction which he felt, without

out any expreſſion of indecent joy. He aſſumed the name of Peter III.

The firſt days of his reign were marked with various traits of beneficence, which excited the utmoſt aſtoniſhment in all who knew him, and who believed only in his ill qualities. The metamorphoſis appeared to be inſtantaneous and complete; dignity and moderation ſupplied the place of ſtupidity and violence. The Grand-duke had been inconſiſtent, headſtrong, capricious: Peter III. approved himſelf juſt, patient, intelligent. He treated with extreme kindneſs all thoſe who had been attached to the Empreſs his aunt. He permitted almoſt all the great officers of ſtate to remain in their places. He pardoned his enemies. He raiſed to the rank of Field-mareſchal Peter Schouwaloff, who had long been bed-ridden, and who died ſoon after. He continued in the place of maſter of the buck-hounds Alexis-Gregoriewitz Razoumoffsky, the ancient favourite of Elizabeth. He accumulated favours on Ivan Schouwaloff himſelf, though he had frequently made a very improper uſe of his credit. Prince Schakowſkoï, procurator-general of the ſenate, againſt whom Peter had much ground of complaint, was the only perſon he turned out; but he exacted his reſignation ſimply, leaving him in poſſeſſion of his liberty and his eſtates. At the ſame time one of the name of Gleboff, who, of no higher rank than a common attorney, had been entruſted with the direction of the affairs of Holſtein, and had by his adminiſtration ſecured the affection of the Prince, was promoted to the place of Schakowſkoï. Gleboff, afterward, made a very ungrateful return for a mark ſo diſtinguiſhed of his maſter's confidence.

The Grand-dutcheſs, who could not reflect without terror on the moment which was to inveſt her huſband with ſupreme power, and who apprehended an immediate and ſignal exploſion of that reſentment which

which ſhe had too well deſerved, met with the moſt flattering reception from him, and every demonſtration of confidence. He ſeemed to have ſunk all recollection of the offences given him by that Princeſs in admiration of the aſcendant of her genius. He paſſed a great part of the day in her company; he converſed with her on the moſt friendly terms, and conſulted her on buſineſs of the moſt delicate nature. All the courtiers, ſurprized at the Emperor's conduct toward her, congratulated Catharine upon it; ſhe herſelf alone was not the dupe of theſe appearances, ſhe juſtly conjectured that Peter was incapable of holding the reins of government himſelf, and ſhe was not ſimple enough to believe that to proceed from goodneſs which was merely the effect of imbecility.

One of the firſt acts of the new ſovereign was to recal from exile that multitude of ſtate-priſoners with which the miſtruſt of Elizabeth and the jealouſy of her miniſters had peopled the deſerts of Siberia. Among thoſe victims of court-intrigue, the celebrated Biren made a diſtinguiſhed figure, a man who had long been the haughty lover and the barbarous miniſter of the Empreſs Anne. Peter III. ſatisfied himſelf with reſtoring him to liberty, but Catharine afterwards gave him back the dutchy of Courland. Biren, inſtructed in the ſchool of adverſity, lived henceforward the life of a philoſopher; and whether from fear or from policy, cheriſhed a people whom he had formerly oppreſſed.

Peter III. recalled likewiſe from Siberia Field-mareſchal Munich, now four-ſcore and two years old, who was met, as he approached the capital, by one of his ſons who was ſtill in life, and thirty-two of his grandſons or great-grandſons. This aged warrior appeared before the Emperor with his numerous family, and dreſſed in the ſame ſheep-ſkin which had ſerved him for clothing in the deſerts of Pelim: but the Prince immediately ordered him to be inveſted

veſted with the inſignia of the order of St. Andrew, and with his rank of Field-mareſchal, addreſſing him in theſe words; "I hope, that notwithſtanding your "advanced age, it may ſtill be in your power to ſerve "me." Munich replied: "As your Majeſty has "called me from darkneſs to light, and delivered me "from the depths of a cavern to place me at the foot "of the throne, you will ever find me ready to de-"vote my life to your ſervice. Neither a long exile, "nor the rigours of a Siberian climate, have been "able to extinguiſh the ardour which I formerly diſ-"played for the intereſt of Ruſſia, and for the glory "of its ſovereign." What a wonderful man was Munich! At the age of eighty-two years, after having paſſed more than twenty of them in the frozen regions of Siberia, he ſtill ſhewed himſelf what he had once been. At the head of armies, in the rage of the fierceſt battles, on the point of periſhing upon a ſcaffold, exiled into a deſert, invited back to court and loaded with honours, he ſteadily maintained his manly courage and a ſerenity which nothing could diſcompoſe.

Leſtoc, to whom Elizabeth had been indebted for her elevation to the throne, and whom ſhe had afterwards indolently ſacrificed to the jealouſy of Beſtuſcheff and to the avidity of ſome other courtiers, was likewiſe recalled by Peter III. and, by living ſince at Peterſburgh in a ſtate of mediocrity, has demonſtrated that the leſſons of adverſity were no more loſt upon him than on Biren and Munich.

Every day was marked by the arrival at Peterſburgh of ſome of the victims of the preceding reign, and their return furniſhed an affecting ſpectacle to the people, and a copious ſubject of benediction on the head of the Czar. The whole empire reſounded with the praiſes of its new ſovereign, and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the admiration, the tranſports of joy which were excited on his going in great ſtate to the ſenate, and reading in that aſſembly a declaration,

tion, by which he granted permiſſion to the nobility to carry or not to carry arms at pleaſure, and to travel beyond the limits of the Ruſſian empire, which had hitherto been ſtrictly prohibited. He at the ſame time enfranchiſed them from the ſervitude to which they had been ſubjected by his predeceſſors. The nobles, overwhelmed with gratitude, could think of nothing leſs than rearing a ſtatue of gold for him: but this enthuſiaſm was of ſhort duration.

A much more eſſential benefit which Ruſſia owed to Peter III. was the abolition of that inquiſition, of that tremendous committee which, under the denomination of *privy-chancery*, had been productive of ſo much miſchief under the reign of the ſuſpicious and timid Elizabeth. Alexis Michaëlowitz, the father of Peter I. had been the inſtitutor of this tyrannical tribunal, contrived for the trial, or rather for the condemnation, of all who were accuſed of high-treaſon, or were obnoxious to the Prince and his informers. The ſlighteſt ſuſpicion, the moſt abſurd charge was ſufficient to induce the privy-chancery to commit to priſon perſons of the moſt eſtimable character, and to deliver them over to tortures the moſt horrible: neither ſex nor age ſerved as a protection.

But it is neceſſary to explain how Peter III. came to promulgate theſe two declarations, dictated by a juſtice the moſt enlightened, and a confidence the moſt generous. A reaſon muſt be aſſigned why a mixture ſo extraordinary was obſervable in the conduct of this Prince, of foreſight and forgetfulneſs, of magnanimity and weakneſs. His defects, his vices were the miſerable and neceſſary effect of his education; his good actions proceeded from the noble ambition of conferring happineſs; but this ambition frequently ſtood in need of a ſtimulus.

The Czar entertained as his aid-de-camp general, and a firſt-rate favourite, a young Ukrainian of the name of Goudowitz, who has been mentioned above, and

and who alone of his numerous courtiers had a ſincere attachment to him. This Goudowitz it was who, at the moment Peter was preparing to ſtep into the throne, perſuaded him to follow the counſels of old Prince Troubetſkoï, inſtead of repoſing a blind confidence in thoſe of Panin; he too it was who ſuggeſted all thoſe meaſures ſo replete with wiſdom and dignity which ſignalized the firſt days of his maſter's reign. But the Emperor, beſet by the corrupters of his morals, ſpeedily relapſed into his habits of indolence, and abandoned himſelf more violently than ever to his accuſtomed revels. For five days together he had ſhut himſelf up with his miſtreſs and a few of his bottle companions, during which he was almoſt in a continual ſtate of intoxication; Goudowitz appeared in his preſence, and with a look of ſeverity thus addreſſed him:—"Czar, I clearly perceive that "you prefer to us the enemies of your glory. You "ſerve them with zeal; you wiſh to juſtify them "when they affirm, that you are more ambitious "of abandoning yourſelf to obſcure and degrading "pleaſures, than fit to govern the empire. Is it "thus you imitate your vigilant and laborious grand-"father, that Peter I. whom you have ſo often ſworn "to take as your model? Is it thus you perſevere in "the ſage and dignified conduct which, on your ac-"ceſſion to the throne, procured for you the love "and admiration of your people? But that love, and "that admiration, are already forgotten. They are "ſucceeded by murmuring and diſcontent. Peterſ-"burgh demands whether the Czar lives any longer "within her walls. The whole empire is filled with "apprehenſion of waiting in vain for laws which "might infuſe a new ſoul into it. The diſaffected "alone triumph, and yet a little while the intrigues, "the cabals which the firſt moments of your reign "had reduced to ſilence, are going to re-commence "with an audacity unknown before. Rouſe then, O "Czar! from your lethargy; delay not a moment

"to

"to ſhew yourſelf, and demonſtrate by ſome illuſ-
"trious act of virtue, that you are capable of realiz-
"ing the hopes which have been conceived concern-
"ing you."

Peter liſtened to this reprimand in aſtoniſhment mingled with ſhame, and when Goudowitz ceaſed from ſpeaking, demanded of him what he ought to do as an indemnification to the empire for the days he had juſt been waſting in debauchery. That inſtant Goudowitz preſented the two declarations intruſted to him for the purpoſe by the Grand-chancellor Woronzoff, the one of which re-eſtabliſhed the rights of the nobility, and the other aboliſhed the privy chancery. Peter took the papers without peruſing their contents, and, putting them under his arm, repaired to the ſenate to recite them.

All thoſe who received information of what the new declarations contained, felt a ſudden tranſition from diſcontent to joy, and actually believed that the Emperor's five days retirement had been dedicated to the framing of two ſalutary laws.

Peter likewiſe undertook to correct the numerous abuſes which had crept into the adminiſtration of juſtice, and to eſtabliſh forms of juriſprudence more prompt, and leſs favourable to chicane; but as an alteration of ſo much difficulty could not be accompliſhed in a ſingle day, it was neceſſary for him to begin with a thorough knowledge of the practice of the courts, and with keeping a watchful eye over their conduct. He went to the ſenate-houſe at an hour when no one expected him, and, finding it almoſt empty, ſent a ſummons to command the attendance of the members, and expreſſed with warmth, yet with dignity, how much he was hurt by their neglect.

Commerce, the arts, the ſciences, were equally objects of attention to the new Czar. In Ruſſia almoſt all the departments of adminiſtration are confided to a certain number of perſons who form the ſeveral

boards to which they give the title of colleges: thus they denominate one the college of admiralty, another the college of the receipt of cuſtoms, a third the college of agriculture. Peter frequently viſited thoſe boards; he took a part in their deliberations, he even challenged them in argument, and if he was incapable of throwing light on the ſubjects under diſcuſſion, he at leaſt animated them by his preſence and countenance. He ſeemed to have it at heart to bring back the people to his own way of thinking. This was no eaſy enterprize; for the people, prepoſſeſſed by their prieſts, knew that this Prince preferred Lutheraniſm to the religion of the Greek church, and Germans to Ruſſians. Nevertheleſs the Czar, attentive to the counſels of his friend, and zealous to imitate the example of the King of Pruſſia, made himſelf of eaſy acceſs to all who requeſted an audience, received their petitions, and made it his ſtudy to procure juſtice for them. His enemies themſelves could not refrain from giving their teſtimony to a popularity which recalled to memory, in certain reſpects, that of Peter I.

Early after his acceſſion, Peter invited the foreign miniſters to an audience, and received their compliments of congratulation with much dignity of deportment. This behaviour, noble, decent, in every particular contrary to the ideas which almoſt all had formed of this Prince, filled them with ſurprize; but what aſtoniſhed them ſtill more, at a ſplendid entertainment which he gave them, he was extremely reſerved in converſation, and drank temperately. In a word, natives and foreigners contended in expreſſions of admiration at a change which they could ſcarcely believe to be real. The court of Vienna itſelf for ſome time reckoned on the amicable diſpoſitions of the the new Czar. Maria-Thereſa flattered herſelf that the death of Elizabeth would not entirely diſturb the good underſtanding ſubſiſting between the two Imperial courts; but theſe hopes ſpeedily evaporated.

evaporated. Peter was incapable of diſſimulation, and of all the ſentiments he entertained that which he was leaſt able to diſguiſe was his attachment to the King of Pruſſia. He ſet at liberty the Pruſſian priſoners confined at Peterſburgh, and admitted them to his table. One of them whom he treated with peculiar diſtinction was the Count de Hordt, a Swediſh officer, who had entered into the ſervice of Frederick II. and whom Elizabeth kept for three years in a ſtate of exile. The Czar made this man his confidant, his boſom friend, and talked to him almoſt inceſſantly on his darling ſubject, the Pruſſian monarch.

He ſeldom invited to his court any of the foreign miniſters, except the Pruſſian envoy, and M. Keith the Britiſh ambaſſador, which rendered his coldneſs to others ſtill more diſguſting. Peter had long kept up an intimate correſpondence with Frederick; in his letters he addreſſed him under no other deſignation but that of his dear brother, or his worthy maſter: he called to his recollection that, previouſly to his own elevation to the rank of Grand-duke, he had the honour of holding a commiſſion in his Majeſty's ſervice, and he deſcended ſo far as to entreat the King to grant him a higher rank in his army. The Pruſſian monarch knew perfectly well how to avail himſelf dexterouſly of the Czar's friendſhip. He did not immediately grant the promotion which Peter had ſolicited, in order to excite in him a more ardent deſire to obtain it; but after a ſhort delay informed him by letter that he had raiſed him to the rank of Major-general, not in conſideration of his ſtation as a ſovereign prince, but entirely out of reſpect for his military talents. This pretended favour overwhelmed Peter with delight. His paſſion for the King of Pruſſia grew ſtronger and ſtronger. He had the portrait of that monarch hung up in his chamber, and celebrated this inauguration, and the glory acquired by obtaining a military degree from Berlin, by a mag-

nificent repaſt, in which he forgot the temperance he had for ſome time practiſed. If the infatuation of Peter, on the ſubject of the King of Pruſſia, had not been come to the height, it might have ſtood corrected by certain ſarcaſtic leſſons which he provoked from his own ſubjects. I ſhall quote only one inſtance.—"Do you know," ſaid he one day to the hetman Razoumoffsky, "Do you know that, before "I was Grand-duke, I had a lieutenancy in the ſer-"vice of the King of Pruſſia?"—"Very well!" replied the Koſſac, "your Majeſty may now repay the "compliment by making the King of Pruſſia field-"mareſchal."

The aſcendant which his Pruſſian Majeſty had acquired over the Czar not only gave umbrage to moſt of the courtiers, as well as to ſome of the foreign miniſters, but the changes he undertook to effect by no means met with general approbation. Nay ſome of thoſe changes created him a great number of enemies, and demonſtrated, that if he ſometimes had good intentions, he was deſtitute of the illumination, and eſpecially of the character, neceſſary to the government of a great empire. Amidſt projects the moſt happily conceived he frequently adopted ſome that were uſeleſs and even dangerous. The deſire of ameliorating the ſtate of things hurried him on imprudently to hazard premature reform.

It was undoubtedly juſt and beneficial to diminiſh the riches of the higher clergy, and to combat prejudice: but at the very commencement of a reign, againſt which inveterate prepoſſeſſion had been entertained, and that by a nation ſuperſtitious in the extreme, and more than half barbarian, was it wiſe to irritate a numerous claſs of men who, from their profeſſion, poſſeſſed ſuch a mighty influence over others? What neceſſity was there to remove from the churches the images of the ſaints, an object of ſuch profound veneration to Ruſſians? Where was the prudence of incenſing all the devotees of the empire

empire by ſending into baniſhment the archbiſhop of Novogorod, who thought it his duty to oppoſe that removal? No: this however Peter did; and ſoon found himſelf under the neceſſity of recalling the prelate; and by this new mark of weakneſs he gave freſh ſpirit to his enemies, without recovering the good will of the offended papas. Theſe monks diffuſed over the whole empire a belief that the Emperor had feigned to embrace the communion of the Greek church merely as a ſtep to the throne, but that he was a Lutheran in his heart, of which he gave daily proof, by affecting a rooted contempt for the uſages, the ceremonies, and the religion of Ruſſia.

It was recollected at the ſame time, that he had given orders to build a Lutheran church in his caſtle of Oranienbaum, at the dedication of which he had aſſiſted in perſon, by diſtributing with his own hand books of the Canticles to his Holſteineſe ſoldiers, whereas he had not deigned to enter the Greek church, conſtructed about nearly the ſame period. It was ſaid that he had farther outraged the ſaints, by chriſtening two of his ſhips of war recently built, the one by the name of his uncle, the *Prince George*, and the other by the name of the King of Pruſſia, the *Frederick*. It was repeated, in a word, that he never mentioned the Ruſſian nation but in terms of diſdain, and the Germans but in the language of reſpect. All theſe rumours, accordingly, artfully diſſeminated, ſpeedily alienated from this Prince the hearts which the firſt acts of his government had gained.

While others were ſo eaſily rendering him an object of ſuſpicion to the people, he himſelf likewiſe ſeemed determined to give diſguſt to the army. He uniformly gave the preference to the German over the Ruſſian ſoldiery. He diſbanded the noble guard which had formerly ſeated Elizabeth on the throne; he ſuperſeded the horſe guards in the duty they per-

formed at court, and ſubſtituted his own Holſteineſe guard in their room. He introduced the Pruſſian exerciſe, which was undoubtedly better than that to which they were accuſtomed, but it gave offence becauſe they were forced to learn it. He excited murmurs of diſaffection in the regiments Ismaïloffsky and Preobraginſky, by ordering part of them from the capital to march into Pomerania, and join the army deſtined againſt Denmark. He promoted his uncle, Prince George of Holſtein, an officer of very ſlender experience, to the rank of Generaliſſimo of the Ruſſian armies, and gave him the ſeparate command of the horſe guards, a poſt never occupied but by the chief of the empire. Finally, he had prejudiced his troops againſt himſelf to ſuch a degree, that even the moſt uſeful arrangement occaſioned general diſcontent. They even went ſo far as to cenſure him, becauſe he wanted to diſtinguiſh the ſeveral regiments by different facings and collars, alleging it was a German faſhion, which by no means ſuited Ruſſia.

But what diſpleaſed all parties at once was the deſign which Peter openly avowed of recovering, by force of arms, the dutchy of Schleſwig, of which the crown of Denmark had taken poſſeſſion, in face of the claim of the Dukes of Holſtein. The moment for undertaking this war was, undoubtedly, by no means favourable; but in order to form a fair judgment whether or not Peter's motives merited condemnation, it is neceſſary to recollect what were his rights.

The King of Denmark and Norway, Frederick II. who filled the throne toward the middle of the ſixteenth century, was in poſſeſſion, independently of his kingdoms, of the dutchies of Holſtein and Schleſwig, and was deſirous that, at his death, his three ſons ſhould divide thoſe dutchies among themſelves. Chriſtian III. who ſucceeded him in the throne, accordingly had one ſhare, Prince John another, and Prince Adolphus, a branch of the houſe of Holſtein-Gottorp,

Gottorp, took poſſeſſion of the reſt. Theſe three princes, equally united by blood and friendſhip, agreed to govern Holſtein and Schleſwig in common, and this compact was not diſſolved even by the death of John, who left no iſſue. But the heirs of the other two, to whom the ſame conditions were preſcribed, did not all ſubmit to them with cordiality. The Kings of Denmark, more powerful than the Dukes of Holſtein, uſed inceſſant endeavours to keep them under, and finiſhed their career of oppreſſion by making themſelves ſole maſters of Schleſwig. In vain did the dukes remonſtrate againſt this uſurpation, in vain took up arms to reſiſt it. After more than a century of contention, they found themſelves ſolemnly ſtripped of their claims on Schleſwig, by a treaty concluded in 1720, under the mediation of France and England.

Duke Charles of Holſtein who, in 1726, eſpouſed one of the daughters of Peter I. and who was the father of Peter III. flattered himſelf, at firſt, that Ruſſia would procure a reſtoration of that part of his inheritance which had been wreſted from him by the Daniſh monarchs; but the death of Catharine I. ſpeedily quaſhed thoſe hopes. The Emperor Charles VI. in May 1732, concluded a treaty with the King of Denmark, to which the Czarina Anne acceded, and which ſanctioned the invaſion of the rights of the Duke of Holſtein, at the ſame time obliging the King of Denmark to make him a compenſation of a million of crowns, payable within two years, and enjoining the Duke to accept of that payment at the term preſcribed, otherwiſe the Daniſh monarch to ſtand releaſed from all farther indemnification. The Duke of Holſtein conſtantly remonſtrated againſt this treaty, and rejected the money when offered in payment. His ſon, Peter III. imitated his example: and it was in the view of doing himſelf juſtice that, on his elevation to the throne of Ruſſia, he made great preparations againſt the King of Denmark.

But theſe preparations were as wretchedly conducted as unſeaſonably undertaken. Peter, who followed rather the impulſe of his heart than the dictates of reaſon, and who had an affection for the hetman Kyrille Razoumoffsky, through ignorance of his perfidy, offered him the command of his army. The hetman had the addreſs to elude this offer by a ſtroke of pleaſantry which ought to have opened the eyes of the Czar to diſcern the dangers of his enterpriſe:—"Your Majeſty," ſaid he, "muſt have a ſecond army, "to make that under my command advance."

The King of Pruſſia, whom Peter with ſcrupulous exactneſs informed of every thing he did, frequently gave him his beſt advice. He endeavoured at firſt to divert him from his hoſtile projects againſt Denmark, and from his purpoſe of recovering the Dutchy of Schleſwig; but finding his reſolution unalterable, he counſelled him to go, before he engaged in the war, and have himſelf crowned at Moſcow with all the accuſtomed ceremony and magnificence, and not to march a ſtep to join his army without taking in his ſuit the foreign miniſters, and every Ruſſian of whoſe fidelity he entertained a ſuſpicion. He likewiſe recommended to him not to be in a hurry to touch the revenues of the church, and not to meddle with the habiliments of the papas, becauſe theſe minutiæ are always matters of great importance in the eyes of a ſuperſtitious people. He adviſed him, finally, to preſerve all the deference and reſpect which were due to his conſort, and above all things to look to his perſonal ſafety. There is no room to doubt that Frederick, who was well acquainted with the character of Peter and with that of Catharine, foreſaw at a diſtance every thing which afterward came to paſs. Accordingly, in writing to his miniſter to perſevere in maintaining habits of intimacy with the Czar, he charged him to be careful in his attentions to the Empreſs.

Unhappily for Peter, he did not feel himſelf bound to

to ſubmit in every caſe to the leſſons of the monarch, whom he called his maſter. He inſenſibly relapſed into his vicious habits. He frequently paſſed the day in drinking and ſmoking, amidſt a circle of low court-ſycophants, moſt of whom wiſhed to ſee him ruined, and beſtowed perfidious applauſe on his whims, and on his moſt dangerous innovations. Nor was his conduct toward the Empreſs leſs extravagantly abſurd. At the very moment he was paying homage to the ſuperiority of her genius, he could not ſuppreſs the indignation with which her offences inſpired him. In the moſt ſacred and magnificent ceremonies obſerved in Ruſſia, ſuch, for example, as the benediction of the holy water, he made her appear decorated with all the inſignia of imperial dignity, and ſatisfied himſelf with attending at the head of his retinue, habited as a ſimple colonel, as if he meant to ſhew his people that ſhe was formed for reigning, and himſelf for ſerving. Nay, at court, he ſometimes left her charged with the whole repreſentation of royalty, whereas he himſelf, dreſſed in the uniform of his regiment, came and reſpectfully preſented to her his officers, whom he denominated his comrades. Peter I. had formerly acted in like manner toward Catharine I. and his miniſter Menzikoff; but with the power of reſuming the Emperor whenever he pleaſed. Peter I. poſſeſſed the ſkill of employing means which Peter III. did not.

The apparent favour of the Empreſs was not, however, of long duration. As ſoon as the Czar believed himſelf firmly ſeated on the throne, he no longer made a ſecret of his abhorrence of her, and ſometimes expreſſed it in terms the moſt humiliating. At the rejoicings on occaſion of the peace juſt concluded with the King of Pruſſia, Peter who, during the diſplay of the fireworks, was ſeated by the ſide of Catharine, obſerving the Counteſs of Woronzoff, his miſtreſs, paſſing, called her, and made her ſit by him. Catharine immediately retired, without any effort

effort on the part of the Czar to detain her. The ſame night, at ſupper, he propoſed the health of Prince George of Holſtein, and all the company ſtood up, except Catharine, who pretended a pain in her foot. Peter, provoked that the Empreſs ſhould dare to fail in the reſpect which ſhe owed to his uncle, beſtowed on her an epithet, perhaps abundantly deſerved, but which the Emperor ought not to have applied to his conſort. Catharine, humbled at it, could not refrain from ſhedding tears, and for ſome time talked in a whiſper on the ſubject of this inſult with her chamberlain, Serguei-Alexandrowitz Stroganoff, whom ſhe had the farther mortification of ſeeing almoſt immediately put under an arreſt. Her tears intereſted the ſpectators, and Peter's inconſiderate ſally filled them with indignation.

It was by ſuch ſcenes as theſe that the Empreſs felt her hopes revived. She perceived that ſhe ſhould ſoon obtain the ſuperiority over the Czar, by oppoſing to his contempt and imprudent frankneſs, extreme addreſs and circumſpection. Her ſole ſtudy henceforward was to gain the hearts which he loſt. Long practiſed in the arts of diſſimulation, it was eaſy for her to affect in the eyes of the multitude ſentiments the moſt repugnant to her real character. The pupil of the philoſophers, ſhe aſſumed the character of a bigot: ſhe reſorted daily to the churches of Peterſburgh, praying with all the air of a ſincere fervor, ſtrictly conforming to the moſt ſuperſtitious practices of the Greek religion, receiving the poor with every mark of benignity, and treating the papas with much reſpect, who did not fail in their turn to go from houſe to houſe founding her praiſe.

In the interior of the palace, the manner of life of the two conſorts was no leſs different. While Peter ſhut himſelf up with the Counteſs de Woronzoff, M. Keith, the Pruſſian officers, and ſome of his favourites; while he was forgetting his rank ſo far as to live in a ſtate of familiarity with ſtage-players, admitting

mitting them ſometimes even to his table; the Empreſs held her court with a mixture of dignity and affability which charmed all who approached her: ſhe was particularly careful to attach to herſelf perſons who, by their credit, their courage, or their intrigues, might become uſeful to her. The imprudent Czar gave umbrage not only to moſt of his Ruſſian ſubjects, but to almoſt all the miniſters of foreign courts. The Daniſh ambaſſador never appeared in his preſence without meeting ſome token of diſreſpect; the Auſtrian miniſter always met with a cold reception, and the French miniſter himſelf, who had enjoyed ſuch high conſideration under the preceding reign, ſoon perceived that the views of Peter were not more favourable to the court of Verſailles than to that of Vienna.

Peter had already reſolved to conclude with Frederick a particular peace, and an alliance offenſive and defenſive. For this effect, he ſent Goudowitz into Germany, under pretence of announcing to his brother-in-law, the Prince d'Anhalt-Zerbſt, his acceſſion to the throne. He at the ſame time gave Goudowitz ſecret orders to take Breſlau in his way, as he returned, to communicate his intentions to the King of Pruſſia. Frederick liſtened with avidity to the overtures of a prince who was ſacrificing to him all the benefit that could be derived from the war; for the Ruſſians had already made themſelves maſter of royal Pruſſia, and the courts of Vienna and Verſailles had guaranteed the poſſeſſion of it to the Empreſs Elizabeth. So far from being ſatisfied with evacuating Pruſſia, Peter earneſtly wiſhed that Frederick might ſpeedily be in a condition to turn againſt the Auſtrians, the army which had aſſiſted them to keep the field againſt him, and all the return he aſked, as a compenſation for ſo many advantages, was the friendſhip of the Pruſſian monarch, and an aid of 6000 men againſt the Danes. The return of Goudowitz to Peterſburgh, was followed by the arrival of the

the Count de Schwerin, a perſon already known to Peter. The King of Pruſſia ſent him thither to aſſiſt his miniſter Goltz in concluding the treaty of peace and alliance offered by the Czar; and the preſence and counſels of Schwerin contributed not a little to render this treaty beneficial to Frederick. The Britiſh miniſter, M. Keith, was likewiſe very uſeful on this occaſion to the King of Pruſſia, whom he had long been in the habit of ſupporting in the good graces of Peter.

The Czar had already diſpatched his inſtructions to General Tcherniſcheff, who commanded the 30,000 Ruſſian auxiliaries in the Auſtrian army, and who had taken up his winter quarters in Moravia, to re-enter Poland by way of Sileſia. By freſh inſtructions that general was preſently after directed to make his troops act in conjunction with thoſe of the King of Pruſſia, and to conform in all reſpects to the orders of that Monarch. The Czar did not ſo much as vouchſafe to inform the courts of Vienna and Verſailles, nor their miniſters reſident at his court, of theſe important meaſures. They derived their firſt intelligence from the gazettes. Some time afterwards, the Ruſſian ambaſſador at Vienna declared to the Prince de Kaunitz:—"That the Czar, finding the "mode of negotiation by a congreſs too circuitous, "had preferred a direct treaty with the King of Pruſ-"ſia; that he was on the eve of making his peace "with that Monarch; that he adviſed the Court of "Vienna to follow this example, and that it would "be matter of aſtoniſhment, ſhould the Empreſs-"queen take offence at the line of conduct he pur-"ſued, as the war of Germany was not only foreign "to himſelf, and prejudicial to his intereſts, but bur-"denſome to his people." This declaration preceded only by a few days the treaty which the Czar concluded, May 5th, with the plenipotentiaries of the King of Pruſſia.

Peter ordered this peace to be celebrated with all poſſible

poſſible magnificence. The rejoicings laſted for ſeveral days: he himſelf appeared in a Pruſſian uniform, decorated with the order of the black-eagle, which Frederick had ſent him; and as if he had intended to make this feſtivity an occaſion of offering a more direct inſult to Auſtria, he invited the ambaſſador of Maria-Thereſa to partake of it, which that miniſter haughtily rejected. During the whole time of this ſcene of revelling, ſcarce a day paſſed but what Peter terminated by drinking to exceſs, and thoſe exceſſes were always accompanied by ſome act of imprudence. One evening, according to cuſtom, he turned the converſation to his darling ſubject, Frederick; then looking ſteadily at the counſellor of ſtate, Wolkoff, who ſat oppoſite to him, he ſuddenly exclaimed:—"Well, it muſt be admitted that this "ſame King of Pruſſia is a magician, a very ſorcerer! "he knew all our plans for conducting the campaign "as ſoon as we had formed them."—Wolkoff, quite diſconcerted, could only bluſh in reply.—Peter ſays to him:—"Wherefore this embarraſſment? Thou haſt "no longer to fear a journey into Siberia. Is it not "true, that with all the terror of it hanging over thy "head, thou communicatedſt to me all the plans and "projects adopted in council, and which I tranſmitted to his Majeſty the King?"

At the iſſue of almoſt every ſcene of rejoicing in celebrating the peace of Ruſſia with Pruſſia, the Czar, who was ſenſible how much the ambaſſador from Vienna muſt have been irritated, and undoubtedly meaning to give him ſtill more ſerious ground of offence, ſent him a meſſage to this purpoſe:—"That "as the Empreſs-queen alone threw obſtacles in the "way of a general pacification, prompted by a ſpirit "of inſatiable ambition, and by an unjuſt deſire of "recovering Sileſia and the county of Glatz, ſo ſolemnly ceded to Pruſſia, he had reſolved to ſend "20,000 men more into Germany, to conſtrain Maria-Thereſa to renounce her illegitimate preten-

"ſions.",

"ſions."—Every thing ſeemed to announce that this was not likely to prove an empty menace. The King of Pruſſia already flattered himſelf that freſh ſuccours would ſpeedily join the Ruſſians now marching under his ſtandard, and ſuch were, in fact, the intentions of the Czar. But a ſudden cataſtrophe rendered abortive the hopes of Frederick, and totally changed the face of the court of Ruſſia.

Amidſt his warlike preparations, his plans of reform undertaken, but ſcarcely ever executed, and his uſeleſs banquettings, Peter was not unmindful of the Counteſs of Woronzoff; he permitted her, on the contrary, daily to acquire new empire over him. That young woman, deſtitute of every thing like addreſs, but ſtupidly proud, and under the influence of an ambitious and crafty father, had the art of procuring from the Czar, ſometimes by flattery, ſometimes by chiding, and ſometimes even by carrying her inſolence ſo far as to beat him, a renewal of the promiſe which he had already made her, while he was only Grand-duke, conformably to which he was to marry her, and place her inſtead of Catharine on the throne of Ruſſia. Elevated by this hope, ſhe had the indiſcretion to make a boaſt of it, and that indiſcretion proved her deſtruction. While her father and a few courtiers devoted to her intereſt, were at work to ſmooth her path to the throne, rival intereſts innumerable, which both her preſent credit and future aggrandizement rendered inimical to the Czar, and partiſans to the Empreſs, were, as if by concert, employing every poſſible means of excluding her from it. Peter, fully as indiſcreet as the Counteſs de Woronzoff, ſeemed by his conduct to authorize the rumours which ſhe diſſeminated, and he hardly any longer made a ſecret of his intention to repudiate Catharine, and to declare the young Grand-duke, Paul Petrowitz, a baſtard. He reſolved, however, to clothe this act of deſpotiſm with an appearance of juſtice; and he believed, that by producing complete evidence

evidence of Catharine's infidelities, his proceedings againſt her would meet with approbation, not only among his own ſubjects, but all over Europe.

The Counteſs de Woronzoff, informed by the old ſenator, her father, of the firſt loves of the Empreſs and Soltikoff, had taken care long before to have the Czar made acquainted with them, and this it was which determined him to illegitimate and diſinherit her ſon. He recalled to Peterſburgh that Soltikoff, who, ſince Elizabeth had ſhewn herſelf ſo weak as to dare leſs to puniſh than to reward in him the audacity of having defiled his maſter's bed, had carried from Hamburgh to Madrid, his title of miniſter, his want of conduct, and his opprobrious character. Peter loaded him with careſſes and benefits, and did every thing in his power to draw from him an authentic confeſſion of the criminal intercourſe which he had formerly kept up with Catharine. The whole court perceived clearly that Soltikoff, allured by the proſpect of a ſplendid recompenſe, or intimidated by the terror of exemplary chaſtiſement, would do whatever the Czar wiſhed, and Peter himſelf hoped, not without reaſon, that his ancient chamberlain would be unable to reſiſt his importunity. He was now reſtrained but by one conſideration, the difficulty of fixing upon his ſucceſſor.

Though this Prince lived publicly with the Counteſs de Woronzoff, though he had frequent interviews with a pretty dancing girl of the theatre of Peterſburgh, though, in a word, he affected to be engaged in a variety of adventures in gallantry, he was not perhaps a whit the nearer the creation of an heir. The operation to which he had ſubmitted in the firſt years of his marriage, removed an obſtacle without ſupplying the neceſſary means. Nature had inſpired him with an ardent paſſion for the ſex; paroxyſms of deſire inceſſantly overtook him, but every thing ſeemed to aſſure him they would remain for ever unproductive. Perſuaded of the full extent

extent of his misfortune, and wishing nevertheless to elevate some one to the place of Paul Petrowitz, he suddenly conceived a very singular project. He resolved to adopt Prince Ivan, whom Elizabeth had dethroned, to declare him his successor, and to make him marry the young Princess of Holstein-Beck, who was then at Petersburgh, and whom he loved as a daughter. Peter accordingly had himself secretly conducted to Schlusselburgh, with an intention to pay a visit to Prince Ivan, without discovering to the young man who he himself was, that he might form a judgment whether he were worthy of the advantages to which he destined him.

We have already seen that Ivan III. was still in the cradle, when the revolution which, in 1741, placed Elizabeth on the throne, shut him up with the regent Anne his mother, and his whole family, in the fortress of Schlusselburgh. From thence Ivan was conveyed, as well as his kindred, to the fortress of Riga, where they remained eighteen months. From Riga they were carried to Dunamounde, and afterwards to Oranienburgh, a city built by Menzikoff, in the cold province of Woronetz. At this place Ivan was separated from his family, who were thence transported to Kolmogor. A monk, who had access to Ivan's prison, carried him off from Oranienburgh, with a design to conduct him into Germany; but was stopped at Smolensko. On this Ivan was immured in a monastery within the city of Waldaï, at no great distance from the high road between Petersburgh and Moscow. The Empress Elizabeth having an inclination to see him, in 1756, had him carried back to Schlusselburgh, where he had been confined on his dethronement. They conducted him with great secrecy to Petersburgh, to the house of Peter Schouwaloff, where Elizabeth had two interviews with him, but without discovering herself. Ivan was then about sixteen years old; he was tall, had a very interesting figure, a superb head of hair, and a voice

of

of ſingular ſweetneſs. Elizabeth ſhed abundance of tears as ſhe converſed with him; but this did not prevent his being reconveyed to the gloomy dungeon whither Peter went to viſit him ſix years afterwards.

The Emperor choſe to be accompanied on this excurſion only by the boyard Leon Alexandrowitz Nariſchkin, his grand maſter of the horſe; the baron Ungern-Sternberg, one of his aids-de-camp general; the Baron de Korff, maſter of police at Peterſburgh; and the counſellor of ſtate Wolkoff. He had provided himſelf with an order ſigned by his own hand, enjoining the commandant to permit the bearers to walk without interruption over every part of the fortreſs, without excepting even the ſpot to which Prince Ivan was confined, and to allow them to converſe with him in private. Peter had, beſides, taken care to conceal the inſignia of his rank, and recommended to Leon Nariſchkin, who was tall and finely formed, to deport himſelf ſo as to paſs for the Emperor. But whether by chance, or whether he read the truth in the eyes of ſome of the company, Ivan did not miſtake the perſon of the Czar. After having for ſome time ſurveyed the ſtrangers who had juſt entered his apartment, he ſuddenly threw himſelf at Peter's feet. "Czar," ſaid he, "you are maſter "here. I will not importune you with a long prayer, "but mitigate the ſeverity of my lot. I have ſighed "away many years in this dungeon. The only fa-"vour I aſk is, that I may be permitted from time "to time to breathe a purer air."—Peter was extremely affected by theſe words.—"Riſe, Prince," ſaid he to Ivan, ſtroking him gently on the ſhoulder; "diſmiſs all anxiety about the future. I will "do every thing in my power to render your ſitua-"tion more agreeable.—But tell me, Prince, have "you any recollection of the diſtreſſes you under-"went from your earlieſt years?"—"I have hardly "any idea," replied Ivan, "of thoſe which aſſailed "my infancy; but from the moment that I began

" to be ſenſible of my misfortune, I never ceaſed to " mingle my tears with thoſe of my father and my " mother, who were wretched only on my account; " and my greateſt miſery was to ſee the barbarous " treatment they ſuffered, as we were hurried from " one priſon to another." " How! whence proceeded " that unkind treatment?" demanded the Czar.— " From the officers who conducted us," replied Ivan, " and who were always the moſt inhuman of man- " kind."—" Do you recollect the names of thoſe offi- " cers?" ſays Peter.—" Alas!" replied the young Prince, " we had no curioſity to procure information. " We ſatisfied ourſelves with giving thanks to heaven " on our bended knees, when thoſe monſters were " replaced by officers leſs ferocious."—" What!" exclaimed the Emperor, " did you never meet with " any who poſſeſſed humanity?" " One alone de- " ſerves to be diſtinguiſhed from this herd of ti- " gers," ſaid Ivan; " he carried with him our eſteem " and our regret. His goodneſs, his generous atten- " tions ſhall never be effaced from my memory."— " And you do not ſo much as know the name of " that worthy man?"—eagerly demanded Peter. " Oh, yes, I remember it very well," replied Ivan; " his name is Korff."

This very Baron Korff was, as has been already mentioned, one of the Czar's retinue. He melted into tears as he liſtened to this detail; and Peter, no leſs affected, laid hold of his arm, and ſaid to him in a voice almoſt ſtifled with emotion:—" Ba- " ron, ſee how a good action is never thrown away!"

In order to recover from his emotion, Peter went out with Korff, Nariſchkin and Wolkoff, leaving the Baron d'Ungern-Sternberg alone with Ivan.— " How then came you hither, Prince?" ſaid Ungern-Sternberg to him—" Who is able," replied Ivan, " to take ſufficient precaution againſt the razboïniks " (highwaymen)! One day, an order from I do not " know whom comes to the priſon where I was with

" my

"my family. The razboïniks burſt into our domeſtic "circle, and tore me away from the only perſons I "knew in the world, and who alone had gained my "tenderneſs and confidence, I mean my father, my "mother, my brothers and my ſiſters. Oh, how "many tears have I ſhed over them! and how muſt "they have lamented, if they are ſtill in life, the "death of their ſon and their brother!"—"What do "you believe will be the fate of our new Emperor?" demanded the Baron. "If I may judge from the idea "which I have formed of the Ruſſians," ſaid Ivan, "it will not be more fortunate than my own. My "father and mother have frequently repeated to me, "that foreign Princes will always be hated and de-"throned by the perfidious and haughty Ruſſians."

The Czar now returned with Nariſchkin, Korff, Wolkoff, and accompanied by the commandant, to whom he ſaid, in the preſence of Ivan: "I order "you to give the Prince, from this moment forward, "every aſſiſtance he may pleaſe to aſk of you, and "to permit him from time to time to walk abroad in "the great ſquare of the fortreſs. I will ſend you, "in writing, more particular orders, conformably to "which you will henceforth regulate your conduct "toward his ſacred perſon." On quitting Ivan's apartment, the Emperor run over the interior of the fortreſs; and after having examined the ſpot of ground which appeared to him commodious for the conſtruction of an edifice proper to lodge the priſoner, he directed the commandant to ſet the workmen a-going, and added:—"I will have it a pavilion of nine "caſements in front, and that the reſt of the area "may be laid out into a garden where he may take "the air, and find ſome mitigation of the rigour "which ſtill renders his confinement neceſſary. As "ſoon as the pavilion is completed, I will come my-"ſelf and put the Prince in poſſeſſion."

In all probability the Czar held this language to the commandant of Schluſſelburgh, merely to pre-

vent that officer's penetrating into his real intentions; for what occaſion could there otherwiſe have been to iſſue orders for the conſtruction of a new priſon for him whom he deſtined to the throne? This priſon had beſides, it is ſaid, a very different object. Her conſort, it was thought, deſigned this priſon for Catharine herſelf. Before his departure from Schluſſelburgh, Peter once more reviſited the Prince in his dungeon; he then returned to Peterſburgh, where no one entertained any ſuſpicion of the extraordinary interview which had juſt taken place, and much leſs ſtill of what he was meditating in favour of Ivan. When Prince George of Holſtein, the Emperor's uncle, got information of the viſit which that Monarch had paid to Ivan, he adviſed him to ſend the young Prince back to Germany, as well as Duke Anthony of Brunſwick, his father, and the reſt of his family. Peter, who did not wiſh his uncle ſhould dive into his project, affected to approve of his advice; but ſatisfied himſelf, for the moment, with ordering Ivan to be eſcorted to the fortreſs of Kexholm, built in a little iſland of the lake Ladoga, and at a much greater diſtance; and from thence, had him ſecretly conducted to Peterſburgh. What cannot but force itſelf on obſervation, upon this occaſion, is, that a ſtrange fatality ſeemed to purſue throughout the unfortunate Ivan; for, when they were conducting him from Schluſſelburgh, on board a galley which was to land him at Kexholm, a tempeſt, which aroſe ſuddenly, had almoſt ſwallowed up the boat in which he was embarked.

Meanwhile the imprudences of the Czar daily reanimated the hopes of Catharine, and the deſigns which he had formed againſt her, part of which were but too well known, emboldened her to riſk every thing in the way of prevention. Baniſhed to Peterſhoff, and lodged in one of the moſt retired and leaſt conſpicuous apartments of that palace, ſhe paſſed her days in meditating the project of precipitating her conſort

conſort from the throne, and her nights in the arms of a lover whom ſhe had contrived to render the moſt intrepid of conſpirators. Ever ſince the diſmiſſion of Count Poniatowſky, ſhe had the addreſs to make herſelf appear, in the eyes of the moſt obſervant of her court, faithful to her paſſion for that Polander: but ſhe indemnified herſelf ſufficiently in ſecret for the abſence of him whom ſhe affected to love with undivided tenderneſs. To keep up the miſtake of thoſe who had a vigilant eye upon her conduct, ſhe was under the twofold motive of intereſting them in favour of an unfortunate paſſion, and of throwing a vail over her ſecret indulgences. All her friends themſelves were the dupes of her artifice. Breteuil, who aſſumed the credit of being very clear-ſighted, and of poſſeſſing the entire confidence of Catharine, believed her ſo conſtant in her affection for Poniatowſky, that he degraded his character as miniſter of France, ſo far as to convey to her, with his own hand, all the letters of that lover, and to take charge of her anſwers. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff herſelf knew not that ſhe was under the influence of any other love but that of ſtudy and of Poniatowſky, and ſhe had already been deeply engaged in a conſpiracy, in concert with Orloff, long before ſhe entertained any ſurmiſe that he was ſo much as known to the Empreſs. The only perſon, in a word, who was in the ſecret of her amorous intrigues, and who conducted them throughout, was one of her women named Catharine Ivanowna, the moſt dextrous of confidants, and the leaſt ſcrupulous of duennas. She conducted herſelf with ſo much addreſs, that the gallants whom ſhe introduced to her miſtreſs, enjoyed almoſt always the favours of that Princeſs, without knowing who ſhe was. Orloff did not long continue in this ſtate of ignorance; he acquired too great an aſcendant over her to admit of deferring a diſcovery of her quality.

Gregory Orloff poſſeſſed the advantages neither of birth nor of education, but he had received from nature ſome of the happieſt endowments, beyond all doubt, courage and manly beauty. Grandſon of a ſtrelitz who, in the grand execution at Moſcow, was on the point of loſing his head by the axe of Peter I. when his apathetic compoſure induced that Prince to ſpare his life, Gregory ſerved in the artillery, while two of his brothers were only common ſoldiers in the guards. Count Peter Schouwaloff, grand-maſter of the ordnance, a man vain and ſtately, wiſhed to have the handſomeſt of his officers for aid-de-camp, and made choice of Gregory Orloff. He had likewiſe for his miſtreſs one of the moſt illuſtrious and moſt beautiful women at court, the Princeſs Kourakin, who ſpeedily notified to the aid-de-camp that ſhe preferred him to his general. But unfortunately the general, who ſurprized them together, forbid Orloff his preſence, and threatened to employ all his influence to have him baniſhed to Siberia. This adventure took place toward the cloſe of Elizabeth's reign, and made ſome noiſe. It became a ſubject of converſation both at court and in the city, and the report of it reached the retreat to which Catharine had been obliged to condemn herſelf. Curioſity, perhaps compaſſion, inſpired her with an inclination to know the young officer whoſe misfortune ſhe had heard of. Ivanowna procured her a ſight of him, with all the accuſtomed precautions, and Orloff, without gueſſing, at firſt, who the beauty was that intereſted herſelf in his fate, found in her many more charms, and a much greater ardor of affection, than in the Princeſs Kourakin. This firſt and myſterious interview was followed by many others, in which Catharine diſcovered tenderneſs only; but when ſhe believed herſelf fully aſſured of the intrepidity and diſcretion of her lover, ſhe unfolded to him her ambitious deſigns. Orloff on this formed with her a conſpiracy,

in

in which he ſoon engaged his brothers, his intimate friend Bibikoff, Lieutenant Paſſeck, and other officers, by means of whom he gained over ſome companies of the guards, but without diſcovering what was really his project.

Catharine was as yet Grand-dutcheſs only, when her attachment to Orloff commenced, and her intrigue with him was not the only one which ſhe conducted with equal addreſs and good fortune. Several other officers, beſide various perſons of her court, had partaken of her favours; but as ſhe did not find in them the devotedneſs and the genius which were neceſſary to her, ſhe was ſatisfied with ſecuring their friendſhip, but did not impart to them her ſecret. Lieutenant-general Villebois was one of thoſe whom that Princeſs diſtinguiſhed the moſt; and when he obtained the command of the artillery, on the death of the general who diſcarded Orloff, ſhe prevailed with him to beſtow the poſt of captain-paymaſter to his corps on that favourite. Villebois did whatever ſhe deſired, without once ſuſpecting that he brought forward a preferred rival.

On her mounting the throne, Catharine continued to be nevertheleſs the powerful though inviſible directreſs of the faction of the grandees, the remains of thoſe conſpirators at the head of whom Beſtuſcheff and the Schouwaloffs had ſucceſſively appeared, and of which the hetman Kyrille Razoumoffsky, Prince Wolkonſky, nephew of the exiled Beſtuſcheff, and major-general of the guards, with Count Panin, were the firmeſt ſupports. Finally, ſhe had the addreſs to form a third conſpiracy, managed by the young Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and which always ſhewed itſelf, if not the moſt formidable, at leaſt the moſt active and impetuous. Th partiſans of thoſe three factions acted, moreover without the privacy of each other, and Catharine, who animated the whole, ſeemed to take no part in their cabals.

The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, returned for ſome time paſt from Moſcow, where her huſband had detained her in a ſpecies of exile, did not feel herſelf diſpoſed to enter into the views of her family, who wiſhed to ſee her ſuperſede her ſiſter in the good graces of the Czar. That ſiſter was better adapted to the military taſte of Peter, and Madame d'Aſchkoff had occaſion for a lover who could do ſomething more than drink and ſmoke tobacco. She from that time formed a cloſe intimacy with Catharine. They paſſed whole days together, employed in literature and intrigue; and when the Empreſs was relegated to Peterſhoff, the Princeſs remained at Peterſburgh, the better to promote her intereſt. She then engaged in a correſpondence by letters with the Empreſs, wherein ſhe gave her an account of every thing that paſſed at court or in the capital, and ſuggeſted the means requiſite to defeat the Czar's purpoſes.

The attachment which the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff had vowed to Catharine was not the only motive which ſtimulated her to ſerve that Princeſs. She was particularly jealous of the glory which awaited her ſiſter; and neither the menaces of that ſiſter and of her father, nor the authority of the chancellor, her uncle, in whoſe houſe ſhe had been brought up, had power to detach her from a party, at the head of which, ſuch was the ſilly pride ſhe indulged, ſhe thought herſelf placed. She had ſtudied languages, and read a great many foreign books, during her reſidence at Moſcow, which inflamed her natural vanity, and led her to deſpiſe the ignorance of her compatriots. Flattering herſelf, in a word, with poſſeſſing the capacity to direct a conſpiracy, ſhe braved with a high hand the reſentments of her family: ſhe would have braved death with equal intrepidity.

The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff had for ſome time been attended by a Piedmonteſe of the name of Odart, whom want, and the deſire of making a fortune, had

attracted

attracted to Peterſburgh, and who confirmed her taſte for French literature, by making her acquainted with the beſt authors of that nation. Odart was ſo much the more valuable to Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, that he united, like herſelf, a reliſh for polite learning with the genius of intrigue. She was inceſſantly boaſting of being poſſeſſed of a man to whom ſhe felt herſelf indebted for her own ſuperiority, and ſpoke of him to the Empreſs in terms ſo advantageous that ſhe was earneſt to attach him to her intereſt, and beſtowed on him the title of her private ſecretary.

In a ſhort time this ſupple and inſinuating ſecretary became one of the confidants, not of the amorous intrigues of Catharine, but of her projects of ambition. A witneſs of the mortifications to which that Princeſs was ſubjected, of the farther humiliation which threatened her, he perceived clearly that there was no other way to eſcape but the downfal of the Emperor. But how was this downfal to be accompliſhed? How muſter up the courage requiſite to ſuch an enterpriſe? Odart perceived all the difficulties, all the danger of it; but he likewiſe knew, that if torture and death threatened on one ſide, riches and honour allured on the other. Money was the only deity which Odart worſhipped: his choice was accordingly ſoon determined. He immediately addreſſed himſelf to the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, who, ſharing in advance his audacious ideas, was exceſſively flattered to find in a man whoſe talents ſhe eſteemed, an accomplice worthy of herſelf. Ah! with what hopes did not theſe two puny and inſolent conſpirators then intoxicate themſelves? What did they not promiſe themſelves they ſhould obtain, could they but ſubvert the maſter of one of the greateſt empires in the world? Odart believed that an immenſe fortune muſt be the reward of his ſervices; the Princeſs imagined that the whole univerſe would never ceaſe to ſpeak of her, and that her own glory would

would riſe far above the glory even of her friend, whom ſhe wiſhed to render ſole miſtreſs of the throne.

But the execution of a project ſo vaſt required means more efficacious than vain illuſions and unprolific deſires. Much more was neceſſary than a woman of eighteen years old and an unknown adventurer. Accordingly, when Odart and Madame d'Aſchkoff had amuſed themſelves ſufficiently with contemplating the magnificent recompenſe at which they graſped, they began to think of the method to procure ſoldiers; money, which always makes ſure of ſoldiers; a chief whoſe name and authority might have a commanding influence over them, a man eſpecially who, habituated to manage courtiers, to conduct intrigues, was neither to be embarraſſed by obſtacles nor intimidated by croſs incidents. On this they turned their eyes toward the hetman Kyrille Razoumoffsky and Count Panin.

The great credit which the hetman had enjoyed under the reign of Elizabeth, and the familiarity with which he was treated by Peter III. which he contrived to ſupport, gave him a very powerful influence at court; and his prodigious wealth, which enabled him to indulge himſelf in continual acts of liberality to a multitude of needy officers and ſoldiers, ſecured him many friends in the army. He occupied one of the firſt places in the empire. He did not greatly eſteem Catharine, whoſe genius he prized not very highly, and whoſe irregularities he had obſerved: he was aware of the danger of an attempt to dethrone the Czar, but he was always animated with the ſpirit of his ancient party. When the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff communicated to him her deſigns, the hetman applauded them, and without appearing to take a direct part in the buſineſs, aſſured her of his ſupport when occaſion might require. It was thus that when Orloff preſented himſelf a few days after at his houſe, to ſound his inclinations, he gave him

all

all encouragement to oppoſe the deſigns which the Emperor meditated againſt his conſort, and told him at the ſame time, that thoſe who ſhould defend that Princeſs might rely on his joining them. The hetman kept the ſecret from Orloff as he had from Madame d'Aſchkoff, and ſatisfied with beholding two new factions put in motion, he reſolved within himſelf to ſupport them with all the power of his own. Razoumoffsky went ſtill farther. He immediately aſſembled his friends, and without unfolding to them preciſely the double project which had been confided to him, he told them that to his certain knowledge a deſign was on foot among the troops to dethrone the Czar, and that if they did not make haſte to declare themſelves the chiefs of it, the only alternative that remained was to become the forced inſtruments of the ſoldiery, or perhaps their victims. On this they demanded of him what they were to do:—"Stand by "me the moment that the conſpiracy breaks out," replied the hetman, "and leave it to me to raiſe you "to the rank to which your birth, your fortune, and "your talents, give you a juſt title. The blind in-"trepidity of certain obſcure conſpirators is going to "ſtrike the firſt blow. Let us carefully watch the "moment of it. If they ſucceed, our dextrous in-"terpoſition muſt reap the fruit. Do you feel re-"ſolved ſufficiently to follow my example?" They all ſwore to it, and the aſſembly ſeparated, in expectation of the terrible event which flattered at once hatred and ambition.

Secure of the co-operation of Razoumoffsky, the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff and Odart employed all their ſkill to engage Count Panin in their party, and Catharine recommended to them to neglect nothing that could make this point good. She well knew, that if the name and preſence of the hetman was to produce a decided effect in the firſt moments of the revolt, the experience and ability of Panin were ſtill more neceſſary to prepare its ſucceſs. He alone poſ-

ſeſſed

ſeſſed the power of artfully tempering the outrageous vanity of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff; of exciting, inflaming the hatred and vengeance of Razoumoffsky; of giving direction to the greedy and ſervile ambition of Odart; and of apparently juſtifying the conſpiracy by involving in it the name of the young Paul Petrowitz, his pupil. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff therefore charged Odart to propoſe to Panin an aſſociation with them; and, Panin, inſtigated by a motive ſtill more powerful than that of ſerving the Empreſs and the Grand-duke, promiſed to do what the Princeſs deſired.

All this was ſtill too little for Madame d'Aſchkoff. She addreſſed herſelf directly to the Prince Wolkonſky, major-general of the guards. Wolkonſky, inſtructed in the arts of intrigue by his kinſman Beſtuſcheff, and the heir of his hatred to Peter, Wolkonſky, whoſe ambition longed for a change of government, and who flattered himſelf with ſoon playing the firſt part in the new faction, was not more deaf to perſuaſion than Panin and Razoumoffsky.

The Archbiſhop of Novogorod was gained over in like manner. He was reckoned upon even before any overture was made him. The Emperor had juſt recalled him from the exile to which he had been a few months before condemned; but the prelate, more irritated by the ſeverity of his ſovereign than melted by his clemency, only waited for an opportunity of ſignalizing his holy reſentment. Superſtition furniſhed him with ample means to this effect. He was well acquainted with the ſtupid zeal of the Ruſſians in behalf of every thing pertaining to the Greek religion, and the ſwarms of monks whom he had under abſolute control, continued, under the pretext of defending that religion, to infuſe into all hearts their own hatred of a Prince who ſeemed to have imprudently declared himſelf its enemy.

The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff wiſhed likewiſe to make ſure of part of the army. She was acquainted with

many

many of the officers; ſhe made a feint of paying them a viſit of politeneſs merely, and frequented the barracks. Orloff met her there. It was not difficult to come to an explanation. They were preſently of one mind; and without ſuſpecting that Orloff was known to Catharine, Princeſs d'Aſchkoff found in him more than one accomplice. In the belief that ſhe alone had gained over Gregory Orloff, the Princeſs flattered herſelf that ſhe had likewiſe gained, through his means, the two brothers of that conſpirator, not leſs handſome, not leſs daring than himſelf, and of a ſtrength of body and a brutality of manners which rendered them formidable even to their friends. She at the ſame time ſtrengthened her party by the acceſſion of ſeveral other officers or ſoldiers whom Orloff had long been preparing for rebellion; and when Odart imagined he was communicating the firſt intelligence of theſe ſucceſſes to the Empreſs, that miſtreſs in the art of diſſimulation, who got an account of every thing from her lover in their nocturnal interviews, took care not to undeceive her ſecretary, and offend the vanity of Madame d'Aſchkoff.

One traitor alone ſtood in no need of ſolicitation; that very Gleboff whom the Czar had raiſed from the loweſt practice of law chicane to the important poſt of procurator-general of the ſenate. The perfidious monſter concluded that his maſter would not be able to maintain his ground againſt the hoſt of foes who were preparing to attack him, and, adding cruelty to ingratitude, he reſolved to contribute to his ruin; in order to make an advantage of it. He was on the look-out then for a conſpiracy to which he might attach himſelf, and the moment he got ſcent of that which Odart and Princeſs d'Aſchkoff were concerting, he went and offered them his ſervices.

The conſpirators were farther certain of being joined, on the firſt ſignal, by all the partiſans of the courts of Vienna, of Verſailles and of Copenhagen, who

who were not few in number. The miniſters of thoſe courts had frequently the ſkill, in order to acquire partiſans, to be profuſe of both money and flattery; and if there be a Ruſſian proof againſt flattery, there is not one capable of reſiſting the temptation of gold.

The object of thoſe who conſpired againſt Peter was to dethrone him, but they were by no means unanimous as to the mode of accompliſhing their purpoſe. Panin, Razoumoffsky, Orloff, thought it would be proper to begin with carrying him off from Peterſhoff, at the concluſion of one of the revels which could not fail to take place, when he came thither to celebrate the feſtival of St. Peter. Panin and ſome others of the conſpirators had even gone to take an exact ſurvey of his apartment, in order the more eaſily to ſecure his perſon. Lieutenant Paſſeck, the moſt ferocious, the moſt barbarous of Ruſſians, claimed it as his province to ſtab him in the midſt of his court; and notwithſtanding the prohibition which Panin laid him under on the ſubject, he went with one of his comrades, named Baſchkakoff, to lie in ambuſh two days running, in expectation of his paſſing to the little palace of wood where Peter I. lived, when he laid the foundation of Peterſburgh: during theſe two days Peter III. happened not to go that way. But if the conſpirators differed as to the means of dethroning the Czar, they were ſtill leſs of one mind reſpecting the manner of ſupplying his place. Catharine's intention was to aſſume the ſole poſſeſſion of ſovereign authority. This pretenſion was ſupported by Orloff and the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff. Panin wiſhed, on the contrary, that ſhe ſhould conduct the government with the title of regent only, but that the name of Emperor ſhould be conferred on the Grand-duke Paul Petrowitz. The hetman Razoumoffsky, who ſaw in that young Prince more than the ſon of the ſovereigns, was of the ſame opinion.

In

In a long conference at which theſe different pretenſions were diſcuſſed, and in which the principal conſpirators aſſiſted, Panin had the courage thus to addreſs Catharine:—"I am aware, Madam, of all "that you wiſh, of all that you can do; but I know "likewiſe at what point your ambition ought to ſtop. "You have ſaid a hundred times, while only Grand-"dutcheſs, that you aſpired after no higher title than "that of mother to the Emperor. Why then ſhould "you not reſt ſatisfied with a title ſo illuſtrious? "Your intention now is to put aſide your ſon from "the ſucceſſion to the throne of Ruſſia, but what "right have you to mount it alone? Are you de-"ſcended from the blood of the Czars? Was you "even born in their empire? Can you imagine that "the ancient and warlike Muſcovitiſh nation will "ever acknowledge, as their ſovereign, a Counteſs "of Anhalt? Can you believe they will ever ceaſe "from conſpiring to reſtore the deſcendants of Peter "I. one of whom they will behold languiſhing at the "foot of the throne, while the reſt ſhall continue to "ſigh away a miſerable exiſtence in gloomy dun-"geons? Ah! Madam, ceaſe from demanding more "than you ought to obtain. Conſider that your "greateſt felicity is to eſcape the imminent danger "which threatens you, and that the only means of "juſtifying our raſh enterpriſe, is to make it appear "that you are leſs concerned about yourſelf than "about your ſon!"

The conſpirators, penetrated with the firmneſs, with the good ſenſe of this addreſs, remained ſilent. Orloff trembled. Catharine herſelf was for ſome time deprived of the power of ſpeech. At length ſhe thus replied to Panin:—"Count, there is much "force in your reaſoning, nevertheleſs it has not pro-"duced conviction on my mind. I am, as you are, "well acquainted with the character of the Ruſſians. "We cannot accordingly be ignorant that, provid-"ed they are governed, they trouble themſelves very "little

"little about the origin of thoſe who govern them. "When the hand which rules the nation preſſes "heavily upon it, that nation knows only to obey. "Menzikoff, Biren, Munich, furniſh ſo many proofs "of this. But it is not thus that I intend to reign; "but on the contrary with gentleneſs, with juſtice, "and in ſuch a manner as to prevent all pretext for "the ſlighteſt diſcontent. But you who talk to me "of murmurings, of rebellions, can you have for-"gotten that rebellion almoſt always breaks out dur-"ing the period of regencies? Would we ever have "thought of that in which we are now embarked, "had Peter III. been capable of holding the reins "of government with a ſteady hand? You are alarm-"ed about my ſon: but would you rather abandon "him to the diſpoſal of a capricious father, by whom "he is already diſowned, than entruſt his lot to a "mother who loves him? And if I aim at ſupreme "authority, is it not to ſecure the felicity of that "child? Is it not to have it more in my power to re-"compenſe all thoſe who, like you, aſſiſt me to de-"fend him? Ah! beyond all doubt, they may every "one reckon on my eternal gratitude; but in order "to demonſtrate it in the way I wiſh, I muſt needs "have the ability to do ſo, and this is a power which "I expect from your hands."

Panin was by no means perſuaded; opinions were divided, and the conſpirators remained unſettled as to the preciſe line of conduct they were to purſue. It was eaſy to perceive that Panin wiſhed to place his pupil on the throne merely in the hope of ſecuring to himſelf the ſecond place in the empire, and of governing under his name. Catharine was too ſagacious not to have detected this motive long before. She accordingly had given Panin ſecret aſſurances that ſhe would appoint him prime miniſter; but ſhe took care not to confirm that promiſe to him in preſence of the other conſpirators, for fear of wounding the ambition of ſome of them.

The

The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, Orloff, Odart, all thoſe who wiſhed to inveſt Catharine with ſupreme power, emulouſly employed all their ſkill in deviſing the means of ſhaking Panin's reſolution, but it was long before they could find any; and they undoubtedly muſt have failed, had not ambition been combatted by a paſſion leſs terrible indeed, but much more powerful. Love had already procured for Catharine the moſt valiant, the moſt daring of her partiſans: love procured to another woman the advantage of vanquiſhing him whom the Empreſs herſelf had not been able to bring over to her opinion. The neceſſity which the buſineſs of the conſpiracy laid Panin under of frequently converſing with Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, the wit, the vivacity, the petulance of that young woman, every thing in ſhort had inſpired him with a violent affection for her. He did not long delay a declaration of his paſſion, which ſhe received with a coldneſs that left him no hope of ſucceſs. It was not, however, the virtue of Madame d'Aſchkoff which repelled the addreſſes of Panin. Several other well-known lovers had already experienced that ſhe was not invincible. But the age, the formal air of Panin, the intimate connection which he was known to have had with the mother of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and above all the lively and undiſguiſed preference which ſhe gave to another, prevented her admitting the addreſſes of the governor, who, remaining henceforward ſilent on the ſubject of his paſſion, ſeemed to take pleaſure in thwarting every thing propoſed by her who was the object of it.

The ſubtle and vigilant Odart alone perceived the ſecret motive of Panin's oppoſition, and immediately conceived hopes of overcoming it. He flew to Madame d'Aſchkoff, and having obtained from her own mouth a confirmation that his ſuſpicions were not ill-founded, he ſpoke to her with all the liberty of a zealous confidant and of an accomplice, who, like herſelf, bid daily defiance to exile and death. Eman-

cipated from every prejudice, or rather incapable of ſetting a value on any one virtue, Odart had the aſſurance to make a jeſt of the ſcruples which reſtrained the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff. Afterwards, aſſuming a more ſerious air, he repreſented to her, that if ſhe believed it a crime to comply with Panin's ſolicitations, that crime would be ennobled by the motive which induced her to commit it. He put her in mind of the ſentiment by which ſhe was united to the Empreſs, and told her, that friendſhip being the firſt of virtues, no ſacrifice ought to be regarded when a friend was to be ſerved. Finally, he diſplayed the triumph of heroiſm in the diſgraceful act which was to render her charms ſubſervient to her ambition. Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, whoſe romantic brain was eaſily heated, believed every word that Odart ſaid, did every thing that Panin wiſhed, and Catharine had no longer any obſtacles to fear on the part of that conſpirator.

The partiſans being now all of one mind, nothing remained but to put their project in execution. There were leaders in abundance, but they wanted ſoldiers. It was neceſſary therefore to gain over the guards, at once to deprive the Emperor of that ſupport, and to transfer it to themſelves. The Orloffs, Bibikoff, Paſſeck, had already ſeduced three companies of the regiment of Iſmaïloff; but that number was far from being ſufficient, and there was no hope of corrupting others but by dint of money. The Empreſs had none to give, being hardly furniſhed with the means of defraying the daily expenditure of her houſehold. In concert with Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, ſhe employed Odart to negociate a loan with M. de Breteuil. That miniſter, for a long time the confidant and the dupe of the Empreſs, was then preparing to leave Peterſburgh. He knew well enough that a conſpiracy was going forward, but was totally unacquainted with its moving ſprings and with its reſources; he entertained doubts about the iſſue; and when Odart told him that

that Catharine wiſhed the King of France to lend her 60,000 roubles, he heſitated whether he ſhould advance that paltry ſum. Fearful at once of wounding Catharine's ſelf-love by a peremptory refuſal, and of truſting too far to the aſſertions of Odart, whom he conſidered as a preſumptuous adventurer, he told him to aſſure the Empreſs that it would give pleaſure to the King his maſter to give her on this occaſion a proof of his attachment, and that he would immediately impart her wiſhes to his ſovereign. He at the ſame time compoſed the form of a note which he committed to Odart, that ſhe might copy it with her own hand and ſend it back. The note was conceived in theſe terms:—"I have charged the bearer "of this billet to bid you in my name farewell, and "to entreat you to execute a ſmall commiſſion for "me, which I beg you would diſpatch as ſoon as "poſſible."

The Piedmonteſe believing that the Empreſs would not heſitate about writing ſuch a billet, promiſed M. de Breteuil to procure it; but that Princeſs, ſenſibly hurt at the miſtruſt of the French miniſter, at the delay he employed, and at thought of the dependence under which he wiſhed to place her on a court which ſhe deteſted, did not deign to make any reply, and M. de Breteuil having ſeen ſeveral days elapſe without any communication through the medium of Odart, left Ruſſia and repaired to Vienna, where he received, from Verſailles, news of the ſucceſs of the conſpiracy, and orders to return to the court of Catharine. In the firſt preſſure of neceſſity ſhe had condeſcended to borrow of M. de Breteuil; but wiſhing afterwards to make him feel that ſhe could do without him, ſhe ſeized the moment of his departure to addreſs a note to him, which Odart ſecretly delivered to the *chargé d'affaires* Berenger, containing theſe words:—"The negociation propoſed will be "aſſuredly accompliſhed, and ſoon, but on much "better terms: we have therefore no occaſion to ap-

"ply to other reſources." She did not ſay that an Engliſh merchant, named Welden, had accommodated her with a loan of 100,000 roubles, a piece of ſervice on which his country has had frequent occaſion to congratulate herſelf.

Catharine was, nevertheleſs, at this moment in a moſt terrible ſituation. The fear of beholding her projects detected, the ſtill more dreadful apprehenſion of being prevented, hurled from the throne, ſhut up for life, and the embarraſſments of an advanced pregnancy, rendered her a prey to the moſt lively emotions of anxiety. Whatever care ſhe had taken to conceal that pregnancy, it was impoſſible to eſcape the obſervation of every eye. The Czar had been appriſed of it and reſolved to ſurpriſe her; but he came too late; and on entering the apartment of the Empreſs, he found her ſitting on a ſopha, where ſhe had been delivered, a few hours before, with the aſſiſtance of Ivanowna, of the load which expoſed her to danger the moſt alarming. Peter, impoſed on by the compoſed tranquillity of his conſort, believed ſhe had been calumniated, and after a few unmeaning compliments took his leave, and returned to Peterſburgh. This Prince appeared at that time entirely abandoned to his pleaſures, but he nevertheleſs bent his attention to the caſe of the ill-fated Ivan, and to his military preparations. After having ordered to convey the young Prince to Kexholm, he had him conducted in a very private manner to Peterſburgh, to a houſe of mean appearance, whither he went to viſit him by night, in company with Goudowitz and Wolkoff.

The fleet deſtined to act againſt Denmark was equipped, and one diviſion lay at Cronſtadt, while the reſt waited in readineſs to join it at Revel. The regiments which were to follow him in this expedition were already in Pomerania, the others were on their march thither. In a word, he was ready to put himſelf at the head of his army to invade Holſtein. What

ſeemed

ſeemed to flatter him the moſt in attempting this conqueſt, was the opportunity it would afford him of an interview with him whom he called his friend, his brother and his model, the King of Pruſſia. In expectation of this felicity, he treated the envoy of that monarch with a degree of diſtinction and complaiſance which Frederick himſelf could well have diſpenſed with: but the envoy was a young man, and perhaps preſumed too far on the attention paid him by the Emperor. Peter had fixed his departure for the day after the feſtival of St. Peter, which he was going to celebrate at Peterſhoff, and at the concluſion of which he propoſed to have the Empreſs arreſted. But that lady had the ſkill to prevent him. Her party only waited the moment of acting, and chance accelerated that moment.

BOOK IV.

The Conſpirators prepare to put in Execution their Project of dethroning the Czar—The Arreſt of Paſſeck haſtens this Execution—Catharine II. is acknowledged as Empreſs by the Regiments of Guards, and orders herſelf to be crowned in the principal Church of Peterſburgh—The Troops gained over by the Conſpirators advance againſt Peter—Irreſolution and extreme weakneſs of that Prince—He ſurrenders to Catharine—He is poiſoned and ſtrangled—Conſequences of his Death.

THOSE who conduct a conſpiracy always employ more zeal, vigilance and activity, than the perſon againſt whom it is directed. The friends of Catharine, accordingly, had punctual information of every thing that paſſed about the Czar, while he remained in total ignorance reſpecting their proceed-

ings. Waiting for the feſtival of St. Peter, that Prince, lulled into a ſtate of thoughtleſs ſecurity, had gone to paſs a few days at his ſummer palace of Oranienbaum, carrying with him ſeveral beautiful women of his court. It was currently reported that he had an intention to inſiſt on getting thoſe ladies divorced, as a preparation for their marrying his favourites; nay, it is ſaid he went ſo far as to order beds to be fitted up for the accommodation of the propoſed weddings: hence ſhame, indignation, jealouſy, raiſed him a new hoſt of foes, and threw into Catharine's ſcale ſo many warm partiſans.

Without being entirely in the ſecret of the conſpiracy, ſeveral perſons who perceived that ſomething was going forward againſt the Czar, gave him warning of it, but could not perſuade him to prevent the traitors. It has already been mentioned, that the King of Pruſſia in vain recommended to him attention to his perſonal ſafety. Baron de Goltz and Count Schwerin with importunity repeated to him the ſame advice, but ſucceeded no better than their maſter had done. The too confident Peter made this reply:—"Hear ye, if "you are my friends drop that ſubject for the future, "it is hateful to me." Some time before the conſpiracy burſt out, a French architect, named Valois, waited on the Czar at the houſe of the Britiſh miniſter, where that Prince was dining, and put into his hands a memorial, in which he detailed the ſeditious converſations of Teploff, the ancient preceptor of the hetman Kyrille Razoumoffsky, and a creature of Beſtuſcheff. The Czar, conſtrained to give way to the repreſentations of his friends, ordered Teploff to be impriſoned, but neglected to have him interrogated in ſuch a manner as to draw from him a confeſſion that might have led to a detection of the conſpiracy.

The perſons who had at firſt reſolved to carry off the Czar when he ſhould re-appear at Peterſburgh, thought, on more mature deliberation, that it would be rather dangerous to wait for that moment, and that

that it was better to execute their deſign immediately on his arrival at Peterſhoff. This plan was well digeſted; each of the conſpirators reckoned on his own courage, and on the fidelity of his aſſociates, when all of a ſudden the plot was diſcovered; but this diſcovery was the effect merely of chance, and, by ſingular good fortune, the accident which threatened to diſconcert their meaſures, emboldened them, and their very precipitation inſured ſucceſs. From an exceſs of miſtruſt or of precaution, Princeſs d'Aſchkoff and Odart had placed about the perſon of each of the leaders of the conſpiracy, a confidential man, who gave them an exact account of every thing that thoſe leaders did, ſo that had there appeared among them the ſlighteſt ſymptom of treachery, they would inſtantly have detected it, and turned their thoughts to the means of ſafety or of vengeance.

Paſſeck had ſeduced the ſoldiers of the company of guards in which he was lieutenant. One of thoſe ſoldiers, who took it for granted that Paſſeck acted perfectly in concert with his captain, aſked the captain what day they were to take up arms againſt the Emperor. That officer, ſurpriſed at the queſtion, had the addreſs however to conceal it, and giving evaſive anſwers to the ſoldier's inquiries, drew from him the ſecret of the conſpiracy, and inſtantly went to diſcloſe it to the chancery of the regiment. This happened about nine in the evening. Paſſeck was put under arreſt. But they put him at firſt in a room where he had time to write theſe words with a pencil on a ſlip of paper:—"Proceed inſtantly to execu-"tion or we are undone." The man ſet over him appears at the door. Paſſeck not knowing him, but ſenſible that every thing was at ſtake, gives him the billet, ſaying, if he would carry it directly to the hetman Razoumoffſky, he might depend on being handſomely rewarded. The ſentinel ran to the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and put the billet into her hand. Panin had that moment arrived. She propoſed to

him to proceed immediately, alleging that the only means of eſcaping the Czar's vengeance was to prevent it, and that whatever might be that Prince's imbecillity, if he was allowed time to put himſelf on his defence, it would be impoſſible to get the better of him. But whether it was that Panin really believed the enterpriſe could not ſucceed, or whether his intellectual ability wanted the boldneſs neceſſary for entering on action, he did not yield to the reaſoning of the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and after having ſaid it would be better to wait till next day to ſettle the mode of proceedure, took his leave.

The emiſſaries of the Princeſs had taken care, meanwhile, to warn the other conſpirators. As ſoon as Panin left her, ſhe habited herſelf as a man, and went to join Orloff and his friends on the green-bridge, where ſhe was accuſtomed to meet them, to prevent ſuſpicion by collecting at her houſe too many ſubaltern officers and ſoldiers. Theſe conſpirators were neither leſs uneaſy than Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, nor leſs eager to haſten the execution of their purpoſe. A delay till to-morrow appeared to them fatal, and undoubtedly would have proved ſo. It was neceſſary to act during the ſilence of the night, and to leave neither to the Czar the power of prevention, nor to the troops and the people time to arm in defence of their Prince. The reſolution was unanimous. While Gregory Orloff, one of his brothers, and his friend Bibikoff, repaired to the barracks to prepare the ſoldiery of their party to enter upon action at the firſt ſignal, another of Orloff's brothers, Alexis, undertook the perilous charge of going to find the Empreſs at Peterſhoff.

Under pretence of leaving the apartments at liberty for the enſuing feſtivity of that place, and, in truth, to have a better opportunity of making her eſcape, Catharine had confined herſelf to a pavilion, which went by the name of Monplaiſir, and ſituated at the extremity of the gardens, on the banks of the gulf of

of Finland. There ſhe had ſtationed, without any apparent deſign, a boat, both to ſerve occaſionally for the ſecret viſits of her favourites, and to convey her off to Sweden, ſhould the conſpiracy be diſcovered. Gregory Orloff having given his brother a key to the pavilion, inſtructed him in the manner of getting thither, and Princeſs d'Aſchkoff gave him a note addreſſed to the Empreſs, requiring her immediate attendance.

It was now two o'clock in the morning. The Empreſs, expecting no one, had gone to bed, and fallen into a profound ſleep, when ſhe felt herſelf haſtily awaked, and beheld a ſoldier ſtanding by her bed-ſide, whom ſhe did not know. Without delivering Princeſs d'Aſchkoff's note, that ſoldier ſaid to Catharine :—" Your Majeſty has not a moment to " loſe ; prepare to follow me :" and inſtantly diſappeared. Catharine, aſtoniſhed, perplexed, ſummoned Ivanowna. They dreſſed themſelves with precipitation, and aſſumed a diſguiſe which rendered their perſons indiſtinguiſhable by the ſentinels on guard at the palace. Scarcely were they ready, when the ſoldier re-enters, and informed the Empreſs, that a carriage waited for her at the garden-gate. It was a coach which, under pretence of having relays for country excurſions, the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff had kept in waiting for ſeveral days, at a farm two or three miles from Peterſhoff, and which Alexis Orloff ſent one of his comrades to order up. The Empreſs, without heſitation, advanced up to the carriage, and mounted. Alexis Orloff took the reins and drove away. They were moving with extreme rapidity, when all of a ſudden the horſes ſtopped, quite ſpent with fatigue. It was neceſſary to alight. Alexis Orloff and his companion employed every effort, but in vain, to make the horſes go on. They were ſtill at a very conſiderable diſtance from Peterſburgh, in the middle of the night, in a ſtate of complete embarraſſment, and the danger became more preſſing every moment;

moment; at laſt the Empreſs determined to finiſh the journey on foot. She had even made ſome progreſs this way with her conductors, but fortunately they fell in with a peaſant's cart. Alexis Orloff engages it, the Empreſs gets up, and off again they drive. They preſently hear the noiſe of another carriage advancing with uncommon ſpeed. It was Gregory Orloff who, calculating the moments, had taken the alarm at not ſeeing the Empreſs appear. He knew her, he cries aloud, that they waited only for her, and, without waiting for a reply, takes the lead and flies away to receive her at Peterſburgh. At length Catharine, overwhelmed with ſolicitude and fatigue, but ſufficiently miſtreſs of herſelf to aſſume an air of compoſure and ſerenity, arrived in that capital at ſeven in the morning.

She repaired immediately to the quarters of the Iſmaïloff-guards, three companies of whom were gained over, but whom the conſpirators would not permit to quit their barracks before Catharine appeared, from fear of miſſing their blow through too much precipitation. On the report of the Empreſs's arrival, about thirty of the ſoldiers, half naked, ran to receive her with ſhouts of joy. Surprized and alarmed at ſeeing ſuch a ſmall number of ſoldiers, ſhe remained for a few moments ſilent; then ſaid to them with a faltering voice:—"That extreme danger "had conſtrained her to have recourſe to their pro-"tection; that the Czar intended to have both her-"ſelf and ſon put to death that very night; that ſhe "had no means of eſcaping aſſaſſination but flight, "and that ſhe repoſed ſufficient confidence in their "kindneſs to commit herſelf into their hands."

All who heard her were fired with indignation, and ſwore they would die in her defence. Their example and the hetman Razoumoffsky, their colonel, who preſently made his appearance, ſoon brought over the reſt of the ſoldiery, whom curioſity attracted in crouds around Catharine, and all of them at the ſame inſtant

ſtant acknowledged her as their ſovereign. They immediately ſent for the chaplain of the regiment of Iſmaïloff, and that prieſt adminiſtered, over a crucifix, the oath to the troops. Some voices were diſtinguiſhable amidſt this tumult, which proclaimed Catharine regent; but thoſe voices were ſpeedily ſuppreſſed by the menaces of Orloff, and by the more numerous cries of *Long live the Empreſs!* The guards, Simeonoffsky and Preobraginſky, already imitated the example ſet by thoſe of Iſmaïloff. The officers quietly put themſelves at the head of their companies, as if they had been privy to the conſpiracy. Two only, of the regiment of Preobraginſky, had the courage to oppoſe their men; but they were inſtantly put under arreſt; and among thoſe who had been gained over, no one failed except Major Tſchepeloff and Lieutenant Pouſchkin, whom the Empreſs ordered to be put under arreſt, with an intimation, that ſhe had no farther occaſion for their ſervices.

While the hetman Razoumoffsky, Prince Wolkonſky, Count de Bruce, Baron Stragonoff, many other general officers, and Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, remained around Catharine, and ſhe was thus making ſure of the three regiments of guards, Gregory Orloff haſtened to the regiment of artillery, to draw them into the revolt, and conduct them to the preſence of the Empreſs. But though he was paymaſter to that corps, and rather a favourite with the ſoldiers, they to a man refuſed to follow him, and called for orders from their general, Villebois. That officer had appeared for ſome time to enjoy the good graces of Catharine, and ſtill believed that he did ſo; but, as ſhe had found him poſſeſſed of a probity too ſevere to admit of her entertaining any hope that he would be induced to take part in the conſpiracy, ſhe had not dared to diſcover it to him; and, at the moment when one of the friends of Orloff appeared, and told him that the Empreſs commanded his attendance with his regiment, to join the guards at the barracks, he

he demanded if the Emperor was dead.—The friend of Orloff, without making any reply to that queſtion, repeated the ſame orders; and Villebois, ſtruck with aſtoniſhment, went unattended to preſent himſelf to the Empreſs. Beholding Catharine encircled with a prodigious croud, he had little difficulty in gueſſing what ſhe wanted with him; but ſtill reſtrained by the fidelity he had ſworn to the Emperor, or by the danger to which he believed that Princeſs expoſed herſelf, had the courage to repreſent to her the obſtacles ſtill to be ſurmounted, and obſerved, that ſhe ought to have foreſeen theſe. She interrupted him haughtily, ſaying, ſhe had ſent for him not to conſult him about what ſhe ought to foreſee, but to know what he intended to do. "To obey your Majeſty," replied Villebois diſconcerted; and went to put himſelf at the head of his regiment, and to ſurrender the arſenals to the friends of Catharine.

Such ſignal ſucceſſes had coſt the Empreſs only two hours. She ſaw herſelf already ſurrounded by two thouſand warriors, and a conſiderable part of the inhabitants of Peterſburgh, who mechanically followed the movements of the ſoldiery, and emulouſly joined in their applauſes. The hetman, Razoumoffsky, adviſed her now to repair to the church of Kaſan, where every thing was prepared for her reception. She put herſelf in motion towards it with her numerous retinue. The windows, the doors of every houſe were crouded with ſpectators, who mingled their acclamations with the ſhouts of the ſoldiers. The archbiſhop of Novogorod, inveſted with his ſacerdotal robes, and encompaſſed by a great number of the clergy, to whom their long beards and white hairs communicated a venerable air, were in waiting for her at the altar. He placed the imperial crown upon her head, proclaimed her aloud ſovereign of all the Ruſſias, by the name of Catharine II. and at the ſame time declared the young Grand-duke, Paul Petrowitz, her ſucceſſor. A *Te Deum*



CATHERINE II ALEXIEWNA

Empress of Russia, at the Age of 34 Years.

Published Feb.y 12.th 1800, by T. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

Deum was afterwards chanted, accompanied by the huzzas of the multitude. This ceremony being finiſhed, the Empreſs repaired to the palace which had been occupied by Elizabeth. The gates were thrown open for the admiſſion of all who wiſhed to come in. For ſeveral hours the people flocked thither, falling on their knees before Catharine, and tendering her the oath of allegiance.

The conſpirators, meanwhile took care to viſit the different quarters of the city, and ſaw them put in a ſtate of defence. They ſtationed guards in proper ſituations, and planted cannon loaded, and matches burning, without the leaſt interruption from any one. Prince George of Holſtein, uncle to the Emperor, ventured to ſhew himſelf, attended by a handful of ſoldiers: he was inſtantly ſurrounded, compelled to ſurrender, loaded with abuſe, roughly handled, and dragged to a dungeon, from which the Empreſs releaſed him a few hours afterward, and put him under arreſt in his own houſe. Not only was nothing like reſiſtance oppoſed to the partiſans of Catharine, but no one of the friends of the Czar ever thought of informing him what was going on at Peterſburgh. One man alone, a foreigner of the name of Breſſan, who owed his fortune to that Prince, had the courage to demonſtrate his gratitude and fidelity to him. He got a domeſtic to diſguiſe himſelf in the habit of a peaſant, and diſpatched him with a billet, which he had orders to put into the Emperor's own hand. This meſſenger had juſt paſſed at the moment when the conſpirators arrived to place a guard on the bridge which leads out of Peterſburgh, and was proceeding to Oranienbaum, when he got information on the road that the Czar was already at Peterſhoff.

Every thing ſeemed to concur in favour of the conſpiracy. On the road to Peterſhoff, and at ſome diſtance from Peterſburgh, was encamped a regiment of ſixteen hundred men, among whom no manner

of

of intelligence had been diſſeminated, and there was reaſon to apprehend, that on the firſt tidings of a revolt, the Czar would give them orders to join his Holſteineſe troops. Scarcely were meaſures concerted to prevent him, when Colonel Olſſoufieff, who commanded that regiment, and who had heard ſome confuſed rumour of what was paſſing in the capital, preſented himſelf to procure clearer information. The conſpirators get round him, addreſs him with a ſpirit of enthuſiaſm, perſuade him, and Olſſoufieff returns immediately to give up his regiment to Catharine. At the moment he was haranguing his men, orders arrive from Peter for the regiment to march immediately to join him. The ſoldiers, ſeduced from their duty, exclaimed as one man, that they no longer acknowledged Peter III. as Emperor, and immediately proceeded on their march to ſtrengthen the hands of the conſpiracy. Before the cloſe of the day, Catharine had already ſecured the ſupport of fifteen thouſand choſen troops. The city was in a formidable ſtate of defence. A ſtrict diſcipline was every where maintained, and through ſingular good fortune, not a ſingle drop of blood had been ſpilled.

What proved of the greateſt ſervice to Catharine, was the intereſt which her partiſans inſpired in her behalf, by propagating reports on all ſides, that the Czar had determined that very day to have her and her ſon taken off. This atrocious falſhood was believed without examination, and ſucceſs was the reward of calumny.

When the Empreſs got to the palace, ſhe immediately ſent for her ſon, Paul Petrowitz. A detachment, at the head of which marched a confidential officer, was diſpatched to eſcort him. On awaking in the midſt of ſoldiers, this young Prince, who had heard frequent talk of the Czar's deſigns againſt him, was ſeized with a dangerous fright. Panin took him in his arms, and carried him to his mother. Catharine then came forward with him to a balcony, and held

held him up to preſent him to the people, whoſe acclamations redoubled at ſight of the child, becauſe they wiſhed to diſtinguiſh in him the perſon of the new Emperor.

A rumour was ſuddenly ſpread abroad, that Peter had breathed his laſt, and that they were carrying his body to interment. Silence the moſt profound ſucceeded to the ſhouts of the multitude. A number of ſoldiers, dreſſed in black cloaks, with flambeaux in their hands, walked in proceſſion round a magnificent coffin, preceded by prieſts chanting the burial ſervice, and the whole paſſed through the middle of the croud. But this fictitious funeral was undoubtedly nothing more than an additional trick, which the conſpirators had imagined to deceive the people, and intimidate the partiſans of the Czar.

The grandees who, for the moſt part, had taken no part in the conſpiracy, and who received information of its ſucceſs on their awakening, repaired immediately to the palace, where, conſtrained to ſuppreſs their aſtoniſhment and indignation, they joined their homage and oath of allegiance to that already taken to Catharine by the multitude. The principal conſpirators, aſſembled round that Princeſs, then held a council, in which it was reſolved to take advantage of the diſpoſitions of the army, and, without delay, to march ſtraight againſt the Emperor; but in the mean time, to put the Empreſs beyond the reach of any attack by water, or rather to humour the ſoldiery, who imagined that it was poſſible, at every moment, to ſurpriſe and diſpatch her, they eſcorted her from Elizabeth's palace to an ancient palace of wood, which overlooks the grand ſquare, and which they encompaſſed with troops.

Toward noon, this Princeſs, completely miſtreſs of Peterſburgh, cauſed to be diſperſed all over the city, and to be delivered to the foreign miniſters, a manifeſto which the Piedmonteſe Odart had got ſecretly printed

printed ſome days before, and which was conceived in theſe terms:

"We, CATHARINE II. Empreſs of all the Ruſſias, "to our faithful ſubjects.

"All true lovers of their country are but too deeply "ſenſible of the danger which threatened the Ruſſian "empire. In the firſt place, our orthodox religion "was ſhaken to the foundation, the canons of the "Greek church ſubverted, and there was juſt ground "to apprehend the moſt grievous of all calamities, "in beholding the orthodoxy, anciently eſtabliſhed "in Ruſſia, transformed into a foreign religion which "is to ſuperſede it. In the ſecond place, the glory "of Ruſſia, exalted to the higheſt pinnacle by her "victorious arms, and at the price of her blood, has "juſt been ſacrificed to her enemies, even by the "peace recently concluded, while the interior ar-"rangements of the empire, which conſtitute the ſe-"licity of our beloved country, were trampled under "foot.

"Deeply affected by the perils to which our lov-"ing ſubjects were expoſed, and above all, incapa-"ble of reſiſting their ſincere and unanimous wiſhes, "we have mounted our imperial throne of Ruſſia."

While this manifeſto was in circulation, the Empreſs, decorated with the ribbon of St. Andrew, and dreſſed in the uniform of the guards, which ſhe had borrowed of a very young officer, named Talizin, mounted on horſeback, and rode through the ranks, attended by Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, who likewiſe wore a uniform. It was upon this occaſion that Potemkin, an enſign in the regiment of horſe-guards, obſerving that Catharine had no ſword-knot, advanced to make a tender of his. Potemkin's horſe, accuſtomed to the evolutions of a ſquadron, would not for ſome time be ſeparated from that which Catharine rode, and afforded her an opportunity of remarking the grace and agility of the perſon who,

ſince

ſince then, acquired ſuch an unbounded empire over her.

The troops, among whom beer and brandy were inceſſantly diſtributed, as inceſſantly expreſſed their ſatisfaction by loud *huzzas!* and toſſing up their hats and caps. One regiment alone partook not of this intoxication: it was a regiment of cavalry, of which Peter had been colonel, when only Grand-duke, and which, on his acceſſion to the throne, he had incorporated with the guards. The officers, having to a man refuſed to acknowledge Catharine, were put under arreſt, and replaced by officers from other regiments; and the ſoldiers, by their melancholy ſilence, preſented a ſtriking contraſt to the noiſy mirth which ſurrounded them.

But the Empreſs was too powerful to be under any apprehenſion from that regiment, and the troops began to file off from the capital to march againſt the Czar. Catharine then went to dinner oppoſite to an open window, in ſight of the ſoldiers, and of a vaſt multitude of perſons aſſembled from curioſity in the grand ſquare.

Peter had as yet no ſuſpicion of what was going forward. Nay, his ſecurity was ſo great that, in the morning, he gave orders to arreſt a faithful officer who, having had, the evening before, ſome indications of the conſpiracy, travelled through the night to Oranienbaum, thinking it his duty to impart the ſecret to his maſter. That Prince then ſet out in a calaſh, with his miſtreſs, his favourites, and the ladies of his court, on the road to Peterſhoff, where he propoſed, the day after, to celebrate the feſtival of St. Peter with all poſſible magnificence. Several other carriages followed that of the Czar, and this numerous retinue was proceeding at a prodigious rate, and talking gaily of the pleaſures they had in proſpect, when the aid-de-camp general, Goudowitz, who had taken the lead on horſeback, was perceived riding back at full ſpeed. Goudowitz had met on

the road one of Catharine's chamberlains, coming on foot to meet his maſter, to inform him of the Empreſs's elopement, and of the uneaſineſs which was felt all over the family at Peterſhoff. On hearing this unexpected news, Goudowitz had turned round his horſe, and galloping up to the Czar's carriage called to the coachman to ſtop. Peter ſurprized, and even ſomewhat nettled, unable to conjecture what could bring his aid-de-camp back, aſked him if he was mad. Goudowitz came up and whiſpered a few words in his ear. On this Peter, violently agitated and pale as aſhes, alights from the carriage, and retires with Goudowitz, to interrogate him more at his eaſe. He afterwards returned toward the carriage, and having entreated the ladies to alight, ſhewed them a gate of the park, by which he deſired them to come and join him on foot at the caſtle, remounts his carriage followed by ſome of his retinue, and ſets off with the utmoſt precipitation.

On arriving at Peterſhoff, the Emperor flew to the pavilion which Catharine had occupied, and in his extreme confuſion and embarraſſment, ſearched for her as if ſhe could have been concealed under the bed, or in ſome cupboard. He teized all the attendants with queſtion on queſtion; no one could give him any ſatisfaction. Thoſe who, poſſeſſed of more penetration than the reſt, already foreſaw the full extent of his calamity, carefully avoided to ſay any thing that might terrify him. The Counteſs de Woronzoff, his miſtreſs, and the other ladies who came through the alleys of the garden, did not yet know what could have induced the Czar to leave them on the middle of the high-road. As ſoon as Peter perceived the Counteſs, he exclaimed:—"Romanowna, "will you believe me now? Catharine has eloped. "I told you truly that ſhe was up to every thing."—

Meanwhile ſome peaſants, returned from Peterſburgh, related to the Emperor's domeſtics what they knew of the inſurrection, and the domeſtics circulated

lated the news in whiſpers among their fellows, but ſpoke not a word of the matter either to their maſter or to his courtiers. A gloomy miſtruſt already reigned round the ill-fated monarch. It ſeemed as if a deadly preſentiment were, in every heart, the forerunner of his downfal, and overwhelmed himſelf with terror and perplexity. By and by courage failed him to aſk any more queſtions, and no one dared to tell him the truth. At laſt, ſuddenly appeared, in the midſt of this dejected aſſemblage, a country fellow who advanced with a profound reverence, and, without uttering a ſingle word, took from his boſom a ſealed billet which he delivered to the Emperor. This ſeeming peaſant was Breſſan's ſervant. The Emperor took the billet, run it over rapidly with his eyes, and then reading it aloud to the circle about him, conveyed intelligence of the revolt which had in the morning broken out at Peterſburgh; that the troops had taken up arms in favour of Catharine; that ſhe was going to have herſelf crowned in the church of Kaſan, and that all the people apparently took part in the inſurrection.

The Czar ſeemed to be overwhelmed at this news. His courtiers endeavoured to infuſe into him a confidence which they themſelves poſſeſſed not. The Chancellor Woronzoff alleged, that undoubtedly Catharine had been able to make an attempt to ſtir up the ſoldiery and the populace, but that this commotion could have no dangerous conſequences, and that if the Czar would conſent to let him proceed directly to Peterſburgh, he would engage to bring back the Empreſs to a ſenſe of her duty. The Czar, without heſitation, accepted the chancellor's propoſition, and that miniſter repaired to the capital. On entering the palace, he found the Empreſs encircled by a multitude of people who were doing homage to her. He nevertheleſs had the boldneſs at firſt to repreſent to her the danger to which ſhe was expoſing herſelf.—"You may, Madam," ſays he, "be for a while ſuc-

"ceſsful, but it cannot be of long duration. Ought "you then to confide in the blind zeal of your im- "prudent friends? Ought you, for the ſake of a "momentary reign with them, to render your conſort "an irreconcilable enemy? Wherefore take up arms "againſt him, when it is ſo eaſily in your power to "carry every point by gentle methods, and by the "aſcendancy of your underſtanding. Reflect, that "the regiments of guards do not compoſe the whole "armies of the Czar, and that the inhabitants of "Peterſburgh are but a very feeble part of the Ruſ- "ſian nation." Catharine calmly replied:—"You "ſee how it is: I am not the agent here; I only "comply with the earneſt wiſhes of the nation." The chancellor, who beheld in effect the croud increaſing every inſtant, and reading in the inflamed eyes of ſome of the conſpirators, that his repreſentations might ſpeedily be productive of fatal conſequences to himſelf, forgot his duty, took the oaths with the reſt, and added:—"I will ſerve you, Ma- "dam, in the council, but am totally uſeleſs to you "in the field. Even my preſence might be offenſive "to ſome who have now heard me; and, that I may "not give them umbrage, I beſeech your Majeſty to "permit me to remain in my own houſe, under the "guard of a confidential officer." To this the Empreſs conſented. She ſent him home under a prohibition to ſtir abroad. By this means the chancellor found himſelf at once ſecured from the vengeance of Catharine's partiſans and from the Czar's ſuſpicions.

At ſix in the evening Catharine a ſecond time mounted on horſeback, and with a drawn ſword in her hand, and an oaken bough round her head, haſtened to join the troops which were on their march. Princeſs d'Aſchkoff and the hetman Razoumoffsky rode by her ſide. A croud of courtiers followed cloſe behind; the contention was who ſhould diſcover the greateſt ardour to partake in her dangers and in her triumph. Her army was farther augmented by 3,000

koſacs

koſacs well mounted, whom the Emperor ordered to file off toward Pomerania, and to whom the hetman diſpatched orders to come and join him.

The Czar, meantime, ever ſince the chancellor's departure, continued a prey to the moſt acute pangs of ſolicitude. He every inſtant received freſh intelligence of the progreſs of the revolution. It remained no longer a matter of doubt. Surrounded by women bathed in tears, and young courtiers incapable of giving advice, he rambled hurriedly through the alleys of Peterſhoff, forming twenty different ſchemes without executing any one; ſometimes uttering dreadful imprecations againſt Catharine, ſometimes dictating unavailing manifeſtoes. When the hour of dining came, he ordered the cloth to be laid by the ſea-ſide, and appeared for a while to have given a truce to his mournful reflections. But it was not long before the danger with which he was threatened ſtared him anew in the face, and he ſent orders to the 2000 Holſteinese ſoldiers whom he had left at Oranienbaum to join him immediately with their artillery. It was then that old Mareſchal Munich made his appearance.

Munich, whom the Emperor reſpected for his high military reputation, and whom he had almoſt diſguſted by his eagerneſs to introduce the new Pruſſian exerciſe, Munich alone was qualified to give him ſalutary advice, and he did give it.—"Czar, "your troops are at hand," ſaid the aged warrior. "Let us put ourſelves at their head, and march di- "rectly to Peterſburgh. You ſtill have numerous "friends in that city: the moment you appear they "will all take up arms in your defence. The greateſt "part of the guards are miſled but for the moment, "and will again range themſelves under your ban- "ners. At any rate, if we muſt come to blows, be "aſſured that the rebels will not long diſpute the "victory with you." The Czar was on the point of adopting this reſolution, but it was by no means ac-

ceptable to a herd of timid courtiers; and, while preparation was made for marching, news arrived that the Empreſs was advancing, with an army reported to be 20,000 ſtrong. The women on this exclaimed that it would be better to return to Oranienbaum. The Emperor himſelf appeared to be determined not to expoſe his perſon.—"Well then!" reſumed Munich, "if you are afraid of combatting the rebels, do "not wait for them, at leaſt, in a place where you "cannot defend yourſelf to advantage. Neither Ora-"nienbaum nor Peterſhoff are able to ſtand a ſiege; "but Cronſtadt offers you a ſecure aſylum. Cron-"ſtadt is ſtill ſubject to your authority. You will "there find a formidable fleet and a numerous gar-"riſon. From Cronſtadt, in a word, you will eaſily "bring Peterſburgh back to a ſenſe of duty."

This advice was received with univerſal applauſe. General Lievers was inſtantly diſpatched to take the command of Cronſtadt; and ſcarcely had they got ready two yachts to convey the Czar, when an officer arrived with an aſſurance that confidence might be repoſed in the fidelity of this place. Peter, who imagined he already ſaw Catharine at the gates of Peterſhoff, embarked with precipitation, followed by his dejected court and by the intrepid Munich.

It appeared as if a dreadful fatality rendered abortive the ſageſt meaſures that Peter could adopt. In the ſpace of a few hours the face of things was totally changed at Cronſtadt. The fleet and the regiments which had juſt received General Lievers with ſhouts of joy, ſwearing loyalty to the Czar, were already in a ſtate of revolt: Lievers had exchanged his command for a priſon, and this change was effected by a trick. During the firſt hours of the inſurrection, and in concerting the meaſures at firſt adopted for inſuring the ſucceſs of it, no one of the conſpirators had paid any attention to the port of Cronſtadt. It was not even till after mid-day that ſome one, reflecting on the importance of that place, pointed

ed out the blunder they had committed in overlooking it. Admiral Talizin immediately makes an offer to go and take poſſeſſion. It was accepted. He embarks on board his own barge, ſtrictly forbids his boat's crew to tell whence they came, and arrives at Cronſtadt. General Lievers, who remained on the quay, expecting every moment the Emperor's arrival, runs to meet Talizin, and artfully endeavours to diſcover whether he was of Catharine's party; but Talizin, ſtill more cunning, pretends ignorance of the effects of the revolt, and told him, that having heard at his country houſe certain confuſed reports of a commotion at Peterſburgh, he had haſtened down to the fleet where his duty lay. Lievers ſwallows the tale and quits him. Talizin inſtantly repairs to the ſeamens' quarter, harangues them, informs them of the ſucceſs which had attended the Empreſs, tells them the beſt thing they could do was to declare in her favour, diſtributes money and brandy among them, and engages them to follow him and arreſt the commandant. Several ſoldiers joined the ſeamen. Lievers is immediately committed to priſon, and Talizin remains maſter in Catharine's name, of a place the poſſeſſion of which would have ſaved the Czar, or muſt have at leaſt furniſhed him with the means of making a long and vigorous defence.

At the very moment this ſcene was paſſing, the Emperor appears off the harbour. Talizin had already made the neceſſary diſpoſitions to prevent his landing. A part of the garriſon, under arms, lines the ſhore. The cannon are pointed, the matches lighted, and, on the inſtant that the firſt yacht attempted to land, the ſentinel demands—"Who reigns?" "Long live the Emperor," was returned from the yacht.—"There is no emperor," replied the ſentinel. Peter got up, and, half opening his cloak to diſplay the ribbon of his order, ſays—"What! do you not "know me?" "No," replied a thouſand voices at once, "we no longer acknowledge an Emperor; Long

"live the Empreſs Catharine!" Talizin on this threatens to ſink the yacht to the bottom, unleſs ſhe inſtantly made off. The Czar, in conſternation, ſhrunk back; but Goudowitz ſtops him, and, laying hold of one of the draw-bridges which join the different entrances of the harbour—"Put your hand in "mine," ſaid he to him, "and let us leap on ſhore. "No one will dare to fire upon you, and Cronſtadt "will ſtill be your Majeſty's." Munich ſupports the advice of Goudowitz, but to no purpoſe. Peter, in a ſtate of deſperation, thinks only of flight, and flees to hide himſelf in the cabin of the yacht, amidſt a group of frighted women. They do not ſo much as take time to weigh the anchor, but cut their cable, and make off by force of oars.

When the yachts had got to a ſafe diſtance from the port, the rowers lay upon their oars. The night was extremely fine, and Munich and Goudowitz, ſeated on the deck, were ſadly and in ſilence contemplating the ſtarry heavens, and the ſmoothneſs of the water. The captain went down into the cabin to aſk the Czar whither he was to carry him. That Prince then ſent for Munich, and ſaid:—"Field-"mareſchal, I perceive that I have too long neglect-"ed to follow your advice; but you behold to what "extremity I am reduced. Do you, who have eſ-"caped from ſo many dangers, inform me what I "ought to do." "Go immediately and join the "ſquadron which is at Revel," anſwered Munich; "take a veſſel, paſs over into Pomerania, put your-"ſelf at the head of your army, and I promiſe you "that in ſix weeks Peterſburgh, and the reſt of the "empire, will be ſubjected to your authority."

The women and the courtiers, as if they had actually been all in concert to ruin the ill-fated Czar, immediately exclaimed that the rowers would want ſtrength to carry them ſo far as Revel.—"Very well!" replied the veteran Munich, "we will all of us put "a hand to the oar." But a propoſal ſo generous could

not

not be acceptable to that timid and perfidious court. They ſhrunk from it. They emulouſly ſtrove to aſſure the Emperor that his danger was not ſo great as he apprehended; that Catharine could only mean to accommodate matters with him, and that it was better to negociate than to fight. The feeble Prince, whoſe greateſt misfortune it was never to know how to adopt a bold reſolution, yielded to thoſe repreſentations, and ordered the captain to ſteer for Oranienbaum. It was about four o'clock in the morning when they reached the ſhore. A few domeſtics, alarmed for his ſafety, came down to receive the Emperor. He deſired them not to ſpread abroad the news of his return, ſhut himſelf up in his apartment, with orders to admit no perſon whatever, and wrote ſecretly to the Empreſs. At ſix he appeared with an air ſufficiently tranquil. Thoſe of his Holſteineſe guards who had returned to Oranienbaum ran up and ſurrounded him, ſhedding tears of joy and affection. They kiſſed his hands, they embraced his knees, they preſſed him to give them orders to march againſt the army of the Empreſs, and ſwore that they would to a man ſacrifice their own lives in defending his. The aged Munich once more laid hold of this opportunity to exhort the Emperor to ſtand on his defence. —"Come," ſays he, "march againſt the rebels. I "will go before you, and no one ſhall come at you "but through my body." But the counſels of Munich produced no more effect on Peter than had the noble ſelf-devotedneſs of the Holſtein troops.

The Empreſs, meanwhile, at the head of her army, had halted at Kraſnoï-Kabac (the Red-inn), a ſmall village about ſeven verſtes from Peterſburgh, and taken up her reſidence in a cottage, where ſhe reſted ſome hours on a couch compoſed of the cloaks of the officers in her train. At day-break, Gregory Orloff, with a band of reſolute volunteers, went to reconnoitre the vicinity of Peterſhoff, and having found only a few peaſants armed with ſcythes, which they had

had collected the evening before, diſperſed them with blows of the back of the ſabre, making them cry out along with him—"Long live the Empreſs!" At five o'clock Catharine re-mounted, and advanced to the monaſtery of Saint-Serge, where ſhe halted a ſecond time. She was ſtill in this place when ſhe received the Czar's letter, in which he made an acknowledgment of his miſconduct, and propoſed to divide with her the ſovereign authority. But Catharine made no reply, detained the meſſenger, and preſently began to march again.

The Czar then finding that the Empreſs was at hand, ordered one of his horſes to be ſaddled, with a deſign to fly off, alone and in diſguiſe, toward the frontiers of Poland. But ever timid, ever irreſolute, he preſently after gave orders to diſmantle his little fortreſs of Oranienbaum, as a proof to Catharine that he did not mean to make any reſiſtance, and wrote her a ſecond letter imploring her mercy, and aſking forgiveneſs in the moſt humiliating terms. He at the ſame time aſſured her, that he ceded to her the imperial crown of Ruſſia, and entreated ſhe would grant him a penſion, with permiſſion to return to Holſtein. Catharine did not deign to make any reply to this letter any more than ſhe had to the firſt: but after having converſed a conſiderable time with the chamberlain Iſmaïloff, who had brought it to her, and whom ſhe eaſily perſuaded to betray his maſter, ſent him back to the Czar to haſten his determination to ſubmit implicitly to her commands.

Iſmaïloff returned to Oranienbaum, and preſented himſelf to the Czar, in company with his ſole domeſtic. The Emperor had at that time about him ſix hundred men of his Holſteineſe guard. He ordered them to withdraw, and cloſetted himſelf with the chamberlain, who exhorted him to abandon his troops, and go directly to the Empreſs, aſſuring him of a moſt gracious reception, and of obtaining from her every thing he could wiſh. Peter heſitated ſome time; but

Iſmaïloff

Iſmaïloff having told him, that unleſs he made diſpatch his life would be in danger, he ſuffered himſelf to be over-ruled by that traitor. Immediately Iſmaïloff made him get into a carriage, with Romanowna Woronzoff and Goudowitz, and ſet off for Peterſhoff. The unfortunate Czar imagined that ſuch entire reſignation would ſoften the heart of Catharine. He was ſpeedily undeceived. When his carriage paſſed through the middle of the army, the koſacs, whom the Emperor firſt met, and who had never ſeen him, preſerved a mournful ſilence; he himſelf underwent very painful emotions: afterwards the repeated ſhout of *Long live Catharine!* raiſed by the reſt of the troops, plunged him in deſpair.

On ſtepping from the carriage, Romanowna Woronzoff was carried away by the ſoldiers, who ſtripped off her ribbon, with which her own ſiſter, the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, was almoſt inſtantly decorated. The aide-de-camp general, Goudowitz, was inſulted in like manner; but preſerved the greateſt coolneſs of temper, and haughtily upbraided the rebels with their inſolence and treaſon. The Emperor was conducted to the top of the grand ſtair-caſe. There the inſignia of his order were torn off, he was ſtripped of his clothes, and on ſearching the pockets a good many diamonds and other jewels were found. After having remained ſome time in his ſhirt, bare-footed, an object of deriſion to the ſoldiery, he was dreſſed in a ſorry night-gown, and ſhut up in ſolitude, with a guard at his chamber door.

Count Panin, by order of the Empreſs, waited on this Prince, and had a long converſation with him. He told him that the Empreſs intended to detain him but a very ſhort time under confinement, and that ſhe would ſend him back to Holſtein as he deſired. To this promiſe he ſubjoined a great many more, though aſſuredly no deſign was entertained of obſerving any one of them. Finally, he made him tranſcribe and ſign the following declaration.

"During

"During the ſhort period of my abſolute ſway over "the Ruſſian empire, I have diſcovered that my "ſtrength is by no means ſufficient to ſuſtain ſuch a "load, and that it far tranſcends my ability to govern "that empire, not only in the exerciſe of ſovereign "authority, but in any manner whatever: I have "accordingly perceived the convulſions which muſt "have been followed by its total ruin, and covered "myſelf with everlaſting ſhame. After mature re-"flection, therefore, on the ſubject, I declare, with-"out any conſtraint, to the empire of Ruſſia, and to "the whole univerſe, that I renounce for life the go-"vernment of the ſaid empire, having no wiſh to rule "over it, either with ſovereign power, or under any "other form of government, without ſo much as the "hope of ever attaining it, by any aid whatever. "In confirmation of which I ſolemnly and ſincerely "ſwear to it, in the preſence of God and of all the "univerſe, having written and ſigned this renuncia-"tion with my own hand."

Armed with this fatal inſtrument, Panin retired. Peter appeared from that time to be more tranquil, and an officer, with a powerful eſcort, almoſt immediately took poſſeſſion of his perſon, and departed, telling him his orders were to conduct him to Robſcha, a ſmall imperial caſtle twenty verſtes diſtant from Peterſburgh.

The capital, meanwhile, remained ſince evening in a ſtate of expectation and uncertainty. No one had arrived there with intelligence of Catharine's ſucceſs. Peter ſtill had friends in that city; and had he poſſeſſed force to combat and repulſe the rebels, Peterſburgh would have received him with cordiality, to prevent his vengeance. The foreign merchants who there abound, were chiefly apprehenſive of the fury of the Ruſſian ſoldiers, who perhaps might have thought, by plundering and murdering them, of making a merit with the Czar. Many of thoſe merchants, accordingly, made haſte to put their moſt valuable ef-

fects

fects on board the ſhips of their reſpective nations, and held themſelves in readineſs to embark. Toward evening, the report of artillery, heard at a diſtance, diffuſed a ſudden alarm over the city; but it was ſoon obſerved that the diſcharges, proceeding at regular intervals, and the Czar having diſpatched no one to make ſure of Peterſburgh for him, this noiſe of cannon could announce only the triumph of the Empreſs. Henceforward tranquillity was reſtored, and hope took place of fear.

Catharine ſlept that night at Peterſhoff, no longer as a priſoner, but as an all-powerful ſovereign. Next day ſhe received at her levee the homage of the grandees who had joined her the evening before, and that of the courtiers and the young women who came from Oranienbaum. Among theſe appeared the father, the brother, and ſeveral other relations of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, who, on ſeeing them proſtrate before the Empreſs, ſaid to her:—"Madam, pardon my fa-"mily. You know I have ſacrificed them to you." Catharine raiſed them up, and gave them her hand to kiſs. Mareſchal Munich likewiſe made his appearance; and the moment ſhe perceived him ſhe ſaid aloud:—"Was it you then, Field-mareſchal, who "propoſed to fight me?" "Yes, Madam," replied Munich, with aſſurance. "Could I do leſs for "the Prince who releaſed me from captivity? But "my duty henceforth binds me to fight for you, and "you will find in me a fidelity ſimilar to that which I "had ſworn to him."

In the afternoon Catharine returned to Peterſburgh. Her entry was triumphant. She rode on horſeback, preceded or followed by the principal conſpirators. The whole army had crowned themſelves with foliage; the cries of joy and the acclamations of the people were confounded with thoſe of the ſoldiery. The croud preſſed into the way through which the Empreſs was to paſs, and kiſſed her hands. The papas had aſſembled in great numbers at the entrance

of

of the palace, and the inſtant ſhe perceived them ſhe diſmounted, and kiſſed the chief of them on the cheek, which, in Ruſſia, is a mark of very high conſideration. During the firſt days which ſucceeded her return to the capital, this Princeſs continued to exhibit herſelf to the multitude with extreme complaiſance. She well knew how eaſy it is to gain the affections of the populace; ſhe took her place in the ſenate, and aſſiſted in the deciſion of ſeveral cauſes. She afterwards held her court with a dignity and eaſe which effaced the very recollection of the ſudden revolution which had ſo recently placed her on the throne. The foreign miniſters appeared with their compliments of congratulation, and ſhe received them with a flattering addreſs adapted to each. Her firſt concern was to remove Prince Ivan from the houſe where he was concealed, and to remand him back to Schluſſelburgh. She then proceeded to beſtow magnificent remuneration on the chiefs of the conſpiracy. Panin was appointed prime miniſter; the Orloffs were raiſed to the title of count; and the favourite, Gregory Orloff, was advanced to the rank of lieutenant-general of the Ruſſian armies, and created knight of the order of St. Alexander Newſky, the ſecond of the empire. Many officers of the guards were promoted. Twenty-four of them obtained conſiderable grants of land, with ſome thouſands of peaſants. The ſtate of the finances admitted not of giving any largeſſes to the ſoldiers, except in brandy and beer: diſtribution of theſe was made, and Catharine treated them with much affability. She ſometimes even went ſo far as to lay herſelf under unpleaſant reſtraints, rather than give them any ground of diſguſt.

Three days after the revolution, a drunken ſoldier dreamed that the Empreſs had been carried off. He gets up, runs over the barracks, and ſpreads the alarm, crying aloud that the Holſtcineſe and Pruſſians had ſeized the Empreſs. The regiment inſtantly

ſtantly flies to arms, ruſhes to the palace, and clamorouſly demands they might ſee Catharine. The hetman Razoumoffsky, informed of this tumult, appears at a window, aſſures them the Empreſs is not carried off, and that after the diſquiet and fatigues ſhe had undergone for ſeveral days, had retired to reſt in perfect ſecurity. But the ſoldiers refuſed to believe him, and the clamour increaſed. The hetman then enters Catharine's aparment, awakens her, ſaying he did not wiſh to excite in her any apprehenſion. "You know," ſaid ſhe haughtily, "that nothing can "intimidate me; but what is the matter?" "The "ſoldiers imagine you are not here. They inſiſt on "ſeeing you," replies Razoumoffsky. "Very well! "they muſt be ſatisfied," returns ſhe; and immediately riſes, dreſſes herſelf, calls for her carriage, and orders them to drive to the church of Kaſan. As ſhe paſſed along the ſoldiers ſurrounded the carriage, aſking one another—"Is that really the Empreſs? Is "that indeed our mother?" When arrived at the church, Catharine ſhews herſelf to them, harangues them, thanks them for their kind concern about her, and ſends them all away perfectly contented.

She valued herſelf on the clemency which ſhe extended to the officers and friends of the Emperor: and if ſome had the mortification of being baniſhed the court, no one was deprived of either property or life. The aid-de-camp general, Goudowitz, Wolkoff and Melgounoff, were the only perſons committed to priſon. The Counteſs de Woronzoff, who had been at firſt treated with indignity by the ſoldiers, was ſent back to the houſe of the ſenator, her father, and the Empreſs forbade any farther inſult to be offered to her.

All the courtiers were then earneſt in their attendance about the ſovereign. They were anxious in their conjectures on whom her favour was to fall; each one flattered himſelf with the hope of obtaining the greateſt ſhare, and no one entertained the ſlighteſt ſuſpicion

ſuſpicion that the heart of this Princeſs had long before given a decided preference to an obſcure officer. The firſt marks of diſtinction conferred on Gregory Orloff appeared as no more than the reward of his ſervices, and not a tribute of love. Princeſs d'Aſchkoff was the firſt to diſcover the ſecret. Jealouſy is ſtill more quick-ſighted than ambition; it is aſſuredly leſs diſcreet; and Madame d'Aſchkoff, not ſatisfied with upbraiding Catharine for a choice which degraded her, diſſeminated the report of it among her friends, and became the inſtrument of effecting her own diſgrace. Every eye was now opened. The leaders of the conſpiracy perceived with indignation that they had been labouring for the advancement of a man whom they had always conſidered as the mere tool of their projects, and ſaw, to their mortification, that in the arts of intrigue this man was greatly their ſuperior.

The moſt zealous partiſans of Catharine were not however free from ſolicitude. Some regiments murmured, and were already repenting their treaſon to their lawful ſovereign. The populace, with whom the tranſition is ſo eaſy from rage to pity, compaſſionated that unfortunate Prince. They forgot his blunders, his oddities, his weakneſſes, and recollected only his good qualities and his hard fate. Thoſe of the ſeamen who had at firſt joined the authors of the revolution, ſeemed to awake out of a fit of profound intoxication, and contemplated with horror the breach of duty into which they had been betrayed. They and their comrades were heard loudly reproaching the guards with having ſold their maſter for beer and brandy. The guards themſelves ſhuddered at the thought of their daring enterprize: ſome of them accuſed others of having baſely ſeduced them into the commiſſion of an abominable crime. From reproachful words they proceeded to blows, and theſe quarrels frequently had bloody conſequences. In ſhort, there was reaſon to apprehend a new inſurrection.

While

While theſe alarms agitated Peterſburgh, the news from Moſcow did not tend greatly to allay them. The governor of this laſt city, informed of the revolution by Catharine's emiſſaries, ordered the five regiments which compoſed the garriſon to appear under arms, and having drawn them up in the grand ſquare of the Kremlin, the ancient palace of the Czars, ſummoned the people to attend, who reſorted thither in great multitudes. This officer then read aloud the oukaſe by which the Empreſs announced her own acceſſion, and the depoſition of her huſband; and, when he had done reading, cried out—"Long live the Empreſs Catharine the Second!" But the people and the ſoldiers remained ſilent. He raiſed the ſame cry a ſecond time; the ſame ſilence reigned. The voice of murmuring only was heard. The troops complained that the regiments of guards had inſolently dared to diſpoſe of the throne. The governor, terrified for the conſequences, then preſſed the other officers to join him. They cried out together—"Long live the Empreſs!" After which the people were ſent home, and the ſoldiers remanded to their barracks.

This was more than enough undoubtedly, to induce the conſpirators to rid themſelves of an object of diſquiet. Whoever has already advanced one ſtep in a criminal courſe, is not over-ſcrupulous about the ſecond: the death of the ill-fated Emperor was reſolved on. When he was conveyed from Peterſhoff, this Prince, reſtored to confidence by the promiſes of Panin, little apprehended the fate which awaited him. Believing that his confinement was to be ſhort, previous to his being ſent back to Germany, he preferred a requeſt to Catharine to have the negro who ſometimes amuſed him, a dog of which he was very fond, his violin, a bible and ſome romances, and deſired ſhe might be told that, diſguſted with the wickedneſs of men, he was determined henceforth to live the life of a philoſopher. Not one article was granted

ed him, and his plans of wiſdom were laughed to ſcorn. They did not even carry him to the imperial caſtle of Robſcha, as had been announced to him; he was ſecretly conducted to Mopſa, a ſmall country houſe belonging to the hetman Razoumoffsky. He had been ſix days in this place, without its being ſuſpected by any one except the ringleaders of the conſpiracy, and the ſoldiers who guarded him, when Alexis Orloff and Teploff appeared, and told him they came to intimate his approaching deliverance, and to aſk a dinner of him. There were immediately introduced, conformably to the cuſtom of the North, glaſſes and brandy. While Teploff was endeavouring to amuſe the Czar, Orloff fills the glaſſes, and mingles that which was to carry death into the bowels of the Prince, with an infuſion which one of the court phyſicians had the villainy to compound on purpoſe. The Czar, ſuſpecting no harm, took the poiſon and ſwallowed it. He was preſently ſeized with agonizing pains, and on Orloff's preſenting him a ſecond glaſs, he rejected it, and upbraided him with the horrid crime he had committed. He ſcreamed aloud for milk; but the two monſters again preſented poiſon to him, and preſſed him to take it. A French *valet-de-chambre*, who was powerfully attached to his maſter, ran in. The Czar flung himſelf into his arms, ſaying—"It was not enough then "to prevent my reigning over Sweden, and to tear "from my head the crown of Ruſſia! they muſt have "my life beſides!" The *valet-de-chambre* had the boldneſs to intercede for his unhappy maſter; but the two abandoned villains forced this dangerous witneſs out of the apartment, and continued to abuſe the Czar. In the midſt of this tumult entered the youngeſt of the Princes Baratinſky, who commanded the guard. Orloff, who had already thrown down the Czar, preſſed upon his cheſt with his own knees, holding him faſt at the ſame time by the throat with all his force, while the other hand graſped his ſcull.

Baratinſky

Baratinſky and Teploff then paſſed a table-napkin with a ſliding knot round his neck. Peter, in defending himſelf, imprinted a ſcratch on the face of Baratinſky, the mark of which that traitor bore many days afterward, but the ſtrength of the unfortunate Czar was ſoon exhauſted, and the murderers accompliſhed the work of death by ſtrangling him.

Alexis Orloff immediately mounted on horſeback, and galloped off at full ſpeed, to inform Catharine that Peter had breathed his laſt. He arrived at the moment when ſhe was going to hold her court. She appeared with a compoſed air; afterward ſhe cloſetted herſelf with Orloff, Panin, Razoumoffsky, Gleboff, and ſome others of her fell confidants; and after having deliberated in this ill-omened council, to determine whether it would be proper immediately to inform the ſenate and people of the Emperor's deceaſe, it was agreed to wait one day more. Catharine dined in public as uſual, and met her court in the evening with all imaginable gaiety.

The day after, Catharine ſtill affecting ignorance of the news of this death, contrived to have it announced to her while ſhe was at table. She inſtantly retired with tears ſtreaming from her eyes, after having diſmiſſed her attendants and the foreign miniſters. She flew and ſhut herſelf up in her apartment, and, for ſeveral days, exhibited all the marks of a profound ſorrow. During this interval was publiſhed, in name of the Empreſs, the following declaration, a ſtrange compound of unrelenting cruelty and the moſt abominable hypocriſy.

"The ſeventh day after our acceſſion to the Im-
"perial throne, we received intelligence that the late
"Emperor was attacked by a violent cholic, occa-
"ſioned by a flux of blood, to frequent fits of which
"he had formerly been ſubject. Accordingly, that
"we might not be wanting in the duty which the
"Chriſtian religion impoſes, and in the obſervance
"of the ſacred law which enjoins the preſervation of

"the life of our neighbour, we iſſued immediate or-
"ders to ſend him every thing that could contribute
"to prevent the conſequences of an indiſpoſition ſo
"alarming, and to relieve him by remedies prompt
"and efficacious. We were, notwithſtanding, in-
"formed yeſterday, to our great ſorrow and regret,
"that it had pleaſed the Moſt High to terminate his
"career. For this reaſon we have given orders to
"depoſit his body in the monaſtery of Newſky, there
"to be interred.

"We, at the ſame time, exhort, as a ſovereign
"and a mother, all our faithful ſubjects to take their
"laſt farewel of the deceaſed, forgetting the paſt, and
"to pray to God for his ſoul, as well as to conſider
"this unexpected interpoſition of the Almighty as
"one effect of the impenetrable views which his pro-
"vidence has reſerved to itſelf over us, over our im-
"perial throne, and over every part of our beloved
"country."

The body of the ill-ſtarred Peter III. was actually carried to Peterſburgh, and expoſed for three days at the church of St. Alexander Newſky. Care had been taken to dreſs him in his Pruſſian uniform, and perſons of every rank and of all conditions were left at liberty to render him the laſt homage of affection, which, in Ruſſia, conſiſts in kiſſing the mouth of the deceaſed perſon. His viſage had become extremely black. It was eaſy to ſee, through the epidermis, extravaſated blood oozing, which penetrated even the gloves with which his hands were covered; and the poiſon adminiſtered to him muſt have been extremely violent, for all thoſe who had the melancholy reſolution to apply their mouth to his retired with ſwollen lips. Catharine's council was abundantly ſenſible that ſuch fearful indications might lead to a diſcovery of the means to which they had reſorted, in order to ſhorten the Czar's life: but conſidered themſelves leſs intereſted in ſaving appearances of the crime than in preventing the commotions which muſt infallibly

libly have been excited, had the people thought that this Prince was ſtill living.

The day of the interment was a day of trouble and deſolation to Peterſburgh. The people joined the proceſſion, loading with execrations the ſoldiers of the guard, and reproached them with having baſely ſpilled the laſt drop of the blood of Peter I. The Holſteineſe ſoldiers, who had till then remained at Oranienbaum, at liberty, but diſarmed, attended this mournful funeral, and accompanied, in tears, their maſter's corpſe. The Ruſſians no longer beheld in them preferred rivals, but faithful ſervants, in whoſe grief they ſympathized. Next day Catharine ordered theſe wretched Holſteiners to be ſhipped off for their own country. A conſiderable number of them were put on board a veſſel which ſunk as ſhe was going out of the harbour of Cronſtadt. They ſaved themſelves on the rocks, level with the water, and the barbarous Admiral Talizin ſuffered them to periſh there, under pretence of being obliged, before he gave them any aſſiſtance, to ſend to Peterſburgh for permiſſion.

Prince George, to whom Peter had given the title of Duke of Courland, in room of Prince Charles of Saxony, who had given him cauſe of diſcontent, was compelled to renounce that title: but Catharine, as an indemnification, conſided to him the adminiſtration of Holſtein, whither ſhe haſtened to diſpatch him, with the reſt of his family, and where he always ſerved her with a zeal which, perhaps, ſhe had little reaſon to expect from him.

The chancellor Beſtuſcheff, who had been the moſt ancient, the moſt ardent enemy of the Czar, and the confidant of Catharine, was recalled from exile. She ſent Prince Wolkonſky and Lieutenant Kaliſchkin to eſcort him to Peterſburgh. She reſtored him his rank of field-mareſchal and his place at the council-board, and gratified him with a penſion of 20,000 roubles, but diſpenſed with his ſervices, in conſidera-

tion of his great age. Beſtuſcheff affected to have turned devotee, but continued, nevertheleſs, to give himſelf up to the purſuits of ambition and to intrigue.

Biren, who, more irritated againſt Peter for not having re-inſtated him in his dutchy than grateful for the liberty to which he had juſt reſtored him, had joined the triumphant party, and ſometimes aided it with the illumination of his experience. Biren found his way back to Courland, met with little difficulty in recovering his rights, and there promoted, with all his might, the views which Catharine already entertained reſpecting Poland. In order to convey a complete idea of the character of this man, who, after having abandoned himſelf to the commiſſion of the moſt horrible cruelties, carried indulgence to the extreme of weakneſs, and who united contemptible meanneſs to ridiculous vanity, it may be ſufficient to relate in what manner he took leave of Catharine. He fell on his knees before her, in preſence of the whole court, and addreſſed her in the following words:

"Moſt illuſtrious and moſt puiſſant Empreſs! moſt "gracious ſovereign and great lady!—Is it poſſible "to imagine a magnanimity and a beneficence ſimilar "to thoſe which your Imperial Majeſty has gra- "ciouſly diſplayed in favour of me, and of all my "houſe? A prince without liberty, without lands, "without reſources, without ſupport, finds himſelf, "all at once, poſſeſſed of every one of theſe bleſ- "ſings, whereof adverſe fate had ſtripped him during "a long ſeries of years. I owe them, all theſe ad- "vantages, to that love of juſtice which is ſeated "on the throne by the ſide of your Imperial Ma- "jeſty, and has juſt broken aſunder the ſnare which "iniquity and violence had ſo artfully woven.

"What can I do to expreſs, in a becoming man- "ner, my acknowledgments of that grace and of "thoſe bounties. My exertions, united to thoſe of my

"my whole houſe, are unequal to the taſk, and I "ſhould remain inconſolable, were I not perſuaded "that your benevolence holds as acquitted thoſe who "have nothing to offer but gratitude and ſubmiſſion. "Theſe are the two ſentiments which I ſhall carry "with me to the grave, and which I ſhall inceſſantly "inculcate on all who belong to me. I proſtrate "myſelf, then, moſt humbly, at the feet of your Im-"perial Majeſty, with a promiſe of unbounded gra-"titude and ſubmiſſion, and I preſume to ſupplicate, "in behalf of me and mine, the continuance of your "powerful protection."

Munich himſelf obtained the government of Eſthonia and of Livonia; but Catharine, who had liſtened at firſt with intereſt to what he ſaid, then perhaps only meant to rid herſelf of an old man whoſe ambition ſeemed to increaſe with age, and who teized her continually with his projects and advices.

The news of the revolution ſoon ſpread far and wide. No one of the ſovereigns of Europe was ignorant of the means which Catharine had employed to place herſelf on the throne, but no one heſitated to acknowledge her. Some even rejoiced at the event: their joy was not of long duration.

In the firſt oukaſe publiſhed by Catharine, on taking poſſeſſion of the throne, ſhe had called the King of Pruſſia the hereditary and irreconcilable enemy of Ruſſia, becauſe ſhe wiſhed to make the hatred of the Ruſſians to the Pruſſians rebound on the head of her unfortunate conſort. Fearing, beſides, that Frederick might prevail with the 20,000 Ruſſian auxiliaries who were in his army, to declare in favour of the Czar, and whom ſhe recalled, ſhe had at once given orders to her commiſſaries to ſeize anew the revenues of Royal Pruſſia, and to her generals to hold themſelves in readineſs to fight. Maria-Thereſa from this believed that the Ruſſians, on withdrawing from the Pruſſian ſtandards, would aſſiſt her in once more dictating laws to Frederick. Ma-

ria-Thereſa was deceived. She ſoon beheld, with equal indignation and aſtoniſhment, Frederick offering no oppoſition to the departure of the Ruſſian auxiliaries, and Catharine not only giving orders to her troops to evacuate Pruſſia, but confirming the peace concluded by the Czar.

Louis XV. likewiſe flattered himſelf that the careſſes laviſhed on his ambaſſador by Catharine, while ſhe was only Grand-dutcheſs, amounted to a declaration of attachment to France. But from the moment ſhe mounted the throne, with all her partiality to French literature and arts, ſhe was unable longer to conceal her contempt of, and averſion to, the court of Verſailles. Her wretched huſband ſeemed, in this reſpect, to have ſerved her as a model.

The monarch who formed the ſoundeſt judgment of her character, was the King of Pruſſia. That Prince, long foreſeeing the bold manœuvre which ſeated her on the throne, had inceſſantly recommended to his miniſter Goltz, that, ſince Peter was reſolved to ruin himſelf, his whole court ſhould be paid to Catharine. Goltz accordingly, the flatterer of the Czar, and the aſſiduous companion of his pleaſures, was, at the moment of his diſaſter, one of the firſt to abandon him, and received from Catharine the moſt gracious marks of attention.

Catharine likewiſe gave a cordial reception to the envoy from Copenhagen, and ſent aſſurances to the King of Denmark, that he might make himſelf eaſy reſpecting Holſtein, and that it was her intention to maintain a good underſtanding with him.

M. Keith, the Britiſh ambaſſador, had not all the influence over this Princeſs which his predeceſſor Williams enjoyed; but ſhe treated him as the miniſter of a friendly court, and haſtened to renew the treaties which have long ſecured to the Engliſh almoſt the whole commerce of Ruſſia.

In preſerving peace with the ſovereigns of Europe, Catharine neglected nothing to maintain it in the interior

interior of the empire. She had more to fear from her own ſubjects than from foreign potentates; ſhe accordingly employed with them, by turns, addreſs and ſeverity. The court ſpeedily aſſumed a new appearance. Every thing there already ſtooped under the ſecret will of Gregory Orloff, whoſe credit and inſolence daily increaſing, humbled, provoked the grandees, and inſpired them with an ardent deſire to behold his downfal. Several of them had the courage to remonſtrate on the ſubject: their diſgrace was immediately determined. But Catharine thought herſelf ſtill obliged to diſſemble, and intended, before avenging her favourite, to affix the laſt ſeal to his power.

Recent accounts from Moſcow were more favourable than the firſt. Brandy and money diſtributed by the governor had altered the ſpirit of the garriſon. Soldiers could not refuſe to acknowledge the ſovereign who was giving them daily proofs of her liberality. Aſſured of this ſucceſs, Catharine haſtened her departure to the ancient capital of Muſcovy, there to have the ceremony of coronation performed. But before ſhe quitted Peterſburgh, the regiments of guards, who had placed her on the throne, were aſſembled, and loaded with new careſſes. She left them under the command of the hetman Razoumoffsky, and of Prince Wolkonsky, conferred the government of the city on the Count de Bruce, of whoſe fidelity ſhe had full aſſurance, and charged Alexis Orloff to exerciſe a general ſuperintendance with his uſual activity.

On this journey the Empreſs had commanded the attendance of Gregory Orloff, of the old chancellor Beſtuſcheff, of the Baron Stroganoff, in a word, of almoſt all the grandees who were the moſt firmly devoted to her, as well as of thoſe from whoſe abſence ſhe had any thing to fear. She was careful above all things to take with her the young Grand-duke Paul Petrowitz, and the principal ladies of her court.

This

This numerous retinue entered Moſcow in great pomp. But, notwithſtanding the money ſcattered about beforehand, it was received coldly, and without any acclamation. Catharine could perceive from this ſolitude and ſilence, that her preſence was by no means acceptable to the people. She repaired to the chapel of the Czars, where ſhe laviſhed her adulation on the Archbiſhop and ſuperior clergy, and was crowned in preſence of the ſoldiery and of her courtiers. The croud, which ſhunned the approach of the Empreſs, always threw themſelves in the Grand-duke's way, and mingled with the emotions of intereſt which that child inſpired, ſentiments of regret for the hard fate of his father. The preſence of Catharine, however, in the ancient capital of the empire, and the coronation of that Princeſs were ſignalized by largeſſes, promotions, and oukaſes, which demonſtrated the earneſt deſire ſhe had to conciliate the affections of the nation. As a piece of flattery to the army, whoſe talents and valour Peter had appeared too highly to under-rate, ſhe cauſed a proclamation to be publiſhed, containing a panegyric on the troops which had fought againſt Pruſſia, and gave a gratification of a half year's pay to all the ſubaltern officers and ſoldiers who had been engaged in the battles of Paltzig, of Francfort and of Kunerſdorff. She appointed Gregory Orloff lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of horſe-guards. Alexis Orloff was promoted to the ſame rank in the regiment of Preobraginſky-guards, Fedor Orloff in that of the Simeonoffſky-guards, and Volodimir in that of the guards Iſmaïloffſky. At laſt, the Empreſs, thoroughly diſſatisfied with Moſcow, carefully concealed her diſpleaſure, and haſtened to reſume the road to Peterſburgh.

It was then ſhe threw off all manner of conſtraint. The monks, who had long favoured her projects, and to whom ſhe had made frequent promiſes of reſtoring the property of which her huſband had ſtripped them, in vain called to her recollection their

own

own ſervices and her aſſurances. She was ſenſible that it would be highly imprudent to permit them to recover an aſcendant which might become as dangerous to her as it had proved uſeful, and, inſtead of revoking the edict of Peter III. ſhe committed the examination of it to a ſynod compoſed of men blindly devoted to her will. The higher clergy were bought off; the reſt were ſacrificed; and, boiling with rage, ſwore to avenge themſelves of a Princeſs, in whoſe behalf they had formed ſo many cabals.

The fury of the prieſts could not fail to produce ſome effect. They blew up the flame of ſedition among the people; they communicated it to ſome of the ſoldiery; they called to remembrance the name of Prince Ivan; they diſcovered that on the very day of the revolution he had been at Peterſburgh, whither Peter had him myſteriouſly conducted, with a deſign to declare him his ſucceſſor, and whence Catharine had him ſince conveyed, in a manner no leſs myſterious; and they declared without reſerve, that to this unfortunate Prince the throne of right pertained. They did more. They drew from concealment, and publiſhed a manifeſto, all the copies of which the vigilance of Catharine's friends had been unable to ſuppreſs. Peter had ordered it to be drawn up by the counſellor of ſtate, Wolkoff, and ſigned it with his own hand. He there detailed all the weakneſſes, all the crimes of Catharine; and, accuſing her of adultery, declared that he did not acknowledge the young Grand-duke as his ſon, that child being the iſſue of his wife's ſcandalous commerce with Soltikoff. This manifeſto, written with conſiderable force and dignity, was artfully diſſeminated among the people, and ſoon found its way to the ſoldiery, who, for the moſt part, unable to conceive by what infatuation they had been ſeduced into rebellion, already repented of their crime, or deplored the mournful fate of a Prince miſled, but not wicked, weak, but not ſtupid, whom an ambitious and hypocritical

critical woman had cauſed to be put to death in the moſt barbarous manner. He who is the object of pity ſoon finds avengers. Every thing ſeemed to announce a counter revolution. But Gleboff, Paſſeck, Teploff, all the cruel and vigilant emiſſaries of Catharine, ſpied through darkneſs the authors of theſe murmurings, and became their accuſers. An imperial proclamation ſuddenly prohibited the ſoldiers of the guards to aſſemble without orders from their officers. Some of the moſt forward among them were impriſoned and underwent the puniſhment of the knout; others were exiled to the heart of Siberia: terror for ſome time reduced the reſt to ſilence.

In thus chaſtiſing the regiments of guards, the Empreſs thought of overawing the clergy alſo. She would not ſo much as ſave appearances with ſuch of her court as fell under her diſpleaſure, and who imagined they had the faireſt claims upon her gratitude. Ivan Schouwaloff had not openly taken part in the conſpiracy, but had ſerved it before-hand by calumniating Peter; and, when it did break out, he gave it his approbation and ſupport. A mean flatterer of Catharine's inclinations, he dreamed of being on the ſame eaſy terms with her which the Empreſs Elizabeth had allowed him. Schouwaloff was miſtaken. He became an object of jealouſy to Orloff; Catharine ſent him orders to leave the court; then, blending deriſion with harſhneſs, ſhe gave him, as an adequate reward of his ſervices, an old negro who acted the buffoon.

The general of the artillery, Villebois, who had the weakneſs to give way to a ſentiment of tenderneſs for her, inſtead of perſevering in his duty, ſpeedily met with his puniſhment. Orloff ſtood in awe of his underſtanding, and coveted his employments. Villebois was diſmiſſed, and the favourite placed at the head of the ordnance.

The pretenſions of the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff became odious

odious to the Empreſs. During the firſt moments of the revolution, the Princeſs as well as Catharine had aſſumed the uniform of the guards, and marched at their head. She had ſacrificed her own father, her ſiſter, her whole family to the elevation of her friend; ſhe had made a ſacrifice of her own perſon, in admitting the love of Panin, for whom ſhe had an extreme averſion. The only recompenſe ſhe aſked was the title of Colonel of the Preobraginſky guards. But Catharine replied with a ſarcaſtic ſmile, that ſhe would make a better figure at the academy than in a troop of warriors. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, cruelly humbled by this retort, gave herſelf up to her natural impetuoſity, murmured among her friends at Catharine's ingratitude, and meditated all the poſſible means of avenging herſelf. The perfidious Odart, who watched her movements, was the firſt who gave an account of her deſigns to the Empreſs. The Princeſs received immediate orders to repair to Moſcow. Her huſband, who had been long abſent, and who obſerved her advanced in pregnancy, without knowing how ſhe came by it, was the perſon who pitied her the leaſt.

Catharine, at the ſame time, who flattered herſelf that ſhe could impoſe on foreign nations as ſhe had upon the Ruſſians, and who wiſhed to make Europe believe that in mounting the throne ſhe had only complied with the wiſhes of the people, commiſſioned the Piedmonteſe Odart to engage the French ambaſſador to write to Voltaire, with a requeſt to be on his guard againſt the vanity of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and to aſſure him, that, in the event of his celebrating the revolution which had juſt taken place in Ruſſia, he ought to mention this young woman as having performed but a very ſubordinate part in the tranſaction, the ſucceſs of which was to be aſcribed entirely to the wiſdom and courage of the Empreſs. A ſimilar commiſſion was given to her ambaſſadors at London and Paris.

The

The Archbiſhop of Novogorod, one of the principal agents in the revolution, and the perſon who had ſince contributed the moſt towards curtailing the prerogatives of the monks, becauſe he had been gained over by dint of money and promiſes, beheld himſelf in a moment hurled from his towering expectations. As ſoon as Catharine found ſhe had no longer occaſion for his ſervices, ſhe haſtened to turn him adrift, and he was obliged to go and digeſt his rage and his ſhame amidſt a clergy who deteſted him, and a people who deſpiſed his ambition.

Poniatowſky had meanwhile, to his inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, been informed of the triumph of Catharine. Since his departure from Peterſburgh, he had kept up a cloſe correſpondence with her, through the medium of complaiſant friends, and he reckoned ſo much the more on her, that in giving herſelf up to ſecret intrigues, ſhe openly affected a romantic conſtancy. Poniatowſky, perhaps, flattered himſelf then with ſoon receiving the hand of her whoſe heart he believed to be already his own. He advanced to the very frontiers of Poland, and ſent to demand permiſſion of the Empreſs immediately to preſent himſelf to her. But ſhe anſwered that his preſence was not neceſſary at Peterſburgh, and that ſhe had other views reſpecting him. Not wiſhing that he ſhould be as yet made acquainted with her new engagements, ſhe continued to write to him letters replete with tenderneſs, and ſometimes wept before the confidants of that Poloneſe, while ſhe talked of her paſſion for him. She fired at the imputation of her having a partiality for Orloff, and endeavoured to render him ridiculous in their eyes, while ſhe had long been granting him her moſt valuable marks of favour in ſecret. Poniatowſky and his confidents were the dupes of Catharine's proteſtations and falſe tears.

But the ſeaſon of fear was paſt. Myſtery no longer ſuited the temper of Orloff. That inſolent and brutal

brutal favourite ſeconded indifferently the diſſimulation of his miſtreſs, and made her feel that he had no farther occaſion to attend to modes of behaviour. He entered her apartment at all hours, and in public frequently treated her with a freedom which left no room to doubt of their mutual underſtanding. Accuſtomed to live in barracks and taverns, Orloff had acquired a paſſion for drinking. One evening that he was at ſupper with the Empreſs, in the company of the hetman Razoumoffsky, and ſome other courtiers, having heated himſelf with wine, he began to talk of the aſcendant which he had over the guards; he boaſted that he alone had effected the revolution, and added, his power was ſo abſolute, that if he had a mind to abuſe it, he could in one month undo his own work, and dethrone the Empreſs. "Thou "mighteſt do that in a month," replied the hetman, laughing at this audacious effuſion; "but, my friend, "we would have had thee hanged in leſs than a "fortnight!" The reſt of the company were filled with indignation, but the favour of Orloff underwent no diminution.

Policy ſtill more than love at that time attached Catharine to her favourite. She knew his activity, his impetuoſity, his boldneſs, and had neither the power of arming herſelf againſt him with a vain ſtatelineſs, nor of preferring to him courtiers, more poliſhed undoubtedly, but almoſt all of them deſtitute of talents and of courage. Leſs complaiſant with the other conſpirators, who were only ſubaltern officers, and whom ſhe had already ſufficiently recompenſed, ſhe gradually removed them from court, and permitted them to reſume their military train of life, and their obſcure libertiniſm. But perhaps ſhe was in the wrong not to prolong the conſtraint ſhe wore to humour them.

The chaſtiſement of the firſt ſoldiers who mutinied, had not entirely ſtifled the ſpirit of revolt. The removal of the archbiſhop of Novogorod and of Prin-

ceſs

ceſs d'Aſchkoff, the young Grand-duke's infirm ſtate of health, whoſe declining habit was obſtinately imputed to his own mother, the compaſſion which Prince Ivan never failed to excite, every thing, in a word, furniſhed pretexts for diſcontent, and the papas employed them with much ability to agitate and inflame the people. There was a general commotion in the barracks. The danger became even ſo preſſing, that the Empreſs beheld herſelf, for one whole day, on the point of meeting the fate of her huſband. But her courage abandoned her not. Without aſſembling her council, ſhe adopted ſecret meaſures to quell the tumult; and when the hetman Razoumoffsky, Beſtuſcheff, Panin, Gleboff, and many of the ſenate preſented themſelves to expreſs to her their uneaſineſs, ſhe ſaid to them loftily:—"Wherefore alarm yourſelves? Do you imagine I "dare not look danger in the face? or rather are "you afraid that I know not how to triumph over it? "Recollect that you have beheld me in moments the "moſt tremendous, preſerving all my fortitude of "ſoul, and that I am able to ſupport the moſt cruel "reverſes of fortune with as much ſerenity as I have "enjoyed her favours. Certain inſolent caballers, a "few mutinous ſoldiers, want to rob me of a crown "which I accepted with regret, and in the view of "reſcuing the Ruſſian nation from the calamities "which threatened it. I know not under what pre-"text they diſguiſe their audacity; I am ignorant "of the means which they may poſſeſs; but, once "more, they excite in me no diſmay. Providence, "which has raiſed me to a throne, will ſupport me "on it, for the glory and felicity of the empire, "and the hand of Omnipotence will confound my "enemies."

At the very moment ſhe was holding this language, the Orloffs and their friends were exerting all their influence to quiet the guards, and money gained over thoſe whom the promiſes and fine ſpeeches of the favourite

vourite had not been able to ſubdue. As ſoon as dependance could be placed on them, twenty-four of their officers were arreſted and brought to trial. The four ringleaders were found guilty of high-treaſon, and ſentenced to be quartered. But Catharine, who was ſenſible that it would be much leſs advantageous to her to ſuffer the ſentence to be executed, than to give a ſtriking diſplay of clemency, commuted their puniſhment into baniſhment to Siberia; and as ſhe wiſhed at the ſame time to make an attempt to inſpire the Ruſſians with ſome dread of infamy, a dread of which they have no idea, though it has powerful influence in other nations, ſhe ordered the four officers to be degraded and flogged by the hand of the common hangman.

While Catharine was thus treating her own ſubjects, ſhe preſented to foreign nations all the loftineſs of her character. The French miniſter, one of the accommodating confidants of the loves of this Princeſs and of Poniatowſky, to no purpoſe ſolicited her to grant a *reverſal* ſimilar to thoſe which had been obtained from Elizabeth and Peter III. on their acceſſion to the throne, and which proved that the title of Empreſs made abſolutely no change whatever in the ceremonial between the two courts. She even perſiſted with ſo much the more ſatisfaction in her refuſal, that the difficulties which it occaſioned furniſhed her with a pretence to keep that miniſter for a conſiderable time at a diſtance, and thereby prevented him from informing Poniatowſky of the change which had taken place in her affections. At laſt, ſhe declared that the ceremonial ſhould not be changed, but that no reverſal ſhould take place at the commencement of every new reign. She nevertheleſs gave ſecret orders to ſeveral of her ambaſſadors to take precedency of the French miniſter wherever they could.

Always uniting addreſs to firmneſs, Catharine had the ſkill to ſeduce the moſt dangerous of the clergy,

and to check the cabals of the monks. She invited back to court the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, whoſe credit and intrigues at Moſcow were capable of diſturbing the repoſe of the empire. She ſent home the Piedmonteſe Odart, whom his inceſſant accuſations rendered hateful to every one about court. She purchaſed the trumpets of fame. The ſound of her praiſes ſpread over Europe, and re-echoed back to Peterſburgh. The health of the young Grand-duke was reſtored. The hopes which this Prince inſpired diverted the public eye from the priſon of the unfortunate Ivan. The Ruſſians began to be enured to a yoke which they had in vain attempted to ſhake off.

Ambition extinguiſhed not in the ſoul of Catharine an ardent reliſh for pleaſure. Nay, it was by this very reliſh that ſhe contrived to attach her court more powerfully: but ſhe knew how to renounce pleaſure, and to make the tranſition to employments the moſt ſerious, and application the moſt indefatigable to the affairs of government. She aſſiſted at all the deliberations of council, read the diſpatches of her ambaſſadors, dictated, or minuted with her own hand, the anſwers to be returned, entruſted her miniſters only with the details of buſineſs, and ſtill kept her own eye on the execution. Anxious to cloak her vices under the luſtre of her glory, and to efface the memory of her crimes by diſplays of grandeur, ſhe acted up to maxims which ſhe had frequently in her mouth—"It is neceſſary to be conſtant in our pur-"ſuits," ſaid ſhe. "It is better to go wrong than "to recede from our purpoſe. Fools only are inde-"ciſive."

BOOK V.

State of Europe—Catharine maintains Biren in Courland—Panin aims at changing the Form of the Ruſſian Government—Beſtuſcheff diſſuades the Empreſs, and tries to make her eſpouſe Gregory Orloff—Plot laid at Moſcow againſt Orloff's life—Lying-in of the Empreſs—State of Poland, from the Kings of the firſt Race down to the Election of Poniatowſky—Conſpiracy at Peterſburgh—Catharine's Expedition into Livonia—Maſſacre of Prince Ivan.

A. D. 1763. WE have already ſeen Catharine emerge from a petty German principality, and advance towards a throne, on the ſteps of which ſhe ſtood tottering for almoſt twenty years. We have beheld her mount that throne, by hurling from it, in a moment, the huſband who had called her to it, and taking ſole poſſeſſion, with much fewer obſtacles than ſhe herſelf apprehended. We now proceed to detail the ſequel of her long reign and private life. In continuing this repreſentation, my impartiality ſhall be uniform. I ſhall neither draw a veil over the great qualities of Catharine, nor conceal her ſlighteſt defects; I ſhall with equal freedom diſplay her commendable actions, and her moſt ſcandalous weakneſſes. I ſhall not produce a ſingle fact of which I have not acquired the evidence; but will narrate every one that appears to me worthy of being made public. I will expoſe with intrepidity to the indignation of mankind a Princeſs who has too long uſurped the admiration of the world, and in whoſe enormities many illuſtrious authors have, in ſome ſort, been partakers, by the extravagant praiſes they have laviſhed upon her.

It may be proper, firſt of all, to throw a glance over the ſtate of Europe, at the moment when Catharine II. aſſumed the reins of government.

Different treaties had juſt brought to a termination that war, known in the annals of Europe under the diſtinctive appellation of the Seven Years War, and one of the moſt terrible which ever deluged with blood the two hemiſpheres of the globe. The potentates who had engaged in it, and carried it on with ſo much animoſity, felt no diſpoſition to give up the conteſt from principles of wiſdom or of humanity, but becauſe the diminution of their armies, and the exhauſted ſtate of their finances reduced them to it.

Though ſupported by the exertions of France, Ruſſia, Saxony, Sweden, and almoſt the whole empire of Germany, Auſtria did not recover poſſeſſion of Sileſia, which Frederick II. had before taken from her, and ſhe loſt, by the war, more than 140,000 men, and contracted a debt of 100,000,000 of crowns. This power, however, was ſtill extremely formidable. Maria Thereſa beheld herſelf, if not beloved, at leaſt reſpected in her different eſtates. She poſſeſſed a ſoul lofty, intrepid, and the obſtinacy hereditary in the Princes of that houſe. The war in which ſhe had juſt loſt ſo many ſoldiers, had left her in poſſeſſion of her beſt generals, and had even formed others. The affairs of her cabinet were conducted by Count Kaunitz, a more able negociator than ſtateſman, and accuſtomed to unite the Italian cunning to all the ſtatelineſs of the German nobility.

Pruſſia had ſuffered much more than Auſtria, becauſe the ſtreſs of the war had almoſt always preſſed on the heart of her provinces. She had loſt near 220,000 men, and beheld the deſtruction of her agriculture and commerce; but had contracted no debts. The contributions levied on hoſtile countries, the Britiſh ſubſidies, the depreciation of the coin, and

and a rigid economy, had been ſufficient to ſupport the expences of the war. Frederick II. had rendered his name illuſtrious by brilliant victories, and his very defeats had contributed only to his glory. He knew mankind, and eſpecially his rivals: his political were ſtill ſuperior to his military talents.

The Electorate of Saxony had loſt no ſoldiers; her army had ſurrendered without having an opportunity of fighting. But the country was not the leſs oppreſſed by the calamities which war occaſions. Enemies and friends had equally contributed to its deſolation. Though Auguſtus III. was at once Elector of Saxony and King of Poland, he was not for that a whit more powerful. This Prince, of a character naturally deſtitute of energy, and farther enfeebled by age and the maladies which follow in the train of debauchery, was incapable of either governing his own ſubjects, or of oppoſing the courts of Vienna and Peterſburgh.

Sweden, which had been decoyed into the war, leſs from attachment to her allies than out of regard to the money which they gave her, loſt 25,000 of her beſt troops, and introduced the greateſt diſorder into her finances, which expoſed her the more to the neceſſity of ſubmitting to the caprices of thoſe powers which were beſt able to pay her. A fruitleſs attempt to confer on the King of Sweden all the authority which he ſhared with the ſenate, had juſt brought to the ſcaffold the Count de Brahé and ſeveral of his partiſans, and rendered the ſenate more powerful than ever. Moſt of the ſenators were under the influence of the French ambaſſador, d'Havrincourt; and Adolphus-Frederick poſſeſſed neither ability nor courage to break his leading-ſtrings.

Denmark and Norway had enjoyed the advantage of getting rich, while their neighbours were ruining themſelves. Frederick V. who then governed theſe two ſtates, was leſs of a devotee, but equally moderate, equally beneficent, equally economical as his

father Chriſtian VI. had been; and though a body of his troops ſerved in the pay of Great Britain, his eſtates had actually eſcaped the war. His ſubjects, at once laborious huſbandmen and intrepid navigators, divided with the Dutch a great part of the carrying trade of Europe, a ſpecies of commerce of no great apparent advantage, but ſolidly beneficial. The marine of the King of Denmark conſiſted of 28 ſhips of the line, the ſame number of frigates, and ſome chebecs. He had an army of 36,000 regular troops; and could, on a ſhort notice, aſſemble nearly as many well-diſciplined militia. His finances were in excellent order. The conduct of his cabinet reflected honour on the penetration and prudence of the miniſter who preſided in it. His army was commanded by the Count de Saint-Germain, a French officer of courage and ability, who, diſſatisfied with the deportment of Mareſchal Broglio, had withdrawn from the ſervice of his own country, and entered into that of Denmark.

The French government had ſignalized itſelf by ſo much incapacity and imprudence during the whole period of the war, that it had reduced the moſt powerful nation of Europe to behold herſelf ſtripped of almoſt all her colonies, her marine and commerce ruined, and 200,000 of her ſoldiers ſlain. With immenſe reſources, ſhe had accumulated debt to a frightful degree. The creditors of the ſtate received no longer the intereſt of their capital, and the luxury of financiers and of the agents of the court ſtill added inſult to their miſery. And—can it ever be forgotten?—theſe multiplied diſaſters aroſe merely from the weakneſs of a Prince who, ſometimes having ſtarted a ſalutary motion in council, knew not how to enforce obedience to it; and from the inſolent ambition of a female favourite, who permitted no one but her contemptible flatterers to be at the head of the armies and of the miniſtry. A peace, not leſs diſgraceful than the war, had aggravated the calami-

ties

ties of France. But France was a vigorous body, which could re-eſtabliſh itſelf; ſhe has ſufficiently proved this ſince, and without doubt will give further proofs of it.

Spain, involved in the war by the policy of the Duke de Choiſeul, appeared to have taken up arms only in order to preſent new victories to the Engliſh. She beheld almoſt immediately ſeveral of her galleons taken, as well as the Havannah and the Philippine iſles; and, on the reſtoration of peace, in order to recover theſe two poſſeſſions, ſhe was obliged to yield to the conquerors that of Florida. Charles III. who had paſſed a ſhort time before from the throne of Naples to that of Spain, was an eaſy Prince, a friend to peace, accuſtomed to be governed, and who had not for miniſters either an Alberoni or a Ximenes.

England was the only power to which the war had been advantageous. It had coſt her, indeed, 160,000 men; but theſe men were for the moſt part foreign mercenaries. She had enormouſly augmented the national debt; but her creditors were her own ſubjects, enriched at once by the prizes taken from France and Spain, and by the prodigious extenſion of their commerce. The peace had preſerved to the Engliſh a conſiderable part of their conqueſts in India and in America, and they had reſerved to themſelves the means of rendering the Spaniſh colonies the tributaries of their commerce, although in a leſs degree than thoſe of the Portugueſe had for a long time been.

The cabinet of St. James's had ſeen a man of ordinary abilities ſupplant a man of genius. Bute ſucceeded Chatham; but the encroaching policy of this cabinet remained always the ſame, and the national ſpirit, at once haughty, enterpriſing and mercantile, underwent no alteration.

The war had only ſerved to ſtrengthen thoſe ties which attached Portugal to England and eſtranged her from Spain; which ſufficiently demonſtrates that

intereſt has greater influence than religion, even over the moſt ſuperſtitious nation in Europe. The court of Liſbon, occupied inceſſantly with the mummeries of Popery, received law from that of London, which it regarded as heretical, and to which it was ſold by it's miniſter Pombal.

Holland, although in a leſs degree brought into ſubjection by England than Portugal, was equally devoted to her. Her ſeamen, her merchants, formerly the model of other nations, were now only the feeble imitators of the Engliſh. The cabinet of the Hague, eager to gratify that of St. James's, had loſt all conſequence; but Holland was ſtill ſufficiently rich, and had a navy ſufficiently powerful to preſerve a conſiderable preponderancy in the balance of Europe.

The petty ſtates of Germany which form a part of the Germanic body, had become, for ſome time, very little to be dreaded, from the diviſion of their princes. The ſeven years war had carried off a great number of men, and had cauſed immenſe devaſtations among ſome of them, without teaching them to be more at union among themſelves.

Switzerland, although forming divers ſtates, knew how to continue united, and conſtantly ready to arm, for her defence, an hundred thouſand well diſciplined ſoldiers. The riches acquired by ſome of her cities produced no alteration either in her love of liberty or in her virtues; her only fault was to ſell a part of her troops, and to expoſe them ſometimes mutually to cut each other's throats in foreign quarrels.

Italy, divided, like Switzerland and Germany, into ſeveral ſovereignties, but not forming a ſingle confederacy, was far leſs an object of apprehenſion. She ſtill ſtyled herſelf the native country of the fine arts, but was no longer that of talents. She had, inſtead of virtuous men, buffoons and ſingers, whom ſhe called *virtuoſi*, a ſpecies of beings whoſe celebrity always gives proof of the degeneracy and frivolity

volity of the nation which produces them. Rome had remained for a conſiderable period without influence in the courts of Europe. The Pope employed all his addreſs to maintain an eccleſiaſtical ſuperiority, more apparent than real, and to extort money from ſome nations, ſtill blind enough to furniſh him with it. Venice and Genoa had loſt, if not their riches, at leaſt a conſiderable part of their commerce, even in the ports of the Levant; whoſe contiguouſneſs rendered a traffic with them ſo practicable.

The Ottoman empire was then what it had been for ages paſt, and what it is ſtill, ignorant, fanatical, haughty and barbarous. However, the Ulhemas had already acquired a little more influence, and the authority of the Janiſſaries was in ſome degree diminiſhed. The Turks, almoſt always conquered by the Ruſſians, ſince Munich had commanded theſe laſt, and the conquerors of the Auſtrians ſince the death of Prince Eugene, had, at the inſtigation of Frederick, threatened the frontiers of Hungary, but they did not wiſh in reality to fight, and the Grand-Signior was ſufficiently embarraſſed to maintain his vaſt eſtates in ſubjection, without having occaſion to make war with his neighbours.

Although Ruſſia had carried on war at a diſtance from her frontiers, ſhe felt its effects cruelly in her interior. Her loſſes were eſtimated at a hundred and twenty thouſand men, and her extraordinary expences at forty millions of roubles. The unfortunate Peter III. had begun to reſtore peace; Catharine eſtabliſhed it, by ſuſpending the hoſtile projects which were on foot againſt Denmark; but the interior of the empire was ſtill filled with a ſpirit of indignation and revolt which ſecretly convulſed it, and had given birth to the laſt revolution. Neither the ſevere judgment pronounced againſt the four principal ringleaders of the inſurrection of the guards, nor the affected clemency of the Empreſs, could ſtifle thoſe ſentiments

ſentiments of hatred and vengeance which the ſpectacle of a glaring injuſtice always inſpires.

Although Catharine attempted to conceal from herſelf the enormity of her crimes, or rather, although ſhe flattered herſelf that her ſubjects were ignorant of the full extent of her guilt in accompliſhing the death of her huſband, ſhe felt that the recollection of his death could not be ſoon effaced, and that this idea of it could not be obliterated but by ſome brilliant novelties and by ſome fortunate enterprizes. But ſhe likewiſe knew that there were too many obſtacles which ſtill oppoſed themſelves to theſe enterpriſes, and that the narrowneſs of her finances, and ſound policy, impoſed peace on her.

She employed herſelf therefore with extreme care in the adminiſtration of her vaſt eſtates, the progreſs of commerce, the augmentation of her marine, and above all, in deviſing the moſt proper means to procure money, without altogether obſerving the ſtricteſt economy; for her pride would not permit her to lay aſide the Aſiatic luxury which, from the commencement of the reign of Elizabeth, had been diſplayed by the court of Ruſſia. Beſides, ſhe thought it was neceſſary for her to keep up this luxury, in order to deceive foreign nations reſpecting her real ſituation, in the expectation of one day exciting their aſtoniſhment by her conqueſts.

After having tranſacted buſineſs with her miniſters, that Princeſs converſed frequently, and always in private, ſometimes with Beſtuſcheff, ſometimes with Munich. One made her acquainted with the politics and the reſources of the different courts of Europe, the other communicated to her the plan which he had traced during his exile in Siberia, to drive the Turks from Conſtantinople, a plan which ſingularly flattered the ambition of Catharine, and which, thirty years afterwards, we have ſeen almoſt on the point of being put in execution.

She

She ſo well underſtood her own talents, her courage, and all the advantage which ſhe might derive from her power, that, chatting one day in a confidential manner with a foreign miniſter, more calculated to applaud her errors than to appreciate her genius, ſhe enquired of him if he believed that the peace which had juſt been concluded at Hubertſburgh would be of long duration? The miniſter replied, that the exhauſted ſtate of the people, and the wiſdom of the ſovereigns who governed them, ſeemed to promiſe a repoſe of ſeveral years: but he added, that ſhe ought to be better able to judge than he was, ſince ſhe could, from her ſuperior illumination, eſtimate the political ſyſtem of the courts of Europe, and, by her forces direct them at her pleaſure. Catharine, upon this, aſſuming an air of modeſty, ſaid to him:—"You think then that the eyes of Eu-"rope are at preſent fixed upon me, and that I am "held in ſome conſideration at the principal courts?" The reply could not fail to be in the affirmative. She liſtened with complacency; afterwards, arraying herſelf in all the imperial dignity:—"I believe in "effect," replied ſhe, "that Ruſſia is worthy of at-"tention. I have the fineſt army in the world. I "am in want of money, it is true, but I ſhall be "abundantly ſupplied in a few years. If I allowed "myſelf to follow my own propenſities I ſhould ra-"ther prefer war to peace; but humanity, juſtice "and reaſon reſtrain me. However, I will not fol-"low the example of the Empreſs Elizabeth. I will "not permit myſelf to be perſuaded to undertake a "war; I will make it when it ſhall appear to be to "my advantage, but never out of complaiſance to "others."—She added, that it would be impoſſible to begin to form a judgment of her till five years had paſt; that ſhe muſt have that period at leaſt to re-eſtabliſh order in her empire, and to reap the fruit of her labours; but that in the mean time ſhe would

conduct

conduct herſelf towards all the princes of Europe like a ſagacious coquette.

Theſe words were literally true. The miniſter believed they were dictated by vanity. However, he haſtened to reply to them by a flattering compliment.

The firſt effort of her influence which Catharine made was in favor of Biren, who experienced ſome difficulties on the part of the ſenate of Mittau. On recalling the troops which were in Pomerania, that Princeſs gave them orders to march into Courland, to ſupport the pretenſions of her *protégé*. She then ſent into Poland another army, under the command of Count Romanzoff, an army which was ſpeedily augmented by the twenty thouſand auxiliaries commanded by General Tcherniſcheff, under Pruſſian colours.

During the long exile of Biren, the ſtates of Courland, regarding him as having forfeited his title of Duke, had elected in his place Prince Charles of Saxony, the third ſon of Auguſtus III. King of Poland. That Prince, ſupported by the credit of his father, and by the wiſhes of the Courlanders, ſeemed entitled to bear away the palm from a competitor whom his reputation for cruelty rendered odious. But the preſence of the Ruſſian armies eaſily ſilenced the good will which was entertained for the Duke Charles. Simolin, the envoy of Catharine, very ſoon dictated to the ſenate of Mittau the laws of his ſovereign; and a declaration given at Moſcow in favour of Biren, threatened the King of Poland with war, and obliged him to give the inveſtiture of Courland to the plunderer of his ſon.

Satisfied with ſo much docility, Catharine employed her mediation with Maria-Thereſa and with Frederick, to perſuade them to withdraw their troops from the hereditary ſtates of the King of Poland: but ſhe could not at once obtain this. The Empreſs

Queen

Queen attributed the blame of it to the King of Pruſſia, who did not fail to throw it back upon her. Happily peace did not permit them to continue theſe acts of injuſtice.

Frederick, who had known for a long time of how much importance the friendſhip of Catharine might be, and who deſired to acquire it, was one of her moſt aſſiduous wheedlers. He offered her the order of the Black Eagle, which ſhe accepted with gratitude, and with which ſhe decorated herſelf whilſt ſhe was ſtill at Moſcow. Without doubt this Princeſs had not forgotten that it had been made a crime in her huſband to wear a Pruſſian order. But ſhe wiſhed to evince to her ſubjects that ſhe was not without ſome degree of conſequence in foreign courts; and what had been a fault in him became in her a trait of addreſs.

Some new diſſentions aroſe at that time between the court of Peterſburgh and that of Copenhagen, reſpecting the adminiſtration of Holſtein. By a treaty ſecretly concluded thirteen years before between the Kings of Denmark and of Sweden, the latter had yielded to the former his rights to the regency of Holſtein, during the minority of the young Grand-duke; for the court of Denmark had for a long time coveted a principality which lay ſo conveniently for her, and which ſhe has ſince acquired. She beheld with vexation the return of Prince George, who came to govern there in the name of Ruſſia. She even refuſed at firſt to acknowledge his authority. But Catharine threatened: it was an object of dread to ſee the Ruſſian troops once more on the road to Holſtein. The Daniſh commiſſaries evacuated Kehl, and an envoy extraordinary from Copenhagen arrived at Moſcow to apologize for the King his maſter.

The courts of Peterſburgh and of Stockholm lived at that period in the moſt perfect intelligence. United by the ties of blood, they were both under an equal

equal neceſſity of maintaining peace, and Ruſſia had not as yet given any premonition of that enormous aggrandiſement of power by which ſhe, ſeveral years afterwards, inſpired Sweden and her other neighbours with terror.

Tranquil with reſpect to the intentions of the princes of Europe, Catharine could not be equally ſo relatively to thoſe of her own ſubjects. She did however every thing which ſhe thought moſt calculated to attach them to her. Naturally generous, ſhe was ſtill more ſo from policy. The deſire of augmenting the number of her creatures rendered her even prodigal, and her apprehenſions were the cauſe of her ruin.

She carefully habituated herſelf in an indulgence foreign to her nature. She not only reſtored liberty to Goudowitz, Wolkoff and Melgounoff, but gave to the laſt the command of a body of troops, and to the ſecond the lieutenancy of the government of Oremburgh. Goudowitz refuſed to accept of any thing.

During the firſt months which ſucceeded the bloody cataſtrophe of Peter III. Catharine had had but little time to open her eyes to all the horrors of her crime: but reflection, though frequently tardy, is always productive of remorſe; and the daring ſoul of this Princeſs could not ſtifle it entirely. Beſides, conſpiracies were inceſſantly breaking out afreſh. They were diſcovered, they were prevented, but the cauſes of them could not be annihilated. Catharine felt ſo much the more the embarraſſment of her ſituation that ſhe affected to conceal her alarms.

Another of her ſecret ſources of affliction was, that ſince Gregory Orloff had been acknowledged as her lover, the men moſt diſtinguiſhed from their birth, envious of the good fortune of this favourite, or diſguſted with his haughtineſs, kept at a diſtance from court. Catharine frequently beheld no one around her but vulgar ſoldiers, who ſtrangely abuſed the claims which they thought they had upon her gratitude.

tude. It was not their paſt ſervices that ſhe recompenſed. Perhaps ſhe would have willingly diſpenſed with them: but ſhe paid in advance thoſe which they might ſtill be able to render her; and her bounty, and the honours ſhe heaped upon them, augmented their inſolence and their avarice. But, notwithſtanding, ſhe frequently bluſhed at the deference which ſhe imagined herſelf obliged to pay them; and, as an apology for their faults, ſhe frequently commended in them qualities which they did not poſſeſs: "I do not lead a comfortable life," ſaid ſhe one day. "I know that the people who ſur-"round me are deſtitute of education; but I am in-"debted to them for the ſituation I now hold. They "are replete with courage and probity, and I am "very certain they will never betray me." One part of this declaration could not poſſibly be ſincere. The accomplices of Catharine were not deficient in courage; but as to their probity, In what did it conſiſt?

Amongſt theſe haughty and brutal courtiers Panin was almoſt the only one who diſtinguiſhed himſelf by poliſhed manners and a mind tolerably well cultivated. He enjoyed, notwithſtanding, but a ſecondary degree of favour. He always kept in view the ariſtocratic ſenate which he wiſhed to make Peter III. eſtabliſh, and ſeized every opportunity which offered of ſetting forth its pretended advantages to thoſe with whom he converſed. Obſerving one day that Catharine ſeemed to undergo an impreſſion of extraordinary terror, he thought it the favourable moment of developing his project to her entirely, and for prevailing on her to adopt it. After having exaggerated the dangers which he apprehended on her account, and the difficulty of avoiding thoſe commotions which always ſucceed an uſurpation, he added, that ſhe had nevertheleſs one means of deliverance, and of rendering her throne from that inſtant immoveable; but that he much feared a falſe

delicacy

delicacy might prevent her making uſe of ſuch means. Catharine entreated him to explain himſelf. He immediately detailed to her the principles of a ſyſtem of government which a long experience of the inconveniencies attending it did not prevent him from admitting. "The Muſcovitiſh ſovereigns," added he, "have till now enjoyed a power unbounded; but it is the very extent of that power which renders it dangerous to the perſon who is the depoſitary of it, ſince an audacious pretender may every inſtant uſurp it, and the uſurper is above the reach of the laws. Take my advice, Madam:—Make the ſacrifice of an abſolute authority. Create a fixed and permanent council which may guarantee the crown to you, Declare ſolemnly that you renounce for yourſelf and your ſucceſſors the power of depoſing at pleaſure the members of this auguſt aſſembly. Declare, that if they commit any crime or heinous offence, their compeers alone ſhall have the right of trying and condemning them, upon exact and ſevere information. From the moment you adopt ſo wiſe a meaſure, it will be forgotten that you aſcended the throne by violence, and the only idea entertained will be, that you wiſh to maintain yourſelf on it ſolely by the execution of juſtice."

Catharine, who was flattered with every thing novel or extraordinary, deemed this project ſublime, and believed, that in renouncing an arbitrary power ſhe was going at once to acquire an immortal glory, and to conciliate for ever the love of her ſubjects. She would undoubtedly have been in the right, had it been her plan to render them equally and progreſſively free, and to give them a ſenate, the members of which were to have been taken indiſcriminately from all claſſes, and elected by the majority of ſuffrages. But to leave a whole nation in the moſt degrading, the moſt cruel ſlavery, and to chuſe by favour a ſenate from a privileged order, was not this replacing one

maſter

maſter by twenty or thirty tyrants? And is not the deſpotiſm of corps always more terrible, and more immovable, than that of individuals.

However, Catharine ordered Panin to commit his plan to writing and to preſent it to her, and ſhe expreſſed herſelf in ſuch a manner as to give him reaſon to believe ſhe intended to put it into execution. Panin haſtened to obey her; and the better to enſure ſucceſs, he put the name of Gregory Orloff at the head of thoſe whom he deſtined to compoſe the new ſenate. The favourite appeared flattered with this mark of diſtinction, but demanded time to meditate upon it; and, before he gave Panin his anſwer, conſulted Beſtuſcheff, who, that he might ſtill perform a part, conſented to enlighten by his experience the man who was honoured through the caprice of the ſovereign. Beſtuſcheff felt too ſenſibly the value of a power which he had ſo long directed, not to tremble at beholding it taken out of the hands of Catharine. He immediately paid a viſit to this Princeſs, repreſented to her, in a forcible manner, all the danger of the ſtep which Panin perſuaded her to hazard, and conjured her not to expoſe herſelf to a late repentance, by dividing an authority which ſhe had acquired with ſo much difficulty, and which ſhe would never recover, if ſhe parted with it for a ſingle moment.

The Empreſs eaſily perceived the wiſdom of the counſels of the aged chancellor, and promiſed to follow them. On making his appearance again before her, Panin found her already diſſuaded. She rendered juſtice to his zeal, applauded his underſtanding, but acknowledged that it was impoſſible for her to profit by them. The miniſter was ſenſibly hurt by an alteration ſo ſudden. Obliged to diſſemble in the preſence of Catharine, he vented his ill-humour amongſt his friends, and could not help ſaying to one of them, in confiding to him theſe particulars:—"If the Empreſs is determined to take

"upon herſelf ſolely the management of affairs, you "will ſee how badly we ſhall govern." Theſe words prove that Panin liſtened rather to his reſentment than to his reaſon, or that he was very little capable of forming a judgment of Catharine.

However, Panin ſoon diſcovered that to Beſtuſcheff alone he was indebted for the miſcarriage of his enterprize, and found an opportunity of avenging himſelf, in rendering abortive, in his turn, a project which the ambitious old man had formed, in order to render himſelf more neceſſary. A witneſs of the amours of Catharine, Beſtuſcheff had known, for a long time paſt, that ſhe always gave herſelf blindly up to them, and that to favour the object of her paſſion, ſhe was capable of making the greateſt ſacrifices. He remarked beſides, that not one of her former lovers had ever poſſeſſed ſo great an empire over her as Gregory Orloff. In truth, this favourite became every day more dear to the Empreſs. His maſculine beauty, which had given birth to the attachment of this Princeſs, and which was ſtill heightened by an air of confidence and ſelf-ſufficiency, which the high degree of favour he enjoyed could not fail to inſpire, the important ſervices which he had rendered to Catharine, thoſe which it was ſtill in his power to contribute, the ſecret claims with which the certainty of beholding her again a mother, furniſhed him, every thing, in a word, ſecured the aſcendant of Orloff. Catharine had endeavoured for ſome time to conceal her connection with him, under the veil of decency; but, whether from the exceſs of love, or from policy, ſhe very ſoon laid aſide all myſtery, and even ſeemed to glory in openly avowing her attachment.

It was, above all, in the feaſts and the exhibitions given in the interior of her apartments, that ſhe chiefly baniſhed all conſtraint. She had on one occaſion aſſembled a numerous party at the repreſentation of a French tragedy, in which Orloff performed the

the principal character; and, perceiving that ſhe was ſeated by one of the conſidants of Poniatowſky, ſhe was at pains, during the whole of the performance, to point out to him the dignity, the graces, the intellectual powers of her new lover. Afterwards, calling to mind that he had the reputation of being deficient in underſtanding, and that ſhe herſelf had formerly agreed in that opinion with this ſame confidant, ſhe wiſhed to alter his ſentiments on the ſubject, and ſaid in a whiſper:—"Truſt me, if Orloff "plays the fool, it is the better to divert himſelf at "the expenſe of the courtiers."

But, to return to the project of Beſtuſcheff. Well aſſured of the paſſion of the Empreſs, this old courtier gave Orloff to underſtand the wiſh which he had to ſee him Emperor. He at the ſame time awakened his ambition and rouſed his pride. "Gre-"goriewitz," ſaid he to him, "it is in vain that Ca-"tharine has given you her heart, if ſhe does not "add her hand to it. She knows with what zeal "and courage you have ſerved her. She knows to "what perils you have expoſed yourſelf to inveſt her "with the ſupreme power. She cannot then give "you a ſuitable recompenſe, but in making you a "partner of that throne for which ſhe is indebted to "you. And, how ſhould ſhe refuſe this? Who, "better than you, can maintain this throne againſt "the numerous conſpirators, who for ſome time paſt "have been endeavouring to ſubvert it? Who, rather "than you, ſhould be agreeable to this Princeſs, un-"der the double title of her lover and her defender? "Yes, undoubtedly, ſhe idolizes you; and I am "ſufficiently acquainted with her to be convinced, "that ſhe will do for you every thing to which you "dare to pretend. It is neceſſary, then, my dear "Gregoriewitz, this day to take advantage of the in-"conſtant favour of fortune. To-morrow, perhaps, "it will be too late. The heart of Catharine, of "which you ſeem to be at preſent ſo ſure, may

" change in an inſtant to another. Soltikoff and " Poniatowſky afford proof that her loves do not laſt " for ever. Even death may deprive you of her; " and if you do not inherit her power, her death " may expoſe you to be puniſhed for what you did " in her behalf.

" I am ſenſible, nevertheleſs, that it is not your " part to demand the hand of the Empreſs. She " would, perhaps, oppoſe obſtacles which delicacy " might prevent you from combatting. A refuſal " might ſubject you to a mutual conſtraint. Confide, " then, in my long experience, and in my friendſhip. " I know how to perſuade the Empreſs herſelf to offer " you her crown. I promiſe you that I will not ha- " zard a ſingle propoſition to which I am not fully " aſſured ſhe will accede; but, promiſe me on your " part, that you will allow me to act alone, and that " you will even feign ignorance of the ſteps I am " taking."

Orloff had liſtened to the old chancellor with the greateſt attention. Preſumptuous and volatile, he imagined himſelf for a moment on the throne of the Czars; and throwing himſelf into the arms of Beſtuſcheff, promiſed him every thing he deſired.

Beſtuſcheff being with the Empreſs the ſame day, artfully ſounded her reſpecting the marriage which he wiſhed her to contract; and ſhe appeared to him ſo much the more diſpoſed to form this connection, as ſhe was then in a ſituation well calculated to make her deſirous of it. She ſaid, however, to the chancellor that, whatever inclination ſhe had to eſpouſe her lover, ſhe would never reſolve upon it, if that alliance was to meet with any impediments; and ſhe acknowledged, that after maturely reflecting upon it, ſhe did not ſee how it was poſſible to form it without exciting a revolt throughout the empire.

The chancellor took upon himſelf to find the means. He compoſed, in the name of the Ruſſian nation, a very artful requeſt, in which, after a pompous

pous eulogy on all that the Empreſs had undertaken for the glory and the happineſs of her people, he pointed out the ſickly conſtitution of young Paul Petrowitz, and the frequent uneaſineſs which the ſtate of his health occaſioned; and conjured Catharine to give to the empire a freſh proof of her affection, by ſacrificing her own liberty and aſſuming a conſort.

To conceal his real intentions from thoſe who might be ſubſervient to them, Beſtuſcheff began by propoſing Prince Ivan, well knowing that all thoſe who might ſign the requeſt, would reject that unfortunate young man. At the ſame time, Catharine, who directed the old courtier, wiſhing to have the air of approving that propoſition, and always apprehenſive that Ivan might be all at once releaſed from his priſon and crowned, ordered him to be transferred from the caſtle of Schluſſelburgh to a convent, near Archangel, where, as if with a deſign to make him feel more ſenſibly the calamity which awaited him, he was treated for ſome time with all the honours due to his rank: but he was ſoon after in the moſt private manner re-conveyed to Schluſſelburgh.

That which the old chancellor had foreſeen did not fail to take place. When he preſented the requeſt to the clergy, twelve biſhops, gained before hand, haſtened to ſign it, under a ſpecification that Catharine ſhould not eſpouſe Prince Ivan, becauſe he might puniſh her for her benefits, and pretend that to his own rights alone he was indebted for the throne. They requeſted at the ſame time, that the Empreſs would herſelf deign to chuſe amongſt her ſubjects that perſon whom ſhe thought the moſt worthy to be a partaker of her throne.

A very conſiderable number of general officers adhered to the ſentiments of the biſhops. Had it not been for the addreſs of Panin, and the courage of the hetman Kyrille Razoumoffsky, and of chancellor Woronzoff, the artifice of Beſtuſcheff would have

ſucceeded, and the grandſon of a ſtrelitz, eſcaped from the axe, would have been the Emperor of all the Ruſſias.

Panin perſuaded Razoumoffsky and Woronzoff to repreſent to Catharine all that was humiliating and dangerous in the projected union. The hetman ſpoke to her with the bluntneſs of his character, and the authority which his fortune and his ſervices gave him. Woronzoff, throwing himſelf at her feet, ſupplicated her not to enter into a marriage which was pregnant with the greateſt misfortunes. His repreſentations were extremely intrepid, and diſplayed in him a firmneſs of which he was not believed to be capable. But Catharine, who was never embarraſſed, affected the utmoſt ſurpriſe; and, after having made her acknowledgments for the friendſhip of Razoumoffsky, and commended the noble courage of Woronzoff, ſhe proteſted:—"That the idea of the marriage which they apprehended, had never preſented itſelf to her mind; that it was certainly without her knowledge an intrigue ſo odious had been carried on, and that as Beſtuſcheff was the author of it, ſhe ſhould bring him to puniſhment for it." However, ſhe was careful not to ſhew any mark of diſpleaſure to an old man who, in concert with herſelf, had only ſought to gratify her inclinations, and whom ſhe believed it was ſtill of importance for her to treat with kindneſs.

Beſtuſcheff beheld, then, his project fall to the ground, without finding that his credit appeared in any degree ſhaken by it. On the contrary, he roſe every day in the good graces of the Empreſs and of the favourite, whereas Woronzoff met with coldneſs only. Well aſſured from this, that too much zeal for the glory of Catharine was not always the means of gaining her favour, and that his diſgrace was already reſolved upon, Woronzoff was eager to prevent a forced retreat by a voluntary exile. He gave out that his health was impaired by the labours of the

the cabinet; and under pretext of re-eſtabliſhing it, requeſted permiſſion to travel for two years in foreign countries. The Empreſs, whom his preſence laid under reſtraint, granted him this permiſſion with a ſecret joy; ſhe, however, feigned the utmoſt regret at parting with him. She expreſſed towards him, in public, the utmoſt eſteem and good will, and entreated him aloud to haſten his return to re-aſſume his miniſterial functions, which he had diſcharged, ſhe added, with ſo much benefit to the empire.

However, the apprehenſion of ſeeing Catharine eſpouſe the audacious wretch who had aſſiſted in precipitating her unfortunate huſband from the throne, occaſioned violent murmurs. Several unſucceſsful conſpiracies were formed againſt her and her favourite. One only was once upon the point of being carried into effect. A guard kept watch at the door of Orloff, as at that of the Empreſs. One of the ſentinels was gained over, who promiſed to deliver him, when aſleep, to three of the conſpirators. But the right hour had been miſunderſtood; and when the conſpirators preſented themſelves, the ſentinel who was to have ſeconded them, was already relieved by another. This other, ſurprized at ſeeing theſe men, demanding entrance into the apartment of Orloff, raiſed an alarm which collected the reſt of the guard. The conſpirators had only time to make their eſcape under favour of the uniform which they wore.

This commotion ſpread an alarm through the palace. Catharine was awakened. She believed that her life was no longer in ſafety in Moſcow, and haſtened to quit that city and to return to Peterſburgh. The day of her departure was ſignalized by the tranſports of an outrageous joy, even by an exceſs of fury. Her portrait had been placed upon a triumphal arch, in the great ſquare of Moſcow; the people tore it down, and broke it in pieces after having dragged it through the dirt.

Catharine arrived at Peterſburgh the day of the anniverſary of her acceſſion to the throne. Knowing well, that in order to maintain an aſcendant over the minds of the common people it is neceſſary frequently to dazzle their eyes, ſhe ſpared nothing to render her entrance magnificent. Her carriage was preceded by all the regiments of guards, and accompanied by thoſe of the foreign miniſters, and of the numerous courtiers, whom ambition and vanity attracted into her train. This pomp had not, however, the effect which Catharine expected from it. It excited aſtoniſhment rather than joy, and only ſerved to irritate ſtill further thoſe minds which had been incenſed by her who diſplayed it. The number of malecontents increaſed. Conſpiracies multiplied, and became more dangerous from the reſpectable names aſſociated in them. Amongſt the enemies of Catharine were publicly reckoned the moſt powerful perſonages of the empire, and even thoſe who had been moſt ſerviceable to her. The hetman Razoumoffsky, Count Panin and his brother were of this number, and it appeared certain, that if theſe different conſpirators could have caſt their eyes on a prince worthy of uniting their views, Catharine would have loſt the crown. But one party wiſhed to elevate the Grand-duke Paul Petrowitz to the throne, another had a deſire to recal the unfortunate Ivan. All embarraſſed, all uncertain, they equally formed the project of dethroning the Empreſs, without agreeing upon the perſon whom they were to chuſe for her ſucceſſor.

Catharine, ſecretly advertized of the deſign of Panin and Razoumoffsky, was at one period on the point of ordering them to be arreſted; but ſhe poſſeſſed only uncertain indications, ſuſpicions which might deceive her, and ſhe was ſenſible that by a rigour, perhaps miſplaced, towards men very highly reſpected, ſhe might run the riſk of occaſioning a general inſurrection. She therefore reſolved to make

uſe

uſe of ſtratagem, a method which had been ſo frequently ſerviceable to her.

Although ſhortly after the revolution which had placed her on the throne, ſhe had repaid with the utmoſt ingratitude the devotedneſs and the courage of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, and though even after ſhe had been obliged to recal her to court, ſhe treated her with a great degree of coldneſs, ſhe pretended all at once a wiſh to reſtore her to confidence. She had no doubt that Princeſs d'Aſchkoff was an accomplice in the conſpiracies which her ancient friends were forming. She knew her to be of an obſtinate diſpoſition, but ſhe likewiſe knew her to be poſſeſſed of conſiderable vivacity and imprudence. She was in hopes, therefore, of drawing ſome confeſſions from her which might clear up her doubts. She wrote her a very long letter, in which, after having laviſhed on her the moſt tender appellations, the moſt advantageous promiſes, and all the flatteries beſt calculated to ſeduce her, ſhe conjured her in the name of their ancient friendſhip, to reveal to her all ſhe knew of the recent conſpiracies, aſſuring her at the ſame time, that ſhe would grant a pardon to all thoſe who were concerned in them. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, incenſed to find that Catharine imagined ſhe could make her the inſtrument of her vengeance as ſhe had been that of her ambition, replied in only four lines to the four pages of the Empreſs: This was her reply:—"Madam, I have heard nothing; but if I had, "I ſhould be very careful not to utter it. What do "you require of me? That I ſhould expire upon the "ſcaffold? I am ready to mount it!"

Aſtoniſhed at ſo much haughtineſs, and hopeleſs of vanquiſhing her, Catharine endeavoured to attach to her thoſe whom ſhe durſt not puniſh. Some ſubordinate conſpirators, who had been arreſted, and who perſiſted in maintaining ſilence with regard to their accomplices, were exiled to Siberia: but the

Panins

Panins and Razoumoffsky received ſeveral new marks of favour.

However, as conſpiracies were inceſſantly renewed, and as the clemency ſhewn to the culprits ſeemed to harden them in their criminality, Catharine declared that in future ſhe would no longer conform to the edict by which the Empreſs Elizabeth had promiſed not to allow any criminal to be put to death. She believed that unfortunately the Ruſſians would not be reſtrained but by the dread of puniſhment. She diſcovered afterwards that this apprehenſion was not a ſufficient reſtraint upon them. Ought ſhe not likewiſe to have perceived, at the ſame time, that the only method of diminiſhing the number of criminals, is to diffuſe inſtruction, to eſtabliſh ſolemnly the principles of good morals, and to honour thoſe who put them in practice? Many laws have been made for puniſhing crimes; inſtitutions in favour of virtue have been too much neglected.

Catharine did not appear to be very ſenſible of the advantage ariſing from ſuch inſtitutions, but ſhe neglected nothing which ſeemed at all calculated to contribute to the proſperity of her empire. At the very moment when ſhe had the moſt powerful reaſons to be apprehenſive for her perſonal ſafety, ſhe occupied herſelf in the details of government with as much aſſiduity and calmneſs as if ſhe had been to reign for ever. She founded hoſpitals; ſhe encouraged commerce and induſtry; ſhe cauſed new veſſels to be put upon the ſtocks. Perceiving with pain that the population of her ſtates was by no means proportioned to their vaſt extent, and that the lands of her moſt fertile provinces produced but meagre harveſts, from a deficiency of labourers, ſhe publiſhed a declaration, inviting all foreigners to come and ſettle in Ruſſia. She promiſed them conſiderable advantages, and eſpecially the free exerciſe of their religion, with the liberty of quitting the country when

when they wiſhed it, and of carrying with them the property which they might have acquired, on condition of their leaving a certain portion to the treaſury. It was of very little conſequence, undoubtedly, to this Princeſs, that thoſe who ſhould come to ſettle in her ſtates were of a different religion from her's, provided they approved themſelves intelligent cultivators, laborious manufacturers, and peaceable citizens. As to the riches which ſhe inſpired them with the hope of carrying away, ſhe knew very well that moſt men who have made eſtabliſhments in a country, attach themſelves to thoſe eſtabliſhments, in proportion to their importance, and have but rarely the reſolution to quit them.

Although Poniatowſky could not be ignorant that Orloff had been long the preferred lover of Catharine, he attempted ſtill to re-kindle, by his letters, the paſſion with which he had formerly inſpired this Princeſs. In hopes that, perhaps, his preſence might enſure him a triumph over his rival, he ſupplicated the Empreſs to permit him to come to Peterſburgh in the moſt private manner. But his ſolicitations were ineffectual. Catharine knew too well what ſhe had to apprehend from the violence of Orloff, to conſent to a journey which could not fail of being diſcovered. She therefore ceaſed to diſſemble with the Poloneſe; but in acknowledging that ſhe no longer felt any love for him, ſhe aſſured him of her conſtant friendſhip, and promiſed to give him proofs of it on every occaſion which preſented itſelf. She was not ſlow, as facts evinced, in realizing this promiſe.

During a part of this year, Catharine kept herſelf generally ſhut up in her palace. She even ſtole away ſometimes from her court to make little excurſions to thoſe of her pleaſure-houſes, which were leaſt frequented, and whither ſhe was accompanied only by two or three faithful confidants. Although it ſeemed to her a matter of indifference that her connections with Orloff were known, ſhe wiſhed however to conceal

ceal that ſhe was pregnant; and pretending an indiſpoſition, that ſhe might not have to appear for ſome days, brought into the world a child, which ſome perſons ſay was a daughter, and others, that Bobrinſky whoſe conduct has ſo ill repaid her for the danger to which ſhe expoſed herſelf on his account.

Scarcely was Catharine delivered of her burden, than the intereſt of her ancient lover, or rather policy, attracted her regards toward Poland. This kingdom had felt for ſome time paſt the influence of Ruſſia, and that influence was ſo much the more powerful under Catharine, that independently of the army of Romanzoff, encamped upon the banks of the Viſtula, fifty thouſand men were in different diviſions, in Livonia, Eſthonia, and Courland. Auguſtus III. exhauſted ſtill more by his debaucheries than by the vexation which he had ſuffered from the invaſion of Saxony, could not be far from the termination of his days. All thoſe who had any pretenſions to be his ſucceſſors, began to put themſelves in motion, and the court of Peterſburgh was the centre of their intrigues. The haughty Catharine could not but be flattered to behold herſelf the arbitreſs of her ambitious rivals. But whilſt ſhe amuſed herſelf with keeping up their diviſions and their hopes, ſhe had ſecretly adopted her reſolution. It was neceſſary for her to have a king with whoſe feeble character and ſervile ſubmiſſion ſhe was well acquainted: She made choice of Poniatowſky.

Poland, which has ſometimes performed ſo brilliant a part on the theatre of Europe, and which, from the extent of her territory, the fertility of her ſoil, the underſtanding and the courage of her inhabitants, ſeemed to have a title to acquire ſtill greater conſequence, has loſt by the vices of her government a part of the advantages which ſhe derived from nature.

It is not unimportant to call to remembrance, in this place, the ſtate of this rich and unfortunate country,

try, which we ſhall behold more than once exciting the ambition of Catharine, and which ſhe has deſolated for a long time, the better to prepare it for invaſion.

The hiſtory of Poland, like that of almoſt all the other countries of Europe, goes back to an epocha ſufficiently remote to be replete with uncertainty. The utmoſt that we know is, that Poland was formerly governed by a race of kings whoſe power was almoſt abſolute. To this race ſucceeded the Piaſts, who, it is believed, were elective; but who long preſerved the crown in their family. The kingdom was frequently in commotion from the pretenſions of the nobles who formed a body againſt the monarch, and oppoſed a power to him which equalled his own.

One of the laſt kings of the race of the Piaſts, Caſimir, ſurnamed the Great, or the father of the peaſantry, repreſſed the dangerous and always turbulent authority of the grandees, by raiſing them numerous rivals amongſt the inferior nobility, to whom he granted divers privileges. But whatever might be this Prince's love of juſtice, and whatever intereſt he might take in the wretched peaſantry, it was never in his power to ameliorate the barbarous condition to which they were condemned in Poland.

Louis of Hungary, the nephew and ſucceſſor of Caſimir, could not profit by the advantages which that monarch had acquired, becauſe in beſtowing the crown upon him, the Poliſh nobleſſe obliged him to ſubſcribe to burthenſome conditions. On the death of Louis, who left no male heir, that turbulent nobleſſe offered the throne to Ladiſlaus Jagellon, Duke of Lithuania, and impoſed on him the ſame conditions as they had done upon Louis. One of theſe conditions was, not to impoſe taxes without conſent of the diets. His ſucceſſors were, as well as himſelf, inceſſantly obliged to make new ſacrifices, in order to procure the money for which they had occaſion;

ſion; and finally, they forced Sigiſmund-Auguſtus to acknowledge, that upon his death the throne ſhould become abſolutely elective. This Prince, who had no ſon, conſented without difficulty to make a declaration by which he purchaſed to himſelf repoſe. A ſhort time after, a charter was drawn up, which became the baſis and the guarantee of this privilege. The four principal articles of the charter were:

1ſt. That the crown ſhould be elective, and that the King ſhould never have it in his power to give it to a ſucceſſor during his life-time.

2d. That general diets ſhould be aſſembled every two years.

3d. That all the Poliſh nobility ſhould have the right of ſuffrage in the election of a king.

4th. That if the king ſhould take upon him to infringe the laws, and undervalue the privileges of the nation, the ſubjects ſhould be abſolved from their oath of fidelity.

The privileges guaranteed by this charter were ſtill further extended, and all the ſucceſſors of Sigiſmund-Auguſtus down to Staniſlaus Poniatowſky incluſively, have only been elected on ſwearing to maintain them. Could leſs then be expected from Princes who received the crown as a mark of favour, and who, if they had not accepted it on theſe conditions, would have been excluded, to make way for a competitor leſs difficult? The more that the nobility aggrandized their power the more they abuſed it. Not contented with freely giving their ſuffrages, they made traffic of them. Henry of Valois was the firſt who purchaſed by dint of gold and of promiſes the throne of the Jagellons, a method which has ſince then yielded only to the terror of arms.

On each acceſſion to the throne the nobleſſe uſurped ſome new privilege. Under the reign of John Caſimir was created the *liberum veto*, that right given to each nobleman to put a ſtop alone to the deliberations of a whole diet, and to diſſolve it at the pleaſure

pleaſure of individual caprice; a right which has been one of the principal ſources of the diſorders, of the anarchy, and of the total deſtruction of Poland.

But when we behold that every gentleman was in poſſeſſion of a power ſo extenſive, we may form a judgment of that which was enjoyed by the Palatines, the ſuperior officers, and all the rich Poles in general. Sometimes they raiſed regiments independently of the authority of the King; ſometimes they formed confederacies which, under pretext of defending the laws, diſſeminated diſturbance and revolt, and, under the name of liberty, exerciſed the moſt abſurd tyranny.

Such are the Poliſh nobles, whoſe blind ambition, during three hundred years, has by degrees completed the ruin of their country. That nation, naturally brave, which frequently vanquiſhed the Ottomans, and which gave laws to Pruſſia and to Ruſſia, has not been able, ſince the commencement of theſe diſſentions, to reſiſt one of the armies which have attacked her. The Kings of Sweden, Charles-Guſtavus and Charles XII. have conquered her in their turns; and from the moment that the Ruſſians have had it in their power to oppoſe diſciplined troops to her brilliant and licentious *poſpolite*, they have beheld themſelves ſo much her maſters as to impoſe laws upon her.

Nevertheleſs, theſe Polanders who called themſelves ſo free, were they ſo in reality, even when they exerciſed this boaſted right of electing their kings? The age in which we live has ſeveral times ſeen the contrary, and one of the men beſt acquainted with their hiſtory, has challenged them to find in it two examples of a free election.

There are few of the great powers of Europe who have not had in a greater or leſs degree an influence over theſe elections; but, for more than fifty years, Ruſſia is the only one which has in reality had the direction of them.

Such

Such was the ſituation of Poland when the death of Auguſtus III. revived the cabals of pretenders to the throne, and furniſhed Catharine with the means of diſplaying all the aſcendant of her policy. That Princeſs, whom the courts of Vienna and of Verſailles wiſhed to detach from Pruſſia, began by artfully obtaining from theſe courts a promiſe that they would not take any part in the affairs of Poland. The Marquis de Paulmy, ambaſſador from France to Warſaw; declared to the diet, that Louis XV. would not intermeddle, in the leaſt degree, in the election of the new king; and in a ſhort time the Count de Bercy made the ſame declaration in the name of Maria-Thereſa.

However, the promiſe of theſe two courts was not ſufficient for Catharine. She likewiſe wiſhed to be ſecure of not meeting with any oppoſition from that of Berlin; ſhe ſucceeded in this. Frederick had for a long time ſolicited her to ſign a defenſive treaty of alliance, and ſhe had herſelf ſo much the more inclination to agree to this, that ſhe employed greater artifice to make him deſire it. Imagining, therefore, that the delays ſhe made to the ſignature of this treaty aroſe merely from her averſion to a miniſter who had been the friend of her huſband, the Pruſſian monarch made choice of a plenipotentiary who, of neceſſity, could not fail of being more agreeable to this Princeſs: he ſent to Peterſburgh the Count de Solms, married to a Princeſs of Anhalt-Bernburgh, couſin-german of Catharine. Solms met with a favourable reception from the Empreſs, and he very ſoon concluded with her, in the name of the King of Pruſſia, a defenſive treaty of alliance, which was to laſt eight years. The two powers reciprocally guaranteed their poſſeſſions, and bound themſelves not to make peace or truce without mutual conſent. They promiſed beſides to each other, in caſe of war, an aid of a corps of ten thouſand infantry and two thouſand horſe. But a ſecret article ſtipulated, that if the Empreſs

ſhould

ſhould be attacked on the ſide of the Krimea, or the King of Pruſſia on the ſide of the Rhine, the aid of troops ſhould be compenſated by a ſubſidy of four hundred thouſand roubles, or four hundred and four-ſcore thouſand Pruſſian crowns.

Frederick, whom diſputes with Auſtria, and his projects of aggrandiſement, inſpired inceſſantly with the preſages of a new war, flattered himſelf that the cauſe of the ſubſidies would be advantageous to him. But time has ſhewn that, in contracting this engagement, Catharine well underſtood how to turn it to her own profit.

The treaty contained another ſecret article relative to Poland. It is as follows:

"As it is for the intereſt of his Majeſty the "King of Pruſſia, and of her Majeſty the Empreſs "of all the Ruſſias, to employ all their attention "and all their efforts in order that the republic "of Poland may be maintained in her ſtate of "free election, and that no perſon whatever may "be permitted to render the ſaid kingdom heredi-"tary in his family, or make himſelf abſolute there, "his Majeſty the King of Pruſſia and her Imperial "Majeſty have promiſed, and have mutually en-"gaged in the moſt poſitive manner, by this ſecret "article, not only to prohibit ſuch perſon, whoever "he may be, to attempt to deprive the republic of "her right of free election, to render the kingdom "hereditary, or to make himſelf abſolute, in every "caſe in which this might happen; but ſtill further "to prevent, and to annihilate by every means poſ-"ſible, and with one common accord, the views and "the deſigns which might tend to this concluſion, "as ſoon as they ſhall be diſcovered, and even to "have, in caſe of neceſſity, recourſe to the force "of arms, to protect the republic from any ſubver-"ſion of her conſtitution and her fundamental laws.

"This preſent ſecret article ſhall have the ſame "force and vigour as if it had been inſerted word

" for word in the principal treaty of alliance defen-
" ſive ſigned this day, and ſhall be ratified at the
" ſame time.

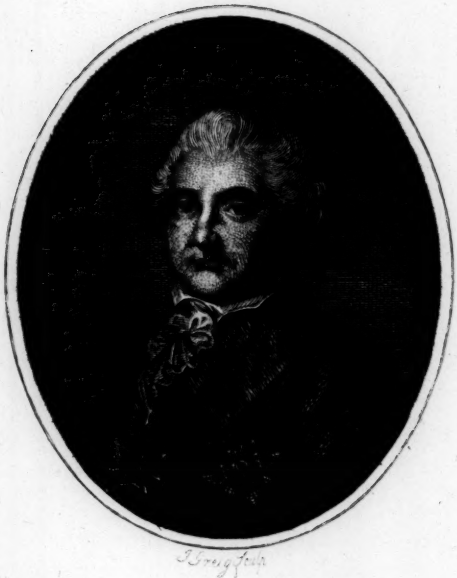
" In the faith of which two exact copies of it have
" been taken, which we, the miniſters plenipoten-
" tiary of his Majeſty the King of Pruſſia, and of
" her Majeſty the Empreſs of all the Ruſſias, autho-
" riſed to this effect, have ſigned and ſealed with the
" impreſſion of our arms.

" Done at Peterſburgh, the 11th of April (31ſt
" March, O. S.) 1764. " C. DE SOLMS,
" PANIN,
" GALLITZIN."

The new ſovereign of Saxony, who flattered himſelf with the hope of obtaining the throne of Auguſtus III. his father, as he had inherited his electorate, made application to the Empreſs, to entreat her to be favourable to his pretenſions; but ſhe, without heſitation, put an end to all his expectations. She gave him to underſtand, " that ſhe adviſed him,
" as a ſincere friend, not to expoſe his intereſts in
" an affair of which the iſſue could not be correſ-
" pondent to his views."

Proud of the authority which ſhe poſſeſſed in Poland, Catharine diſcarded, one after another, the candidates who were diſagreeable to her, without however declaring herſelf as yet with reſpect to him whom ſhe intended to favour. The principal part of the Poliſh nobles wiſhed to elect a Piaſt, a deſcendant from their ancient kings. Catharine appeared alſo for ſome time to deſire it. But all at once Warſaw learnt, with extreme aſtoniſhment, that it was for Poniatowſky that this Princeſs deſtined the throne. This choice excited almoſt univerſal diſcontent, and violent murmurs. The Poliſh grandees, filled with indignation at beholding, on the point of reigning over them, a young man of a birth but little illuſtrious, and whoſe elevation was not to be juſti-

fied



STANISLAUS AUGUSTUS PONIATOWSKY.

Elected King of Poland, Sept.r 7.th 1764:

dethroned in April 1793:

died at Petersburg, Feb.y 12.th 1798.

Published Feb.y 12.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

fied either by brilliant actions or great virtues, demanded of each other what ſervices Poniatowſky had rendered the republic, to obtain from it ſo glorious a recompenſe?

Poniatowſky poſſeſſed qualities more calculated to make him diſtinguiſhed in private ſociety than to render him worthy of a ſceptre. Tall, well made, endowed with a figure at once commanding and replete with grace, he ſpoke and wrote the ſeven principal languages of Europe with conſiderable facility and elegance; but he had a very ſuperficial knowledge of affairs. His eloquence was vague, his preſumption excited diſguſt. More feeble than gentle, more prodigal than generous, he could eaſily ſeduce women and dazzle an unthinking multitude, but not ſway men of underſtanding. He was undoubtedly more fit to be governed, than himſelf to govern. However, ſupported by the credit and the arms of Ruſſia, and having no one obſtacle to apprehend on the part of other powers, his victory was not long doubtful. The ſelf-love of Catharine was intereſted in this triumph. That Princeſs ſet ſo high a value on ſeeing the crown of the Sarmatians upon the brow of her ancient lover, that ſhe wrote inceſſantly to the Count de Kayſerling, her ambaſſador at Warſaw, to uſe his utmoſt influence in favour of Poniatowſky. One of her letters was intercepted, and contained theſe very words: "My dear Count, keep my can-"didate in your mind. I write you this two hours "after midnight: judge whether the ſubject be in-"different to me."

The Count de Kayſerling took care not to diſobey her. Neither he nor the Ruſſian generals neglected any thing which could aſſure the choice which their ſovereign deſired. The diets were already convoked. That of Warſaw unanimouſly elected Poniatowſky: but whatever pains had been taken to diſpoſe thoſe of the provinces to act as favourably, his ſucceſs was not the ſame. His rival candidates obtained more

ſuffrages than he did in ſome, and at leaſt as many in others.

When the diet of convocation aſſembled, the Ruſſian troops entered Warſaw, under pretence of maintaining order and liberty in that place.

The city was filled at the ſame time with a croud of foreigners, ready to riſe up in a body on the firſt ſignal. The Count Branitzky, grand-general of the crown, and Prince Radziwill, took up arms to prevent the Ruſſians from procuring ſuffrages by force: but what could they do in oppoſition to the foreign armies which domineered over the country, and in oppoſition to a part of their compatriots, diſpoſed to unite themſelves to thoſe armies?

It is nevertheleſs difficult to form an idea of the tumult which commenced its reign in the diet of Warſaw. The Count Malakowſky, venerable from his great age and from his virtue, had been named mareſchal of it. He attempted in vain to eſtabliſh order, and to exclude all foreigners. He was anſwered with exclamations of fury, and the ſabre was drawn. The eloquent Mokranowſky, nuncio of Cracow, ran the riſk of periſhing by the ſwords of the Ruſſian officers who attempted to ſtab him from the upper galleries. He endeavoured at firſt to defend his life: but afterwards, returning his ſabre into its ſheath, and baring his breaſt, "If you muſt have a victim," ſaid he to the Ruſſians, "here am I.—But at leaſt I ſhall die "free as I have lived." Probably the barbarians would have had the audacity to murder him, but for Prince Adam Czartorynſky, who had the noble courage to throw himſelf before him, and to cover him with his body. Thus the firſt ſittings of the diet were only productive of offenſive language and turbulent quarrels.

Some one at Peterſburgh, who knew all the diſſatisfaction which the election of Poniatowſky would give to the Poles, and who wiſhed to diminiſh its importance in the eyes of Catharine, ventured to ſay to that

that Princeſs, that her *protégé* appeared ſo much the leſs worthy to aſcend the throne of Poland, that his grandfather had been ſteward of a ſmall eſtate belonging to the Princes Lubomirſky: "If he had been "ſo himſelf," replied ſhe peeviſhly, "I will have "him a king, and he ſhall be."

In holding this language, Catharine was not apprehenſive of deceiving herſelf. Independently of the troops which ſhe already had in Poland, ſhe ordered a corps of twelve thouſand men to march into Lithuania, and her new reinforcements advanced towards Kiœff. Her ambaſſador domineered at Warſaw, and her armies overawed the republic.

Several provinces then accuſed their nuncios of having acted contrary to their inſtructions, in yielding to the influence of the court of Peterſburgh. They did not reſtrict themſelves to murmurs. They took up arms; they formed themſelves into different confederacies. But theſe commotions produced no effect. The Ruſſians threatened; and the malecontents were very ſoon reduced to ſilence.

At laſt arrived the day when the diet of election aſſembled, which was held, according to cuſtom, in the plain of Wola, about three miles from Warſaw. That diet commenced with a ſolemn maſs and a ſermon. The Count de Kayſerling, ambaſſador from Ruſſia, found himſelf indiſpoſed, and could not go to Wola, but tranſmitted to the diet a letter addreſſed to him from the Empreſs, recommending to them, in the moſt urgent manner, Count Poniatowſky.

During all this time Poniatowſky, accompanied by a great number of his friends, viſited each nuncio in private, and endeavoured to gain him, by expreſſions of good will and flattering promiſes. The Palatines being all aſſembled, and ranged in order round the Szopa, a large building open on all ſides, which contained the ſenate and the equeſtrian order, the primate demanded of them aloud, and at three dif-

ferent times, "whom they wiſhed to have for king?" all replied unanimouſly, "Count Poniatowſky." The next day he was proclaimed King of Poland, under the name of Staniſlaus-Auguſtus.

The new monarch, on his return to Warſaw, traverſed the ſtreets of that capital, amidſt the acclamations of all the people, and from that day took poſſeſſion of the caſtle of the republic. Some of the nuncios had abſented themſelves from the diet; the greater part of the grandees were enraged at the nomination of Poniatowſky; but as ſoon as he was ſeated on the throne they almoſt all came to render him homage; and he commenced his reign with as much tranquillity as if his election had not been the work of violence.

Some time before this election Catharine had announced that ſhe intended to approach the theatre of her ſucceſſes, and to make an excurſion through Livonia.

Some people thought ſhe once more deſired to ſee that lover to whom ſhe gave a throne; others ſuſpected that ſhe was again pregnant, and that ſhe was withdrawing from Peterſburgh, only the better to conceal her lying-in from a crowd of courtiers whoſe vigilance laid her under reſtraint. We ſhall preſently ſee that her journey had a totally different motive.

At the inſtant that Catharine was going to quit her capital, ſhe received information that the guards were engaged in a freſh conſpiracy. Several of them were arreſted. But as it appeared that the diſcovery of a conſpiracy always inſpired new courage to form others, and as ſhe did not wiſh to irritate the multitude by the ſpectacle of puniſhments, the trial of the conſpirators was conducted in private, and they were barbarouſly allowed to periſh with hunger in priſon.

Of a truth, I ſhould not permit myſelf to relate ſuch horrible facts as theſe, if they had not been atteſted

teſted to me in an authentic manner, and if the ſeverity of hiſtory allowed me to paſs them over in ſilence. And how could I then, without a crime, ſuffer, upon the faith of ſome flatterers, that poſterity ſhould boaſt of the clemency of a woman who commanded, or allowed to be committed, the moſt ſhocking atrocities?

The journey into Livonia had been ſuſpended during ſome days. Before undertaking it, the Empreſs choſe to viſit Cronſtadt; and thinking to give the foreign miniſters a favourable idea of her marine, ſhe invited them to follow her to this port. They did indeed follow her thither, but did not agree with her in the opinion which ſhe herſelf had of her naval forces. They found there but a ſmall number of veſſels, which they judged but little calculated to go to ſea; and the Engliſh ambaſſador, though he made it his ſtudy to flatter Catharine, could not conceal from her that her marine appeared to him as yet very little an object of dread. She has proved ſince that it might become ſo.

On her departure from Cronſtadt, the Empreſs, having left the government of Peterſburgh to Count Panin, took the road to Livonia. Gregory Orloff accompanied her: however, ſhe received at Riga the viſit of Poniatowſky, who in reality diſguiſed himſelf in ſuch a manner as not to be recognized, that he might give no umbrage to the favourite, whoſe jealouſy the Empreſs was ſtill careful not to excite.

Nevertheleſs, if Catharine was cautious to conceal from Orloff her interview with Poniatowſky, ſhe undoubtedly was not diſpleaſed that the public ſhould ſuſpect the exiſtence of that interview. It was very neceſſary that ſhe ſhould have ſome pretext for her journey, and it was made uſe of no doubt in imputing to love what was due to policy only. But the eye of the obſerver was not long deceived; a horrible outrage diſcloſed her myſterious motive. Of what conſequence indeed could it be for Catharine to have

a quarter of an hour's converſation with a lover who no longer occupied the firſt place in her heart? But how neceſſary did it appear to her to deliver herſelf at once from another object, whoſe name alone irritated the people againſt her, and made her the prey of continual terrors?

From the depths of his dungeon Ivan animated the hopes of thoſe who deteſted the uſurpation of Catharine. It was to reſtore the throne to that unfortunate young man that almoſt all the conſpiracies were formed. It was for him that the ſcaffold was continually braved by perſons who had never ſeen him, and of whoſe exiſtence he was himſelf ignorant. Faithful to the ſyſtem of calumny which had been ſo ſucceſsful in the reign of Peter III. the court of Ruſſia made uſe of it inceſſantly againſt Ivan. Sometimes it was ſaid that he was ſilly, and ſtammered to ſuch a degree as not to be able to utter a ſentence; ſometimes that he was a drunkard and a ſavage. It was even ſometimes pretended that he had paroxyſms of madneſs, and believed himſelf to be a prophet. But it is not to be doubted that theſe ſtories were the inventions of the blackeſt malignity, and afterwards innocently retailed by people who did not reflect what an intereſt was concerned in firſt raiſing them. Aſſuredly Ivan, to whom all ſort of inſtruction was denied, and who lived continually in a dark dungeon, either alone or with Ruſſian officers, the moſt barbarous of mankind, could not but be very limited in his attainments: but ignorance is ſtill far ſhort of imbecillity and madneſs. What evidently proves that Ivan was neither a fool nor a changeling, are the converſations which he had at the houſe of Peter Schouwaloff, and at that of the Chancellor Woronzoff, with the Empreſs Elizabeth. Not only the graces of his figure and the accents of his voice, but the touching complaints which he uttered, melted all thoſe who were preſent, and the Empreſs could not help ſhedding abundance of tears. If this young

Prince

Prince had committed any act of lunacy, would not care have been taken to proclaim it? We find afterwards a new proof of his good ſenſe and of his ſenſibility in the diſcourſe which he held with Peter III, when he ſaw him for the firſt time at Schluſſelburgh. The Baron de Korff and Leon Nariſchkin have tranſmitted it to different perſons, and I have related it at the commencement of this work. Peter III. converſed with him ſeveral times afterwards, and perſiſted in the intention of declaring him his heir. Beſides, we have good reaſon to think that Wolkoff, Goudowitz, and his other confidants, would have made him change his reſolution, had it been their opinion that Ivan was altogether unworthy of the throne. But, to conclude: whatever was the character of this Prince, all that any one ventured to undertake in his favour, did not render him the leſs an object of dread to Catharine, and ſhe ſought for a method of ridding herſelf of a rival ſo dangerous, without appearing to have contributed to his deſtruction.

Chance, or rather the vigilance of the emiſſaries of the Empreſs, very ſoon furniſhed her with a proper inſtrument for the accompliſhment of her deſigns. The regiment of Smolenſko was in garriſon in the city of Schluſſelburgh, and a company of a hundred men guarded the fortreſs in which Prince Ivan was confined. There was in this regiment an officer named Waſili Mirowitſch, whoſe grandfather followed the party of the koſac Mazeppa, when he took up arms in favour of Charles XII. againſt Peter I. The eſtates of the family of Mirowitſch had been confiſcated. This young man, who was ambitious, claimed them again with warmth, and it was this which brought him into acquaintance with the agents of the court. His eſtates were not reſtored, but he was flattered with the hope of a conſiderable fortune, if he would lend his aſſiſtance toward eſtabliſhing the tranquillity of the empire. What will not ambition effect in a mind replete with audacity and credulity?

Miro-

Mirowitſch promiſed every thing that was required. It is ſaid that upon this the barbarous plan was communicated to him, which he executed ſhortly after but too faithfully.

At the ſame time Captain Oulouſieff and Lieutenant Tſchekin were commanded to ſleep in the chamber of Prince Ivan, and an order was tranſmitted to them, ſigned by the Empreſs, whereby they were enjoined to kill this unfortunate Prince, if the leaſt attempt was made for his deliverance. Some time afterward Catharine departed for Livonia.

Eight ſoldiers uſually guarded the gallery which conducted to the chamber of Ivan, and all the paſſages which ſurrounded it. The others remained in the guard-houſe at the gate of the fortreſs, where they were ſtationed on duty at different places. The detachment had for their commandant an officer who was himſelf obliged to obey the governor.

It is pretended that, ſome time before the execution of his project, Mirowitſch had diſcloſed it to a lieutenant of the regiment of Weliki Louki, named Apollo Ouſchakoff, and that Ouſchakoff had taken an oath at the foot of the altar to aſſiſt him in his undertaking. But, as this laſt drowned himſelf before the attempt of Mirowitſch, it is impoſſible to know if this agreement had actually taken place between them.

What is more certain, he converſed vaguely reſpecting the conſpiracy with one of the valets of the court, and that he afterwards ſpoke to Semen Tſchewarideff, lieutenant of the corps of artillery, of the advantage which might be derived from reſcuing Ivan, and delivering him up to the regiments of guards. Believing that it was of importance for him to give himſelf the air of being a conſpirator without having accomplices, he did not however ſay to Tſchewarideff any thing poſitive either as to the time or the manner of executing his project.

He had already performed his week of ſervice in the



Fortress of Schluſselbourg

1. The Chamber where Trenck was confined

the fortreſs, without having ventured to attempt any thing. But ſoon aſhamed of his own weakneſs, or ſtimulated by thoſe who ſecretly urged him on, he requeſted permiſſion to remain on guard a week longer. Conſent was given without heſitation.

After having taken into his confidence a man named Jacob Piſkoff, he attempted, towards ten at night, to gain three corporals and two ſoldiers, who at firſt made ſome difficulties, but who preſently, ſeduced by the allurement of rewards, promiſed to execute his commands. However, whether from apprehenſion or from precaution, they reſolved unanimouſly to wait till it grew later. Between one and two in the morning they again aſſembled. Mirowitſch and the corporals ordered fifty ſoldiers, who were upon guard, to arms, and marched towards the priſon of Ivan. They met on the road Berednikoff, governor of the fortreſs. It was believed that he had been long in bed; but being without doubt forewarned of the deſign of Mirowitſch, he came to oppoſe it. Berednikoff ordered Mirowitſch to declare why he had commanded the ſoldiers to take arms, and to what place he purpoſed going. Mirowitſch, without anſwering, ſtruck him ſlightly with the end of his muſket, and delivering him into the hands of ſome of the ſoldiers, all which Berednikoff ſuffered very patiently, he continued his march. Arrived at the door of the gallery in which was the chamber of Ivan, the ſentinels endeavoured to oppoſe his paſſage. He immediately commanded his men to fire upon them, which was put in execution. The ſentinels fired in their turn, but there was no wound given on either ſide.

The ſoldiers of Mirowitſch, ſurpriſed at the reſiſtance which they met with, wiſhed to retire. Their chief retained them: but they inſiſted he ſhould ſhew them the order which he ſaid he had received from Peterſburgh. He immediately draws from his pocket and reads a forged decree of the ſenate, recalling

calling Prince Ivan to the throne, and excluding Catharine, becauſe ſhe had gone into Livonia to eſpouſe Count Poniatowſky. The ſoldiery, ignorant and credulous, puts faith in this decree, and prepares anew to yield obedience. Upon this a piece of cannon is brought to Mirowitſch, who himſelf points it againſt the door of the gallery. At this ſight the door was opened, and he entered without obſtacle, followed by all his train.

The officers Oulouſieff and Tſchekin, appointed to guard this Prince, had ſhut themſelves up in his chamber, and had called to the ſentinels to fire. But when they heard Mirowitſch give orders to break open the door, and judged that there were no means of making reſiſtance to the aſſailants, they fell, ſword in hand, upon the wretched victim who was going to be carried off from them.

At the noiſe of the muſketry Ivan awoke, and, hearing the cries and the menaces of his guards, conjured them to ſpare his miſerable life. When he perceived that theſe barbarians paid no attention to his ſupplications he found ſtrength in deſpair, and although naked, defended himſelf for a conſiderable time. With his right hand pierced through and his body covered with wounds, he ſeized the ſword of one of thoſe monſters and broke it; but whilſt he was ſtruggling to wreſt the broken piece from him, the other ſtabbed him behind and threw him down. Upon this the one whoſe ſword had been broken completely deprived him of life with the ſtrokes of a bayonet.

They then opened the doors, and ſhewed at the ſame time to Mirowitſch the bleeding body of the Prince, and the order by which Catharine authoriſed them to put him to death if any one dared to attempt to carry him off.

Mirowitſch at firſt retreated a few paces. Afterwards he threw himſelf on the body of the Prince, crying, "I have miſſed my aim; I have then no-

"thing



IVAN VI

Born 24 August 1740,

became Emperor 28 October, the same year, was dethroned in December 1741, and assassinated in Prison in July 1764.

Published Feb.ry 12th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

"thing for it but to die." Soon after he aroſe. Far from endeavouring to eſcape that chaſtiſement which he could not but foreſee, or avenging himſelf on the two aſſaſſins by maſſacring them, he returned towards the ſpot where he had left the governor in the hands of his ſoldiers, and ſaid to him coldly, on returning him his ſword, "At preſent I am your pri-"ſoner."

The next day the corpſe of the unfortunate Ivan was expoſed before the church of Schluſſelburgh, clothed in the habit of a ſailor. An immenſe croud haſtened thither, and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the grief and indignation which were excited by the ſight of this unhappy young man, who, after having been cruelly precipitated from the throne whilſt he was yet in his cradle, paſſed his days in a frightful dungeon, where he had been pitileſsly maſſacred by villains. Ivan was ſix feet high, had a fair and beautiful head of hair, a red beard, regular features, and a ſkin of an extreme whiteneſs; beſides his beauty, his youth impreſſed ſtill more deeply his unfortunate deſtiny, and the cruelty of his executioners. His body was wrapped in a ſheep's ſkin, put in a coffin, and interred without ceremony.

The croud and the murmurs augmented to ſuch a degree, that a riot was apprehended. Some fears were alſo, without doubt, entertained for his two aſſaſſins, Oulouſieff and Tſchekin, who, as ſoon as they had committed the crime, found a veſſel in complete readineſs to tranſport them into Denmark, where the miniſter of Ruſſia received them with cordiality.

The Governor of Schluſſelburgh, tranſmitted to Count Panin a minute relation of the outrage of Mirowitſch, and of the tragical death of Ivan. He likewiſe ſent to him a manifeſto, which was found in the pocket of Mirowitſch, and which he had, it was ſaid, drawn up ſome time before in conjunction with Lieutenant Ouſchakoff. This manifeſto, which con-

tained

tained many reproaches and imprecations againſt Catharine, and repreſented Ivan as the only legitimate Emperor, was to have been, he added, publiſhed the moment that the Prince was ſet at liberty, and made his entrance into Peterſburgh. Panin immediately diſpatched a courier to the Empreſs, to give her an account of all theſe particulars.

That Princeſs was then at Riga, in a ſtate of impatience, which, notwithſtanding her profound diſſimulation, ſhe could not entirely conceal. She reckoned the days which had elapſed ſince the epocha that Mirowitſch had been of the guard, and uneaſy at a delay, of which ſhe could not divine the cauſe, ſhe roſe frequently in the night, and demanded if no courier had arrived. At laſt, at the end of three days of uncertainty, the diſpatches of Panin reſtored her to tranquillity.

However, the fatal event which had juſt polluted Schluſſelburgh with blood, augmented to a great degree the hatred which was borne towards Catharine. The moſt trivial circumſtances of the outrage of Mirowitſch were carefully treaſured up. They were examined with deliberation, and every one was perſuaded that, before her departure for Livonia, the Empreſs had formed this horrible plot. She ſoon returned to Peterſburgh. On her entrance, ſhe was ſurrounded by an immenſe croud, who ſought to diſcover in her countenance what was paſſing in her heart; but, always miſtreſs of herſelf, that Princeſs did not appear to undergo any remorſe. Her gait was as ſteady, her forehead as calm, as if ſhe had never committed an action for which ſhe could reproach herſelf.

Lieutenant-General Weymar had been already commanded to repair to Schluſſelburgh. When he had privately examined Mirowitſch and his accomplices, they were conveyed to Peterſburgh, where their cauſe was tried before a commiſſion, compoſed of five prelates, an equal number of ſenators, and

ſeveral

ſeveral general officers. Mirowitſch appeared before his judges with all that tranquillity which a culprit could aſſume from the certainty of being ſecretly approved of, and of eſcaping puniſhment. He replied with a frivolous, and frequently an inſolent air, to the interrogatories which were put to him. It is true, that the judges themſelves thought it a matter of very little conſequence, and ſeemed to dread penetrating too deeply into this execrable myſtery. One alone had the equity to exclaim againſt a form of proceſs ſo uncommon. But his indiſcreet zeal was cenſured, and it was recommended to him to keep ſilence, if he did not wiſh to loſe his employment, and to behold himſelf degraded from his high ſituation. At laſt, at the end of ſome days, Mirowitſch was condemned to be beheaded, not as being guilty of high-treaſon, but merely as a diſturber of the public tranquillity. This ſentence gave him no emotion; he marched to the ſcaffold like a man who apprehends nothing, and who believes himſelf certain of obtaining his pardon, as he had, it was ſaid, received the promiſe of it. If he did in reality reckon upon this, he found himſelf cruelly deceived. The moment of his execution was haſtened, and the miſerable wretch was at the ſame time the inſtrument and the victim of a barbarous policy. The Ruſſians were for a long time aſtoniſhed that the Empreſs allowed him to ſuffer death. But how could ſhe have permitted him to eſcape puniſhment, without bringing upon herſelf the open accuſation of having tempted him to commit this outrage? And if, as every thing appeared to evince, ſhe really had a part in it, could it be believed that ſhe durſt heſitate to deliver herſelf from a witneſs who muſt have expoſed her to continual diſquietude?

The imprudent Mirowitſch was the only one condemned to death. The ſoldiers whom he had perſuaded to join him in order to deliver Prince Ivan, underwent other puniſhments more or leſs ſevere.

Pikoff,

Piſkoff, who was regarded as the moſt culpable, was condemned to run the gauntlet twelve times through a line of a thouſand ſoldiers. The three corporals and the two privates, ſeduced after Piſkoff, ran the gauntlet ten times, afterwards they were rivetted to a chain and employed in the public works. The other ſoldiers who had obeyed Mirowitſch alſo ran the gauntlet, and, after having been incorporated in other regiments, were ſent to foreign garriſons. Tſchewarideff was degraded from his rank of officer, for having liſtened, without revealing them, to the vague relations of Mirowitſch. On this occaſion fifty-eight perſons were puniſhed. There was no apprehenſion of diſplaying a great appearance of ſeverity towards them, that there might be the leſs room to preſume who were the real inſtigators of their crimes.

Nevertheleſs, whatever precaution might be taken in order to remove ſuſpicion, the people perſiſted in imputing to Catharine all the odium of a plot ſo helliſh. They accuſed her of perfidy and cruelty; they regarded her as one of the vileſt women who had ever uſurped the throne; they deteſted her power, but they cringed at her feet.

The death of Prince Ivan gave reaſon to imagine, that this would not be the laſt outrage which Catharine might be bold enough to commit. It was apprehended that the ſacrifice of her ſon would very ſhortly put the finiſhing ſtroke to her crimes. Prudence was not as yet among the number of the virtues of this Prince. Lively, impetuous, having a diſlike to Count Panin his governor, and perceiving abſurdities in him, he frequently permitted expreſſions to eſcape which might have become fatal to him. We are aſſured that he ſometimes enquired why his father had been put to death, and why his mother had taken poſſeſſion of a throne of which he was the heir? Theſe queſtions could not poſſibly fail of reaching the ears of Catharine. They were repeated in Peterſburgh, and all who heard them ſhuddered



GREGORY GREGORIEWITZ ORLOFF.

Published Feb.ʸ 12.th 1800. by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

dered at the artleſs frankneſs which had dictated them.

Notwithſtanding, however Catharine ought to have been affected with the diſcourſe of her ſon, ſhe feigned ignorance of it, and attributed the blame of it leſs to this young Prince than to ſome enemies of her repoſe. She did not doubt that age and experience would render him more diſcreet. The unwearied patience and the profound reſpect of Paul Petrowitz have ſince given ſufficient proof that ſhe did not deceive herſelf.

BOOK VI.

Miſunderſtanding between Gregory Orloff and Panin.—Wiſſotzky becomes a Lover of the Empreſs—Diſmiſſion of the Chancellor Woronzoff—The Duke de Choiſeul incites the Turks to take up Arms againſt Ruſſia—Adventure of Lord Matartney—Tournaments—Convocation of the Deputies of the People—Inoculation of the Grand-Duke—Prince Henry of Pruſſia at Peterſburgh—A Ruſſian Squadron in the Archipelago—Princeſs Tarrakanoff.

A. D. 1765. WHILE Catharine was impoſing laws on Poland, feeding Auſtria with hopes, making her peace with Pruſſia, and treating with England, ſhe kept on fair terms with all the other courts of Europe, and exerted herſelf with good effect to be ſpeedily in a condition to make herſelf feared by them. She ſtrained every nerve to re-animate the commerce of her ſtates, to increaſe her marine, and, above all, to ſoften the manners of a people ſtill more than half barbarian. But, indifferently ſeconded by the grandees of the empire, and even by thoſe who were about her perſon, her inſtitutions at firſt

made but a very tardy progreſs. The ſpirit of diviſion ſtill prevailed in Peterſburgh. The attempts which ſhe was under the neceſſity of either checking or puniſhing, compelled Catharine to place conſtant reliance on the conſpirators to whom ſhe owed her elevation to the throne, and the favours which ſhe was obliged inceſſantly to beſtow on thoſe greedy and inſolent pretenders, only ſerved to excite diſcontent and hatred. New conſpiracies were every day formed, and every day her good fortune, or rather her addreſs, extricated her from the danger. The puniſhments inflicted were ſecret and terrible. The authors of one plot had it rarely in their power to engage in a ſecond.

What afflicted the Empreſs moſt was the miſunderſtanding which had ariſen between her favourite and her prime miniſter, becauſe the devotedneſs and intrepidity of the one, were no leſs uſeful to her than the name and ability of the other. Panin had, undoubtedly, very great faults, but he was the only perſon who really poſſeſſed talents for buſineſs. His coldneſs of imagination, his gloomineſs, his pride, his ſelf-conceit, and eſpecially his indolence, were highly diſpleaſing to Catharine; but ſhe did juſtice to his capacity, and continued to put confidence in him. Beſides, when he had given that Princeſs cauſe of diſſatisfaction, he had the art of bringing her round again.

Orloff's credit was founded on claims of a nature more tender; but he employed it with little diſcretion, and inceſſantly ſhook it to the foundation. A lover ſatiated with his good fortune, the aſſiduity which Catharine exacted appeared to him a conſtraint on his liberty. He would go a-bear-hunting for weeks together, and dared to indulge himſelf, on theſe occaſions, in infidelities which he was not ſufficiently careful to conceal from his miſtreſs, and the example of which ſhe was naturally diſpoſed to follow. Panin, who obſerved this conduct, imagined he could avail

avail himſelf of it to ruin the arrogant favourite. He perceived that the Empreſs frequently caſt a look of complacency on a young officer named Wiſſotzky. Henceforward he employed all his ſkill to ſtrengthen this attachment. Wiſſotzky was ſoon made happy; and, directed by the crafty miniſter, inſpired the Empreſs with a paſſion ſufficiently violent to create a belief that Orloff would be made a ſacrifice. But this gentleman, who did not chuſe to ſurrender his rights, ſhewed himſelf by turns jealous and tender, dangerous and neceſſary. He reſumed his aſcendant over the heart of Catharine, and the new lover was diſmiſſed with a ſplendid recompenſe, and an employment which fixed him in a diſtant province.

Though Panin enjoyed very high credit, much conſideration, the advantages reſulting from his place of governor to the Grand-duke, and the title of prime miniſter, the return of the chancellor Woronzoff, whoſe functions he had executed during his abſence, occaſioned him much uneaſineſs. Eager to preſerve all his authority, and the luſtre of a repreſentation which was of ineſtimable value in his apprehenſion, he debaſed himſelf ſo far as to flatter the favourite whom he had endeavoured to ſupplant. It was a matter of no great difficulty to blind Orloff. Calling conſtantly to recollection, with bitter reſentment, the meaſures taken by the chancellor to obſtruct his elevation to the throne, he made it a point with the Empreſs to keep him at a diſtance from buſineſs, and became the advocate of an enemy leſs courageous, but more artful. Catharine gave the Chancellor an extremely cold reception. Inſtead of replacing him in the exerciſe of his miniſterial functions, as ſhe had given him reaſon to hope at his departure, ſhe cauſed it to be inſinuated to him, that he would do well to reſign a ſituation which he could no longer fill to the ſatisfaction of his ſovereign. The Chancellor heſitated long: but at length the counſels of his friends turned the ſcale. He appeared

voluntarily to give in a forced reſignation. A regret was on this expreſſed, not more ſincere than his wiſh for retirement; and in order to demonſtrate to him the ſecret joy which his compliance inſpired, they granted him a gratification of 50,000 roubles, and an annual penſion of 7000.

Among the means without number, which Catharine employed to detect the authors of the cabals which continually diſturbed her repoſe, ſhe neglected not the interception of the correſpondence of foreign miniſters. That of the French envoy was ſold to her. She even contrived to procure a double of his cipher; and thought ſhe found in his letters, if not an adherence to the practices of conſpiracy, at leaſt the knowledge of all, even the moſt myſterious, tranſactions of her court. Her pride fired into indignation at it; her hatred to the court of Verſailles increaſed; and the cold reception given to the miniſter from that court, laid him under the neceſſity of withdrawing.

Louis XV. on this ſent to Peterſburgh the Marquis de Beauffet, a man vain, and of ſlender capacity, to whom the miniſters of Catharine preferred many complaints of the *chargé d'affaires* who preceded him. As Beauffet was ignorant of the real cauſe of their complaints, he paid little attention to them, and employed no precaution to prevent the repetition of them againſt himſelf. Nay, he imagined they were to be aſcribed merely to the blind jealouſy with which the glory of the French nation inſpired the Empreſs, whereas that ambitious woman was endeavouring, on the contrary, to captivate the eſteem and attract to herſelf the applauſe of that nation. There was no end to her cajoling of Voltaire and d'Alembert. She made an offer to the laſt-named gentleman, of the place of governor to the Grand-duke, with a penſion of 24,000 roubles, and every accommodation for completing the Encyclopedia at Peterſburgh, advantages which the philoſopher had the good ſenſe to reject.

reject. Being informed that Diderot was in narrow circumſtances, and wiſhed to diſpoſe of his library in order to portion off his only daughter, ſhe purchaſed that library, let it remain in his poſſeſſion, and gave him a ſalary as librarian. She had ſent, ſome time before, to the celebrated ſurgeon, Morand, a collection of gold and ſilver medals ſtruck in Ruſſia, as an expreſſion of her ſatisfaction for the anatomical preparations, and the chirurgical inſtruments which he had procured her. Almoſt all the literati and the moſt diſtinguiſhed artiſts of Paris, received ſome proofs of her munificence; and admiring her bounty, and ignorant of, or forgetting, her crimes, ſet Fame's hundred tongues a-lying in her praiſe.

At the ſame time, the ſecret object which that Princeſs had propoſed to herſelf, in putting the crown on Poniatowſky's head, began to appear. Believing herſelf ſecure of the ſubmiſſiveneſs of that monarch, ſhe threw off all conſtraint, and openly avowed deſigns which policy itſelf had made it criminal in the Polanders to impute to her. Her pretenſions were undoubtedly extravagant; but as ſhe was determined that they ſhould not be inefficient, ſhe declared them only by marching troops to be in readineſs to make them good, and made every propoſal with an air of authority. After having traced on the chart, the lines of demarcation, conformably to which Ruſſia appropriated to herſelf a great part of the territory of Poland, Catharine inſiſted that the validity of thoſe lines ſhould be admitted, and that the limits of the two ſtates ſhould be ſettled accordingly. She farther inſiſted, that the king and republic ſhould contract with her a treaty of alliance, offenſive and defenſive, and that they ſhould grant the diſſidents the free enjoyment of all the rights of the catholics, even that of admiſſion into the ſenate. This laſt demand, the only one which had juſtice on its ſide, roufed the indignation of a bigotted and deſpotic nobility. Loud murmurs were heard on all ſides; and, *to arms*, was

the general cry. Whether he was really aſhamed of the ſacrifices preſcribed to his gratitude, or rather, whether he was afraid of incurring the reſentment of the whole nation, the king himſelf declared he could not conſent to thoſe ſacrifices. But, in order the better to form a judgment of the pretexts under which Catharine diſguiſed her ambition, it is neceſſary to have a clear view of what the Poliſh diſſidents were.

It was during the reign of Sigiſmund I. (A. D. 1540,) that proteſtantiſm began to ſpread over Poland. The partiſans of that ſect ſoon became ſo numerous that, under the reign of Sigiſmund Auguſtus, they obtained, as well as the Greeks and Arians, the perfect freedom of their worſhip, the right of voting in the diets, and the enjoyment of the ſame privileges with the catholics. No one at that time appeared to take offence at this act of juſtice; on the contrary, it was a ground of ſatisfaction, that difference in religion produced none in civil and political rights. As a term of diſtinction among themſelves, the adherents to the different modes of religious worſhip aſſumed the name of *Diſſidents*: but that appellation, which has ſince become an object of proſcription, then implied nothing reproachful; and the ſucceſſors of Sigiſmund Auguſtus, in ſwearing to obſerve the *pacta conventa*, likewiſe ſwore to maintain peace among the diſſidents. When Henry de Valois was elected King of Poland, he wanted to evade taking an oath which encroached on his intolerant ſuperſtition: but to no purpoſe. He was under the neceſſity of renouncing the crown, or of ſwearing to protect the diſſidents; he ſwallowed the oath.

The catholics having afterwards acquired more power, abandoned themſelves to that head-ſtrong zeal, which leads them always to believe that their own religion is the only one good for any thing, and permits them not to tolerate any other. They began by

by perſecuting the Arians, whoſe opinions had already made conſiderable progreſs; they poſſeſſed ſufficient influence to ſtrip them of all their rights, and even to procure their baniſhment from Poland. The Greek Chriſtians and the Proteſtants, who had aſſiſted in perſecuting the Arians, ſoon ſuffered for their imprudence. The catholics attacked them in their turn, and ſucceeded in effecting their total excluſion from the diets.

The humiliation of being deprived of the right of ſuffrage, converted many Polanders to catholiciſm. But, if the number of the diſſidents diminiſhed, thoſe who adhered to their principles only became more firmly attached to their party. They called aloud for the re-eſtabliſhment of the treaty of Oliva, concluded in 1660, which ſecured their privileges, and had been guaranteed by ſo many potentates. The catholics, who exerciſed ſole dominion in the diets, and conſequently had the power of indulging, without control, their intolerant ſpirit, framed a decree which fixed the guilt of high-treaſon on ſuch of the diſſidents as ſhould appeal to foreign powers, to obtain the execution of the treaty infringed, and the re-eſtabliſhment of laws deſpotically abrogated. This decree completed the revolt of the diſſidents. Ruſſia obſerved their indignation, and ſecretly blew it into a flame. The Greek diſſidents then made their appeal to the court of Peterſburgh. The proteſtants implored the interpoſition of thoſe of London and Berlin. Theſe courts promiſed their ſupport, and this was the moſt ſpecious pretext for the armaments of Ruſſia.

A. D. 1766. When the diet of 1766 aſſembled, the miniſters of the courts who had become guarantees, preſented memorials to it, in favour of the diſſidents, which excited violent murmurings. The haughty and fanatical Biſhop of Cracow, Soltyk, maintained that the diſſidents had no title to reclaim aboliſhed rights, and that they violated the conſtitu-

tion of the republic in recurring to the intervention of foreign powers. Not ſatisfied with inſiſting on the execution of iniquitous laws enacted againſt the diſſidents, he propoſed new diſqualifications ſtill more ſevere. His ſentiments were adopted by the great majority of a nobility who blindly confounded religious prejudices with political rights; and the oppoſition of ſome men more illuminated, or more equitable, occaſioned warm debates. Diſorder was carried to its height. The King endeavoured to interpoſe a ſentiment of moderation; he immediately incurred the reproach of favouring the enemies of the ſtate. He thought it his duty to retire. There were many other ſittings no leſs ſcandalous than the firſt; and the tremendous laws, propoſed againſt the diſſidents, were imprudently confirmed. The Ruſſian troops on this advanced up to the gates of Warſaw. Terror then obliged the diet to open their eyes. They flattered themſelves the Empreſs would be ſatisfied by their granting the diſſidents more liberty in the exerciſe of their religion. But this palliative by no means came up to Catharine's views. The diſſidents, who demanded a complete equality of rights, formed various confederations, which were preſently joined by many catholics, whom the Ruſſians had gained over.

Catharine wiſhed to diſunite Poland, in order, afterward, to conquer it the more eaſily. Her precautions were taken with ſo much ſagacity, that the King of Pruſſia, no leſs ambitious than herſelf, exerted all his influence to promote her deſigns; and the cabinets of London, Stockholm, and Berlin, who imagined they were interpoſing merely in favour of religion, openly applauded a ſyſtem of rapacity.

A. D. 1767. New grievances farther increaſed the diſſentions of Poland. The catholic nobility, under the denomination of malecontents, formed, in all the provinces, aſſociations which united into one general confederation, whereof Prince Charles Radziwil was appointed

appointed mareſchal. This Prince had been one of the moſt violent opponents of Poniatowſky's election. He affected to deſpiſe ſtill more than he hated him. When he ſaw him abandoned by the Ruſſians, he united his confederation to that of the diſſidents, and aſſembled their leading men in his palace at Warſaw, under the very eye of the monarch:

In this extremity Staniſlaus-Auguſtus, who perceived the neceſſity of recurring to his dependence on Ruſſia, ſummoned a diet extraordinary. But that diet was far from adopting his views. Notwithſtanding the preſence of the Ruſſian army, and the haughty demeanor of Prince Nicolas Repnin, who then ruled in Warſaw much more than the King himſelf, the Biſhop of Cracow and his adherents, always impetuous, always fanatical, indulged themſelves in a ſtrain of invective againſt the diſſidents, which regard to their perſonal ſafety, if not to decency and good ſenſe, ought to have reſtrained. It was not long before this temerity met its puniſhment. That very evening, while the Biſhop was at table in the houſe of Count Miniſzeck, the Ruſſian colonel, Igœlſtrom, with a detachment of ſoldiers at his back, arrived, and, in name of the Empreſs, carried off the prelate, no one daring to make the ſlighteſt reſiſtance. The Biſhop of Kiœwie, the Count de Rzvouſky, ſtaroſt of Dolina, his eldeſt ſon, and ſeveral other noblemen, were likewiſe ſeparately put under arreſt.

The day after this outrage was committed Prince Repnin addreſſed a note to the confederates, in which he pretended that he was under the neceſſity of violating Poliſh liberty, purely for the benefit of Poland. The members of the diet applied to the King to demand the liberation of the priſoners. The king accordingly preferred an immediate requeſt to Prince Repnin that he would enlarge them; but it was haughtily refuſed, and they were conveyed into the heart of Ruſſia, from whence they did not return till after an exile of ſix years.

The

The diet, meanwhile, no longer deliberated but with fear and trembling, and, after a few uſeleſs ſittings, appointed a committee to regulate the rights of the diſſidents, in concert with the miniſters of the protecting courts. They came to receive the orders of Prince Repnin, at whoſe houſe aſſembled the plenipotentiaries from Great Britain, Pruſſia, Sweden and Denmark; and when the committee had received thoſe orders they reported them to the diet, who had become too wiſe to offer a word of contradiction. The diſſidents obtained, then, every thing that the Ruſſian ambaſſador was pleaſed to demand in their behalf. The ancient laws of which they claimed the reſtoration were put in force, and ſome others, ſtill more favourable to them, were framed. But this was undoubtedly no more than juſtice, againſt which nothing can be alleged except the mode of adminiſtering it. The political rights of the diſſidents were ſacred. They had been arbitrarily aboliſhed; it was fit therefore they ſhould be re-eſtabliſhed. What alone muſt be matter of affliction to the real friend of the liberties of Poland, was a multitude of regulations introduced by Catharine, for the expreſs purpoſe of prolonging the diſorder and anarchy of that wretched country, and of leaving it for ever defenceleſs againſt the uſurpations ſhe was projecting.

A ſervile ſubmiſſion had promptly ſucceeded in Warſaw to the eccentricities of a lofty independence. But this forced ſtate could not be of long duration. Murmuring was upon the lips, and vengeance lay brooding at the bottom of the heart. As ſoon as the diet ſeparated, the catholic nobles ſpoke aloud their complaints on occaſion of the laws promulgated in favour of the diſſidents, and they entered into new confederations for the defence of the Roman-catholic religion. The confederates had ſtandards on which were painted the Virgin Mary and the Infant Jeſus; they wore, like the croiſaders of the fifteenth century, croſſes embroidered on their coats; and, what is ſtill more

more unaccountable, they put themſelves under the protection of the Turks, and the votaries of Mahomet prepared to fight in ſupport of a cauſe which wanted to paſs for that of Chriſt.

Staniſlaus-Auguſtus being able neither to acquire the confidence of his own ſubjects nor to recover the friendſhip of Ruſſia, was blamed by all parties, and lived in his capital rather as a priſoner than as a king. Catharine would perhaps have eaſily forgiven him a few moments of apparent defection, but the aſcendant of Orloff forbade. Prince Repnin governed deſpotically in Warſaw, and, to flatter the favourite of his ſovereign, omitted no opportunity of humbling a feeble and helpleſs king. We ſhall produce a ſingle fact, to prove in what conſideration his Poliſh Majeſty was held by the Ruſſian ambaſſador. One evening that the King went to the theatre, the ambaſſador did not appear at the uſual hour. It being latiſh, the curtain roſe and the piece commenced. They had got into the ſecond act when Repnin entered. Nettled that they had not waited for him, he ordered the performance to be interrupted, and the players to begin again.

The conduct of the court of Ruſſia at the ſame time filled Europe with aſtoniſhment. It was hardly conceivable that Catharine ſhould have, of a ſudden, become the enemy of a king whom ſhe herſelf had raiſed to the throne. But what was to be expected from the faint recollection of an extinguiſhed love on the heart of a Princeſs whoſe object it was, in forging fetters for Poland, to domineer over all the potentates of the north, and to render herſelf formidable to thoſe of the ſouth? She was ſure that the King of Pruſſia wiſhed for nothing better than to ſhare with her the provinces of Poland. She gave what laws ſhe pleaſed to Sweden and Denmark, managing the one by intrigue, the other by the hope held out of the acceſſion of Holſtein to that power. She flattered

tered England with a treaty of alliance and commerce. Every thing ſeemed to concur in promoting her ambitious views.

The Duke de Choiſeul, who, under the appearance of levity concealed a profound genius, and to whom nothing perhaps was wanting to conſtitute a great miniſter but more ſteadineſs in proſecuting his deſigns, and greater frugality in managing the treaſures of France, was the firſt who diſcovered the ſecret views of Catharine. He clearly perceived, that the accumulation of power at which ſhe aimed muſt neceſſarily diminiſh the conſideration and the influence of the court of Verſailles. He reſolved to attack the evil in its principle; and, to render abortive the projects of Catharine, exhauſt her reſources, and perhaps tumble her from her throne, he undertook to embroil her in war with the Ottoman empire.

This miniſter accordingly addreſſed himſelf to the Count de Vergennes, ambaſſador from France at Conſtantinople, and having unfolded the grounds of his apprehenſions, exhorted him to ſecond his project. The Duke de Choiſeul was well acquainted with the feeble and declining ſtate of the Ottoman empire, and with the vices of a government which was the ſole cauſe of that feebleneſs: but he believed it ſtill in a condition to employ Ruſſia for a conſiderable time; and, be the iſſue of the war what it might, he wiſhed it to be undertaken.

Vergennes ſupported the deſigns of his court with equal addreſs and zeal. A long reſidence in Turkey had given him a thorough knowledge of the leading members of the divan, and of the means of influencing them. Theſe means he employed. He repreſented to the Ottoman miniſtry how unjuſt and dangerous it was that Ruſſia ſhould dare to violate the rights of the Poliſh nation, and invade their territories. He made them ſenſible that the demarcation of limits inſiſted on by the court of Peterſburgh would

would have fatal consequences to the security of their possessions on the Black Sea, and pressed them to resist that demarcation.

The Porte, whose protection the confederated Poles had already implored, at first listened to the counsels of Vergennes with deference. A memorial was addressed to the King of Poland, demanding a suspension of the regulations respecting the limits, till the necessary explanations were given to secure the Porte against the danger with which the cession of the Polonese territory threatened the Ottoman empire. But Stanislaus-Augustus, who was under incessant terror of giving offence to Catharine, and who desired, at whatever price, to regain her friendship, replied to the Grand-signor, that there was no intention to alter the limits between Russia and Poland; and this assurance for some time lulled the divan into its usual apathy.

The court of Petersburgh on this concluded a treaty of commerce and alliance with that of London, a treaty which extended the privileges of British subjects, diminished the duties on importation of their commodities, and conferred on them other great advantages. Her natural predilection in favour of England, as well as a wish to make sure of additional aid in the war which she was meditating against the Turks, determined Catharine to ally herself to the court of London.

Nevertheless, at the very moment when Catharine was displaying the greatest partiality to the British nation, she treated very unceremoniously the Lord Macartney, ambassador from England. The better to conciliate the good will of the Empress, Lord Macartney carried on a commerce of gallantry with one of the maids of honour of that Princess. Their intrigue was for a considerable time conducted with secrecy; but the lady became pregnant; and this adventure being too notorious to admit of the Empress's pretending ignorance of it, she assumed the character

character of extreme ſeverity, diſmiſſed the offender from her ſervice, and for ſome time forbid the ambaſſador to appear at court. This rigour in Catharine preſented undoubtedly a ſtriking contraſt with the liberties in which ſhe indulged herſelf. She muſt have been ſtrangely under the power of ſelf-deceit, if ſhe believed it poſſible thereby to throw a vail over her own conduct: but it is certain that ſhe ſometimes affected, in the eyes of thoſe who knew her beſt, as much hypocriſy in morals as in religion. Two ladies of her court, one of them her ancient confidant, being at a maſked ball, were talking rather too loud about one of their lovers: Catharine came up, and, in a tone of ſeverity, commanded them to leave the ball-room, ſince they did not underſtand better to reſpect the laws of decency.

The haughtineſs in which Catharine ſometimes arrayed herſelf could neither gain her the friendſhip of her court, nor contribute toward the reſtoration of the tranquillity of the empire. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff had been for the ſecond time exiled to Moſcow. That young woman, whoſe greateſt pleaſure ſeemed to conſiſt in braving danger, avenged herſelf of the ingratitude ſhe had experienced, by diſcloſing the crimes of the conſpiracy in which ſhe had acted a principal part, and by inflaming the hatred which the Empreſs excited. Without either eſteeming or pitying the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, many perſons adopted her reſentments; and the fire of ſedition, dexterouſly blown up by her, made a daily and rapid progreſs.

Informed of the murmurings at Moſcow, Catharine affected to deſpiſe them, and reſolved to ſuppreſs them by her preſence. But as the ſeverity of winter hardly permitted her to undertake a long journey, ſhe endeavoured, in the mean time, to divert the attention of the malecontents by a report of the pleaſures enjoyed at her court. Peterſburgh exhibited two or three tournaments, in which the Ruſſian courtiers, in the dreſs and armour of ancient knight-

knighthood, displayed more magnificence than gallantry, and more force than skill, by cutting off the heads of a few mannikins which represented the moors, and by piercing with their lances tigers and wild-boars of pasteboard. These expensive and futile exhibitions met with unmixed disapprobation. Nothing however was neglected that could contribute to their splendor or interest. An amphitheatre was erected at the extremity of the circus destined for the exercises of the knights, and two superb apartments were reared, the one for the Empress, the other for the Grand-duke. In the centre of the circus was a throne, on which the judge of the field was seated, with forty officers in his train, four heralds-at-arms, and two trumpets; and on the four sides of the grand area were placed other trumpets, tymbals, and various sorts of instruments, the military music of which enlivened the justing matches. The ladies of the court engaged as well as the knights. They were divided into four troops, each of which represented a different nation. There were Sclavonians, Indians, Romans and Turks, all magnificently dressed, and covered with pearls and precious stones. At the head of the two last troops marched Gregory Orloff and his brother Alexis.

The celebrated Mareschal Munich was appointed first judge of the field, and before the distribution of the prizes he pronounced an oration, which evinces what a master in the art of flattering the aged warrior approved himself. Here it is:

" Illustrious Ladies and Chevaliers,

" No one among you can be ignorant that not a " single day passes, no not an instant, in which we " do not behold the attention of our most gracious " Empress to increase the lustre of her empire, to " extend the sphere of happiness to her subjects in " general, and to enhance the renown of her nobi- " lity in particular.

" This

"This incomparable ſovereign has made choice of "the preſent auſpicious day, to give to the prime no- "bility of her empire an opportunity of ſignalizing "their dexterity in the military exerciſes of a bril- "liant carouſal, and ſuch as has never hitherto been "preſented in Ruſſia. Who but muſt partake with "me in ſentiments of admiration and gratitude, "which her Majeſty has ſo juſtly earned by this ma- "ternal goodneſs and foreſight?

"Illuſtrious Ladies and Chevaliers, you have ac- "quitted yourſelves in theſe noble exerciſes in a "manner worthy of your birth, and calculated to "give you the aſſurance of having merited the good "graces of her Majeſty, the favour of his lordſhip "the Grand-duke, and univerſal applauſe."

He then turned to the Counteſs de Boutourlin, who had gained the firſt prize, and ſaid:

"To you, Madam, her Imperial Majeſty authorizes "me to aſſign the firſt prize, the recompenſe of an "addreſs and grace far above the ordinary ſtandard, "and which have commanded every ſuffrage. Permit "me, Madam, to be the firſt to congratulate you "on this honourable diſtinction, which entitles you "to diſtribute, with your glorious hands, the other "prizes to the ladies and the valorous knights.

"As to myſelf, grown grey in a military ſervice of "ſixty-ſix years, the oldeſt man and the moſt ancient "general in Europe, after having enjoyed the glory "of more than once leading the Ruſſian armies to "victory, I conſider as the recompenſe which crowns "all my labours, the honour of having been this day "not only the witneſs, but, what is much more, the "premier judge of your glorious exploits."

Catharine, at the ſame time, had the ſkill to employ more honourable means to eſtabliſh her authority. She engaged in uſeful reforms and eſtabliſhments. She corrected the courts of juſtice; ſhe founded ſchools, hoſpitals, colonies. She endeavoured to inſpire her people with love to the laws, and to ſoften

their

their manners by inſtruction. Fond of unbounded ſway, ardent in the purſuit of every ſpecies of glory, ſhe wiſhed to be at once a conqueror and a law-giver. Amidſt conſpiracies formed to ſubvert her throne, occupied in making preparations for a war which ſeemed to engroſs her whole attention, and engaged in intrigues of gallantry, ſhe overlooked nothing that could command reſpect or captivate admiration.

There was at that time no country in the world in which juriſprudence was more perplexed and more uncertain than in Ruſſia. The formleſs code of Alexis Michaelowitz, compoſed to ſerve as the baſis of legiſlation, was, if not abrogated, at leaſt contradicted, by the numerous edicts of his ſucceſſors, edicts always dictated by the intereſt or caprice of the moment. The ſenate, the colleges, the benches of the empire, embarraſſed by ſo many contending authorities and ſtatutes, protracted law ſuits to perpetuity, or terminated them without any regard to equity. To this evil was added one of ſtill greater magnitude, that of the venality of the judges, and the unlimited power with which they were armed.

Catharine reſolved to apply a remedy to all theſe irregularities, and ſhe laboured not altogether unſucceſsfully. She eſtabliſhed in the ſenate and in the colleges various departments, which, having only one line of buſineſs to employ each in particular, muſt neceſſarily produce a more regular mode of procedure, greater diſpatch, and ſupply fewer reſources to chicane. Afterwards, to deprive the judges of every pretext to excuſe their negligence or their prevarication, ſhe increaſed the emoluments of their places, a method which unfortunately is not always effectual, but which proves that Catharine well underſtood the character of the nation which ſhe governed. In truth, if magiſtrates had poſſeſſed a ſenſe of virtue, was it not rather by the ſentiment of glory than by pecuniary rewards that they ought to have been ſtimu-

lated to flee injuſtice? The Empreſs employed therefore the motive which ſhe believed capable of influencing them moſt powerfully. She ſaid in the oukaſe addreſſed to them:—"Want may hitherto "have favoured a propenſity to intereſt: but your "country is henceforth herſelf to pay the price of "your labours; and what till now might be par-"donable is going to become criminal." Catharine did more than increaſe the ſalaries of the judges; ſhe ſettled one half the ſum on them, after age and infirmities had obliged them to quit their ſtations. This firſt labour being accompliſhed, the Empreſs turned her attention to the framing of a new code of laws.

All the provinces of Ruſſia, and even the barbarous nations which inhabit the moſt remote regions of that vaſt empire, were ordered to ſend deputies to Moſcow, to communicate their ideas reſpecting the laws beſt adapted to their condition. Catharine herſelf repaired to that capital. The opening of this aſſembly of the ſtates was conducted with extraordinary pomp. It was undoubtedly an intereſting and a novel ſpectacle, that of the deputies of numerous tribes, ſo different in their manners, in their garb, in their language, and they muſt have been aſtoniſhed to find themſelves convoked to diſcuſs the laws by which they were to be governed, they who till then had never known what it was but to yield implicit obedience to the arbitrary will of a maſter, whom they frequently did not know.

The Empreſs, who wiſhed to beſtow on this aſſembly an appearance of the moſt perfect liberty, had a gallery erected for herſelf in the hall, from whence, without being viſible, ſhe could hear and ſee every thing that paſſed. They began by reading the inſtructions tranſlated into the Ruſſian tongue, the original of which, written in French, and copied almoſt entirely by the Empreſs's own hand, has ſince been depoſited in the library of the academy of Peterſburgh.

terſburgh. The reading was frequently interrupted by burſts of applauſe. The illumination, the wiſdom, the humanity of the ſovereign were extolled to the ſkies. But fear and flattery had a greater ſhare in dictating thoſe praiſes than admiration. They wiſhed to attract the favour of the Empreſs, or, at leaſt, eſcape a journey into Siberia. The deputies of the Samoiedes alone had the courage to ſpeak freely. One of them, in the name of his fellows, aroſe and ſaid: "We are ſimple and honeſt. We paſture our rein-"deer in tranquillity. We have no occaſion for "a new code: but compoſe for the Ruſſians, our "neighbours, and for the governors whom you ſend "us, laws that may reſtrain their rapacity."

The new ſittings were not ſo orderly. Mention had been made of granting liberty to the peaſants. Many thouſands of thoſe oppreſſed creatures were preparing to maintain, by force, what they expected from equity. The nobility were apprehenſive of an inſurrection; they dreaded, above all things the diminution of their riches, and ſome of the nobles had the audacity to declare they would poignard the firſt perſon who ſhould propoſe the enfranchiſement of the ſerfs. In the face of this menace, Count Scheremetoff, the richeſt individual in Ruſſia, ſaid that he cheerfully conſented to the enfranchiſement in queſtion. Debates grew warm, and threatened fatal conſequences. The Empreſs had delegated to the deputies an authority ſo unlimited, that with a moderate ſhare of addreſs they might have acquired the power of dethroning her who had brought them together. Some of them went ſo far as to intimate that they underſtood the full extent of their power. Catharine ſhrunk from the idea of it, and the deputies were ſpeedily ſent back to their ſeveral provinces.

Previous, however, to the diſſolution of this aſſembly, it was deemed neceſſary that it ſhould ſignalize itſelf by ſome dazzling expreſſion of gratitude. It was

determined, that if the benefit propoſed to the nation ſhould be loſt to the public, it ſhould not be ſo at leaſt to the ſovereign, with whom the noble idea had originated. There were voted accordingly to that Princeſs, by general acclamation, the titles of the GREAT, the WISE, the PRUDENT, and the MOTHER OF HER COUNTRY; but when ſhe was ſupplicated to accept of thoſe titles, ſhe replied with an affected modeſty, "That if "ſhe rendered herſelf worthy of the firſt, it was the "province of poſterity to beſtow it; that wiſdom and "prudence were gifts from heaven, for which ſhe "offered up daily thanks, without preſuming to make "a merit of them; that, finally, the title of Mother "of her Country was by far the deareſt in her eyes, "the only one of which ſhe could accept, and which "ſhe conſidered as ſuperior to every other, as the "ſweeteſt, the moſt glorious recompenſe of the la-"bours ſhe ſupported, and the ſolicitude ſhe under-"went for a people ſo dear to her."

It may not be unimportant to obſerve, that the Empreſs made a preſent to each of the deputies of a gold medal, deſigned to tranſmit to poſterity the object of their convocation; and that the greateſt part of thoſe mean wretches almoſt immediately ſold their medals to the goldſmiths.

Proud of the performance which had procured her the homage of the aſſembly of Moſcow, Catharine eagerly exerted herſelf to ſend copies of it to the ſovereigns whoſe good-will ſhe was ſolicitous to acquire. They all preſented compliments of congratulation on the magnanimous undertaking in which ſhe had engaged, and did not heſitate to aſſure her that it would be an everlaſting monument of her glory. The King of Pruſſia, who well knew her diſpoſition to ſwallow flattery, and who always laviſhed it upon her with no leſs delicacy than addreſs, wrote her a long letter, in which he placed her between Solon and Lycurgus; and in his official diſpatch to the Count de Solms, thus expreſſes himſelf:—"...Hiſ-

"tory

"tory informs us that Semiramis commanded armies; "Queen Elizabeth of England is ranked among the "greateſt politicians; Maria-Thereſa of Auſtria diſ-"played uncommon intrepidity on her acceſſion to "the throne; but no woman had hitherto been a "legiſlatrix: that glory was reſerved for the Empreſs "of Ruſſia, and well does ſhe deſerve it." The Empreſs received this letter at Kaſan. She was then on a viſit to her Aſiatic provinces, and the famous banks of the Volga.

What muſt appear rather extraordinary is, that while Catharine was exerting herſelf to rear the fabric of her glory on a ſolid baſis, ſhe ſhould deem it a matter of ſingular importance to obtain from all the powers of Europe the title of *Imperial Majeſty*, which ſome of them refuſed her. The King of Sweden had long granted it; but the Swediſh diet did not carry their complaiſance ſo far till the beginning of this year.

A. D. 1768. Louis XV. obſtinately perſiſted in with-holding this deſignation. Knowing that the ſovereigns of Ruſſia had never begun to aſſume the title of Emperor till the time of Peter I. he conſidered them as in ſome meaſure a newly created nobility. He did not reflect that the power of Princes, not the antiquity of their race, conſtitutes their claims. The refuſal of the King of France was a ſource of humiliation to Catharine, but was not the only reaſon ſhe had to be diſpleaſed with him. She entertained no doubt that this monarch was acquainted with all the ſecrets of the conſpiracy which had placed her on the throne; and ſhe knew beſides, that the French ambaſſador at Conſtantinople had long been employing his influence to induce the Turks to declare war againſt Ruſſia. What then would ſhe have thought, had ſhe read a letter written by the Duke de Choiſeul, of which ſhe herſelf was the ſubject?—"We "well know," ſaid he, "the inconſiderate animoſity "of the court of Ruſſia againſt France. The King

" has ſuch a rooted contempt of the Princeſs who go-
" verns that country, of her ſentiments and conduct,
" that our intention is not to move a ſingle ſtep to-
" ward procuring an alteration. The King conſiders
" the hatred of Catharine as much more honourable
" than her friendſhip. At the ſame time he wiſhes
" to avoid the exploſion of an open rupture."

But the intrigues of a foreign court and the dangers of war could not greatly diſturb Catharine; nay, they were perhaps as neceſſary to her as the unremitting attention ſhe paid to the government of her empire, to ward off the remorſe and horror which purſued her. She could not help frequently reflecting that a ſingle moment might ſtrip her of the fruit of her crimes, and that the greateſt part of her ſubjects paſſionately longed for ſuch a moment. The name of Peter III. was become dear to the Ruſſians. They recollected with complacency the good which he had done, the deſire he expreſſed of doing more; they forgot his errors, his weakneſſes, expiated by too many calamities. They mourned over the diſmal lot of this Prince; and the croud of malecontents with which the empire was peopled, might conceal more than one avenger.

Stung to the quick by the deplorable death of the Czar, and enraged to behold his executioners dividing among them his ſpoils, a young officer, named Tſchoglokoff, reſolved to avenge him, and believed that heaven itſelf had inſpired the deſign. After long reflection on the means of executing his ſanguinary purpoſe, he repaired to the palace ſeveral days ſucceſſively, keeping himſelf always concealed in a dark paſſage which led to the remote apartments, whither the Empreſs reſorted when ſhe wiſhed to be in private. Chance ſaved the life of this Princeſs, by preventing her from going along the paſſage in which Tſchoglokoff waited for her. Vexed at a delay which he had not foreſeen, and impatient to ſtrike a blow which he deemed important to his country and glo-

rious

rious to himſelf, this young man had the imprudence to impart his ſecret to another officer, whom he conſidered as his friend. That friend made haſte to betray him. Orloff, informed of the meaſures which Tſchoglokoff was taking, and of the inſtant when he reſumed his ſtation to wait for the Empreſs, had him arreſted on the ſpot. He was found armed with a long dagger, and, without heſitation, acknowledged the uſe which he intended to make of it. Catharine, always ſufficiently miſtreſs of herſelf to conceal her indignation and her terrors, affected to pardon the daring invader of her life, whom a fit of political fanaticiſm had miſled. She even admitted him to her preſence, and ſpoke to him with gentleneſs. This generoſity was merely a diſguiſe. Catharine was ſolicitous to hide from the public eye a deſign which, had it been known, might ſoon have been imitated. But, as ſhe could not flatter herſelf with the hope of making a thorough convert of a man who, through an exceſs of humanity, had meditated aſſaſſination, ſhe ſoon ordered Tſchoglokoff to be arreſted and exiled to the wilds of Siberia.

To that very Siberia, however, whither Ruſſia ſends men condemned, into an exile worſe than death; to thoſe ever frozen deſerts, and to regions ſtill colder, ſhe is indebted for a great part of her wealth and glory. The agents of the two boards of commerce, the one of which is eſtabliſhed at Kamtſchatka, and the other at the mouth of the Kowima, informed the court of Peterſburgh of the diſcovery they had made of the Aléoutes iſlands, in the ſtrait which ſeparates the north-weſt coaſt of America from the continent of Aſia. The navigators of the two companies had arrived there almoſt at the ſame time, and purchaſed peltry, employing the means neceſſary to the continuance of that commerce. The furs thence produced, and which they ſent to the Empreſs, were extremely beautiful, eſpecially thoſe of the black fox.

About the ſame time Catharine formed the uſeful project of employing ſeveral men of talents to travel over the interior of her vaſt eſtates, in order to aſcertain the geographical poſition of the principal places, to obſerve their temperature, and to examine the nature of the ſoil, its productions, its riches, as well as the manners and the character of the tribes who people it. Supplied with every thing that could contribute toward the ſucceſs of an enterpriſe ſo noble, Pallas and Falk ſet out early in the year for the diſtricts of the Volga, and the governments of Orenburgh, of Ekatherinenburgh, and of Kaſan. Gmelin and Guldenſtædt were ſoon after diſpatched to viſit the banks of the Don and of the Donietz, up to the Dnieper, as well as all the country extending from Aſtrakan to the frontiers of Perſia. To this undertaking we ſtand indebted for the intereſting works of Pallas and of Gmelin.

Aſſured that it is leſs by the power of arms than by ſuperiority in arts and ſciences, that nations acquire a brilliant reputation in the annals of mankind, Catharine zealouſly encouraged men of letters and artiſts. She appropriated the ſum of 5000 roubles annually, to reward perſons who ſhould tranſlate into the Ruſſian language foreign books which merited that diſtinction. She granted additional privileges to the academy of ſciences at Peterſburgh, and invited illuſtrious ſtrangers to add the celebrity of their names to that of the names which already graced it.

She likewiſe increaſed the number of pupils in the academy of arts, founded during the reign of Elizabeth, and eſtabliſhed an order in it, better adapted to attain the object of its inſtitution. Ever ſince this reform took place, no pupil can be admitted who is above ſix years of age, in order to prevent the pernicious effects of a faulty education, in corrupting the underſtanding or the moral character. After being under the tuition of females for three years, they are turned over to male inſtructors, and

devote

devote their attention to the particular art for which they discover the greatest inclination. They may become painters, sculptors, architects, watch-makers, or learn the art of foundery, and of constructing physical and mathematical instruments. During the whole period of their residence in the academy, they are permitted to receive nothing from their relations. They are clothed and boarded at the expense of the state. At the age of fifteen they leave the academy. They are at liberty to settle wherever they please; and, if their conduct corresponds to the care employed in carrying on their education, letters of nobility are granted them. Independently of these advantages, those of the pupils who have carried off the first prizes, receive, for three years, a pension to enable them to travel through Europe.

The Empress well knew her subjects believed that she did not love her son, and that this was one of the causes of their estrangement from her. She found means to make them change this opinion, means which were at once to serve as a proof of her courage and a preservative of her beauty. Inoculation for the small-pox began to be practised in Europe; but this salutary mode of treating the distemper wore a terrifying aspect, and no sovereign had hitherto dared to undergo the operation. Catharine resolved that her son should submit to it. Before she tried the experiment on him, she had herself inoculated by Doctor Dimsdale, a famous English surgeon; and, when she was satisfied that no danger attended the process, prevailed with the Grand-duke to follow her example. The success was complete in both cases. The senate instituted a festival on the occasion. Dimsdale was magnificently recompensed; the courage and maternal tenderness of the Empress were extolled all over Europe.

From the moment that Turkey began to threaten, Catharine, who did not yet find herself in a condition to make war to advantage, suspended the regulation

lation of the limits between Ruſſia and Poland; but ſhe did not, however, renounce the hope of ſucceſsfully invading a part of that kingdom, the wretched inhabitants of which ſhe continued to divide and to oppreſs. Thoſe who were moſt impatient of the Ruſſian yoke, had oftener than once the boldneſs to attack their armies. Encouraged by Auſtria, and eſpecially by France, they made themſelves maſters of the city of Cracow, of a part of Podolia, and united their powers in the fortreſs of Bar, the name of which was then given to this confederation, which its bold exertions, and its misfortunes have raiſed to celebrity.

The Empreſs ordered a freſh reinforcement of troops to enter Poland, the command of which ſhe gave to lieutenant-general Soltikoff. The confederates, panic-ſtruck, addreſſed themſelves a ſecond time to the Turks. The Count de Vergennes, informed of this procedure, renewed his importunities to the divan, in the view of ſtimulating that cabinet to ſupport the Polanders, and oppoſe the ambitious projects of Catharine. In this he ſucceeded. The ambaſſador of that Princeſs was committed to the caſtle of the Seven Towers, and the *reis-effendi* delivered a manifeſto to the foreign miniſters, containing a declaration of war by the Grand-Signor againſt Ruſſia, and accuſing her of having infringed treaties, and violated the territory of the Ottoman empire. But ſuppoſing Vergennes to have employed no influence to rouſe the Turks to take up arms, ought they to have been tame ſpectators of the aggreſſions of Ruſſia? Ought they to have beheld with indifference Catharine treating Poland as a conquered province, in leaving it, by way of deriſion, the double title of kingdom and republic? Would it not even have been found policy in all the other powers to imitate the noble example of the Ottomans, and unite to check the oppreſſors of Poland. But the attention of each of them was engroſſed by its own

private

private advantage, without reflecting that their joint and leading intereſt was to maintain the balance of Europe. The Turks gave out that they were going to open the campaign with an army of 500,000 men. The Empreſs, by this time, feared neither the menaces nor the undiſciplined multitudes of the Ottomans. She had been allowed time to prepare for her defence, her exertions were formidable. She too addreſſed a manifeſto to all the miniſters of the neutral or allied powers, and declared war by ſound of trumpet in Peterſburgh.

A. D. 1769. The Ruſſian armies were ſpeedily in motion, and extended their progreſs from the banks of the Danube to thoſe of the river Kuban. The Tartars of the Krimea, who had engaged on the ſide of the Turks, were the firſt againſt whom Catharine's armies ſignalized their proweſs. General Iſakoff drove 12,000 of them out of New Servia, into which they had penetrated under the command of their Khan. Maſters of Azoff and of Taganrok, the Ruſſians put theſe two places in a condition to reſiſt their ancient poſſeſſors, and laboured unremittingly to increaſe the ſmall ſquadrons which have ſince ſecured to them the empire of the Black Sea.

The Koſacs of the Ukraine penetrated into Moldavia. Prince Gallitzin, who commanded the principal Ruſſian army, paſſed the Dnieper, and attacked 30,000 Turks, under the ramparts of Khoczim, but met with a repulſe, and the conquerors purſued him to the other ſide of the river. That general then publiſhed a manifeſto, inviting all the Poloneſe, who were not of the confederation of Bar, to take up arms againſt this confederation. Soltikoff had already ſolemnly declared to his army, that if any one, officer or ſoldier, took a confederate priſoner, and ſpared his life, he ſhould be ſeverely puniſhed. Nine noble Polanders ſoon after appeared at Warſaw, with both hands cut off. This mutilation was the work

of

of the Ruſſian General Drewitz. The barbarian had acted at once as their judge and their executioner.

Catharine recalled from Warſaw Prince Repnin, whoſe inſolence gave juſt offence to every Poliſh man, without excepting even the warmeſt friends of Ruſſia. He was replaced as ambaſſador by Prince Wolkonſky, who exerted himſelf in vain to effect the re-confederation already propoſed in Gallitzin's manifeſto. The Empreſs clearly perceived how dangerous it would be for her to have a general union among the Poles againſt the Ruſſians. But the efforts of her generals, and the intrigues of her miniſters, ſerved her views at that time much leſs effectually than the weakneſs and inattention of the court of Verſailles. Had that court been really in earneſt, the confederation of Bar would have been generaliſed, the Porte potently ſupported, and Poland would ſtill have been among the number of the powers of Europe.

Long before the execution of the partition of Poland, the Empreſs and the King of Pruſſia were equally ſenſible of the neceſſity of a perſonal conference on this important ſubject. But apprehenſive that ſuch an interview would not fail to give umbrage to the other powers, and that perhaps the object of it might be diſcovered, they thought proper to give it up. Frederick, upon this, having furniſhed his brother, Prince Henry, with proper inſtructions, diſpatched him to Ruſſia. The better to conceal the deſign of his journey, Prince Henry gave out that he had nothing in view but to pay a viſit to his ſiſter, the Queen of Sweden. When he got to Stockholm he declared it to be his intention to return to Pruſſia by way of Denmark. But he appeared all of a ſudden to change his purpoſe, and, under affectation of complaiſance to Catharine, yielded to her requeſt, that, being ſo near, he would favour her with a viſit at Peterſburgh. Thus, though Prince Henry left

Berlin

Berlin expreſsly in the view of travelling into Ruſſia, he contrived to have it believed that there was no premeditation in the caſe.

Prince Henry embarked at Stockholm, in a galley which conveyed him to Abo, the capital of Finland. Thence he repaired to Peterſburgh. A chamberlain from the Empreſs advanced to meet him on the frontiers of Ruſſia. General Bibikoff received him at the laſt ſtation previous to his reaching the metropolis, and conducted him to the palace prepared for his reſidence, and where the prime miniſter, Panin, was waiting to welcome him. The Prince entered the city under a diſcharge of artillery; and every where received the honours uſually paid to crowned heads. Next day he went to court with a ſplendid retinue, and dined in public with the Empreſs. Every thing was conducted this day with the moſt rigid attention to ceremony; but etiquette was afterwards diſpenſed with, and the Empreſs and the Prince could meet and converſe at perfect eaſe.

A. D. 1770. Every day was diſtinguiſhed by ſome feſtival, or ſome new ſpectacle. We ſhall not go into the detail of any of theſe, except of the *fête* given at Tzarſko-Zelo. Its magnificence entitles it to a place in hiſtory.

As the evening ſet in, the Empreſs, the Grand-duke, Prince Henry, and different perſonages about court, to the number of ſixteen, took their places in an immenſe ſledge, drawn by ſixteen horſes, the carriage covered, and lined with double glaſſes, which re-produced the images, without number, of all the objects within or on the outſide. This ſledge, followed by above 2000 more, left Peterſburgh; the whole company maſked and wearing dominos.

When the cavalcade had advanced a mile from the city, it paſſed under a vaſt triumphal arch ſuperbly illuminated. At the end of every mile in continuation, a grand pyramid aroſe, lighted up with ſingular art, and oppoſite to each of theſe was reared a plat-

a platform, on which the young peaſantry of both ſexes were dancing. Each platform preſented a different nation, which its dreſs, its mode of dancing, and its muſic, rendered eaſily diſtinguiſhable.

Half a league ſhort of the chateau of Tzarſko-Zelo, roſe a lofty mountain, repreſenting Veſuvius when he vomits out torrents of fire. This artificial eruption laſted all the time the carriages were filing off in ſight of the mountain.

The interior of the palace of Tzarſko-Zelo was irradiated by an infinite number of wax-lights. The dancing commenced and continued for two hours in different ſaloons. A diſcharge of cannon was ſuddenly heard, the dancing ceaſed, the wax-lights were extinguiſhed, all the company flocked to the windows and enjoyed the exhibition of a very magnificent artificial firework. Another burſt of artillery then gave the ſignal to relumine the apartments. A ſumptuous entertainment had already been ſerved up. On riſing from ſupper the dancing re-commenced, and laſted till the morning. Prince Henry paſſed all his evenings with the Empreſs, in a favourite retreat, which that Princeſs denominated her hermitage.

Perhaps it may be proper to convey an idea of this retreat which, under a modeſt name, contains every article of the moſt refined luxury. It occupies a complete wing of the imperial palace. The entrance is by a gallery decorated with valuable pictures. The other apartments are two ſaloons very elegantly finiſhed, and a dining-room, in which the company is entertained at confidential tables of different ſizes. No domeſtic is permitted to enter this apartment. All that is needful is to ſtrike the wainſcot, and there inſtantly ſtart up tables repleniſhed with every thing deſirable. From this hall there is a communication with a winter garden, where the gueſts walk through well gravelled alleys, under verdant trees, and amidſt fruits and flowers of every ſpecies. This garden is raiſed

raiſed on arches, and the flues which are underneath keep up conſtantly a gentle warmth; ſo that in the moſt rigorous ſeaſon, you may gather there the peach and the pine-apple, the hyacinth and the roſe.

Above is a terrace, where another garden in the Aſiatic taſte appears; but it can be enjoyed only in ſummer.

At the hermitage there was likewiſe a theatre, where they repreſented dramatic pieces, compoſed by the Empreſs and the wits of her court, and which generally conſiſted of ſatire on foreign courts, or of ludicrous alluſions to well-known characters at Peterſburgh.

Prince Henry expreſſed a wiſh to ſee Moſcow. He was immediately conveyed thither, in the carriages of the country, with uncommon rapidity. Three weeks after he found himſelf again at Peterſburgh.

Among the various preſents which he received from the Empreſs, particular notice was taken of the plate of the order of St. Andrew, decorated with very large brilliants, as well as a ſingle diamond, valued at 40,000 roubles. The ring which contained this jewel, was farther enriched by a portrait of Catharine.

But neither banquetings nor other amuſements diverted Prince Henry's attention from the ſecret object of his viſit. In the private interviews he had with the Empreſs, to diſmember Poland was a point determined. Catharine and Frederick were equally deſirous to undertake the diviſion of the ſpoil, but it was impoſſible without the co-operation of a third ally. Had Maria-Thereſa ſtill been ſole miſtreſs of the empire, it would have been, perhaps, impoſſible to decoy her into a ſcheme of plunder ſo palpably unjuſt. Joſeph II. was not ſo ſqueamiſh. Turkey, France, England, would likewiſe have had it in their power to maintain the treaties of which they were guarantees; but thoſe powers were ſo liable to impoſition, or ſo indifferent to the fate of other

other nations, that Catharine had the aſſurance to ſay to Prince Henry:—"I will bully Turkey and ca-"jole England: be it your care to buy Auſtria, that "ſhe may lull France to ſleep."

Prince Henry had ſuch a juſt preſentiment of the diſpoſitions of Joſeph II. and of his miniſter Kaunitz, that he acted as if he had been already in concert with them. He ſettled with Catharine the conditions of the partition of Poland, and fixed the extent of territory which each of the partitioning powers was to appropriate to itſelf. The treaty between thoſe powers, however, was not ſigned till two years after.

The war continued to rage on the frontiers of Turkey. Prince Gallitzin, mortified at his defeat, made a freſh attempt upon Khoczim. It was not more ſucceſsful than the firſt. Sixty thouſand Turks had juſt marched to the relief of that place; they defended it vigorouſly, and purſued the Ruſſians into Poland. Vanquiſhed in their turn, they fell back and re-entered Moldavia. At the opening of this campaign, the Turks fought with great valour and obſtinacy; but the ignorance of their generals and the diſorder which prevailed in their armies frequently diſappointed them of victory. After a ſeries of battles, during ten months, their force was reduced to almoſt nothing, and the fortreſs of Khoczim, which had been at firſt ſo gallantly defended, was tamely ſurrendered to two hundred Ruſſian grenadiers.

The Empreſs having been informed, that when the Turks purſued Prince Gallitzin they had entered the Poliſh territories, inſiſted that Poland ought not to ſuffer with impunity that infraction of the treaty of Carlowitz. Staniſlaus-Auguſtus and the ſenate of Warſaw, ever ſubmiſſive to the will of Catharine, declared war againſt the Porte. This meaſure, however, added abſolutely nothing to the force of Ruſſia. What could be done by a ſtate without an army, without

without money, and abandoned to all the horrors of anarchy?

But Catharine conceived a project more worthy of her genius. While her armies were preſſing the Ottomans on the banks of the Pruth, of the Danube, and of the Dnieper, and her fleets triumphing over them on the Black Sea, ſhe formed a reſolution to attack them in the very iſlands of Greece. Immediately a ſquadron of fifteen ſhips of the line, ſix frigates, a fleet of tranſports and bomb-veſſels, carrying frames of galleys and a body of troops ready for debarkation, iſſued from the extremity of the Baltic, cleared the North Sea and the Strait of Gibraltar, and after having been diſperſed by a tempeſt, rejoined, and diſplayed a triumphant flag over the Archipelago. This ſquadron was commanded by Admiral Spiridoff: but that admiral was himſelf ſubject to the command of Alexis Orloff, whom the perpetration of a deteſtable crime had ſuddenly raiſed from the rank of ſoldier to that of general, and in whoſe character audacity ſupplied the place of talents and experience.

Long before ſhe diſpatched her fleet for the Archipelago, the Empreſs had maintained an underſtanding with the principal iſlands of Greece. Her emiſſaries flattered her with the hope of exciting a general revolt in thoſe countries. The Marquis Maruzzi, banker at Corfou, and a proſelyte to the Greek religion, had paid a viſit to Peterſburgh, where he was decorated with the ribbon of Saint-Anne, and with the title of Miniſter of Ruſſia to Venice. He promiſed, in return, to advance the ſums neceſſary to the equipment of Alexis Orloff's expedition, and actually did furniſh 35,000,000 of livres.

On the iſſue of the war againſt the Turks depended the fate of Poland, and the conſideration which Ruſſia was henceforth to enjoy in Europe. Catharine was fully aware of this. She accordingly exerted all the efforts of her power, and all the reſources of her

genius to enſure ſucceſs. New ſquadrons were conſtructed; recruits innumerable proceeded to reinforce her armies. Diſſatisfied with Prince Gallitzin, ſhe recalled him, and gave the command of his army to Count Romanzoff, who was replaced in the Ukraine by General Panin. Prince Dolgorouky was at the head of a third army.

The Turks did not fail at the ſame time to reinforce their armies, and to give the command to generals whom they believed moſt capable of leading them to battle. The Grand-vizir himſelf aſſumed the ſupreme command. They likewiſe received powerful ſuccours from the Krimea. The celebrated Krim-Gherai was juſt dead, and was ſucceeded by his nephew. This new Khan was feeble and pacific. The Turks had him depoſed, and in his room was elected Kaplan-Gherai, a warlike prince, who ſoon appeared at the head of an united army of Tartars and Ottomans.

The Ruſſians opened the campaign with the ſiege of Bender, a place renowned in hiſtory by the retreat and long reſidence of Charles XII. But, harraſſed by the Tartars, they were obliged to abandon for ſome time their attempt to capture that city. More fortunate in another quarter, they made themſelves maſters of Yaſſi and of Braïlow. Theſe advantages were of little importance. Two grand battles decided the fate of the campaign, and ſecured the glory of Romanzoff. The firſt was fought on the banks of the Pruth. The Turks, to the number of eighty thouſand men, were commanded by the Khan of the Krimea, and were ſtrongly entrenched on a riſing ground, where it was impoſſible to attack them with advantage. Romanzoff advanced and encamped oppoſite to them, and for almoſt a month offered them battle, but to no purpoſe. At laſt they grew impatient. A movement made by Romanzoff induced them to believe he was going to retreat, and twenty thouſand men deſcended to purſue him.

They

They were driven back with conſiderable loſs to their camp, into which they carried terror and confuſion.

Animated by this ſucceſs, the Ruſſians were not ſlack to force their way up the hill, and, after a vigorous reſiſtance, the enemy was driven from his entrenchment, leaving behind part of his baggage and artillery. The Turks on this retreated toward the Danube, in hope of being reinforced by detachments from the great Ottoman army. In effect, the Grand-vizir, who commanded it, paſſed the river, and came to the relief of the vanquiſhed. Romanzoff who, believing he was in purſuit merely of a routed army, advanced toward the mouth of the Pruth, found himſelf, before he was aware, in preſence of 150,000 Ottomans. His ſituation was ſo much the more dangerous, that he had been under the neceſſity of detaching part of his army to protect a convoy on its way to join him. The Khan, panting for revenge, extended his line along the left of the Ruſſian army, and even ſurrounded it in ſuch a manner as to be able to cut off a retreat.

Though the Ruſſians had, at that time, but 18,000 men to oppoſe to the formidable army of the Turks, theſe laſt employed the ſame precautions as if they had to encounter an enemy as numerous as themſelves. During the night they encloſed their camp with a triple entrenchment. Next morning the Grand-vizir gave the ſignal of battle, and the Ruſſians were attacked on all ſides. A hot fire was kept up for five hours. Of five ſquare battalions which the Ruſſians formed, one was entirely cut to pieces. General Romanzoff, apprehending the total deſtruction of his army from the enemy's cannon and muſketry, gave orders to break in upon them with bayonets fixed. The Turks fell back, and retreated within their entrenchments, where they long defended themſelves with much intrepidity; but number yielded to military ſkill and diſcipline. The de-

ſeat of the Ottomans was complete. They retreated, drawing along the vizir in their flight, and leaving almoſt a third of their army ſtretched on the field of battle. The greateſt part of their baggage and ammunition, one hundred and forty-three pieces of braſs cannon, and ſeven thouſand waggon-load of proviſions, fell into the hands of the Ruſſians, and furniſhed them with the means of ſecuring farther victories. Romanzoff quickly paſſed the Danube. Prince Repnin made himſelf maſter of Iſmaïloff. Panin had again laid ſiege to Bender. That place, well fortified and defended by a numerous garriſon, but deſtitute of all hope of ſuccour, ſurrendered after a reſiſtance of almoſt three months. Igelſtrohm carried by aſſault Ac-Kerman, the capital of Beſſarabia, and ſituated on the Black Sea at the mouth of the Dnieper, and oppoſite to the new Ruſſian port of Adjider.

The news of ſuch ſignal ſucceſſes inflamed the pride and increaſed the ſecurity of Catharine. The malecontents who ſurrounded her throne dared no longer to conſpire againſt a princeſs who was extending her triumphs afar over her moſt formidable enemies. The provinces of Walachia and Moldavia, ſubjected to the Ruſſian arms, ſent deputies to Peterſburgh to tender their homage to the Empreſs. She received them magnificently, and loaded them with benefits. At the ſame time many foreign officers, who had arrived to offer their ſervices to Catharine, obtained employment in her armies, and ſome Engliſh and Daniſh ſeamen, diſtinguiſhed by their talents and experience, were incorporated into the Ruſſian marine.

We have formerly ſuggeſted, that ſoon after her acceſſion to the throne Catharine had, from the converſation of Mareſchal Munich, been led to entertain the idea of getting poſſeſſion of Conſtantinople, and of driving the Ottomans out of Europe. That veteran warrior had even urged her to make the attempt. But too many obſtacles then aroſe to prevent the

the execution of this bold deſign. The propitious moment ſeemed to have at length come. Nevertheleſs, not daring to hope it could be in her power to hold in ſubjection all the iſlands of Greece, the Empreſs wiſhed at leaſt to wreſt them from the dominion of the Turks, and the moſt deſpotic of ſovereigns reſolved to become the patroneſs of liberty in thoſe delicious regions, and in them to found a republic. It has likewiſe been already obſerved, that ſecret agents had diſpoſed the Greeks to revolt. That people, once ſo haughty and now ſo degraded, expected the Ruſſians as their deliverers. Captain Pleſcheïeff ſailing from Cronſtadt on board a frigate, was the firſt who diſplayed Catharine's flag in the Mediterranean. Admiral Spiridoff afterwards made his appearance, as has been mentioned, with a very ſuperior force; and at the moment his ſquadron reached Cape Matapan, the whole Archipelago thought itſelf liberated. The Maïnotes, deſcended from the ancient Lacedemonians, firſt took up arms. Their neighbours imitated the example, and in ſome of the iſlands the Turks were maſſacred. But they took cruel vengeance on the Greek inſurgents. The ſabre of the Janiſſaries exterminated many thouſands of thoſe miſerable beings.

The ſquadron of Admiral Spiridoff was ſoon joined by that of Elphingſton, an Engliſh naval officer, rear-admiral in the ſervice of Ruſſia, and much more capable of taking the command than the perſon under whom he ſerved. To this double ſquadron was oppoſed that of the Capitan-Pacha, whoſe ſhip was commanded by the renowned Gazi-Haſſan, a man of ſingular intrepidity, and who ſtood in need only of being ſeconded in order frequently to obtain the victory.

The Turks at firſt obliged the Ruſſians to retreat from Lemnos. The two fleets afterwards met in the channel which ſeparates the iſland of Scio from Natolia. The Turkiſh veſſels were more in number, and found themſelves as it were entrenched behind

little isles and rocks on a level with the water's edge. The Russians, however, were not afraid to attack them. The Capitan-Pacha, whose flag was on board the *Sultana* of 90 guns, engaged Admiral Spiridoff. The two ships grappled. The efforts of courage on both sides were dreadful. Showers of balls and grenades crossed with rapidity the decks of both admirals. The flag-ship of the Capitan-Pacha caught fire; that of the Russians was unable to disengage herself. They blew up together, and the sea was covered with their smoking fragments. The commanders and a few of their officers alone survived this disaster.

While the conflagration lasted, the other ships, struck with terror, had given over fighting. Soon however they formed, and renewed the attack with fresh animosity. The return of night suspended the combat. The Turks were then so imprudent as to retreat into the narrow and muddy bay of Tschesmé, where some of their vessels run aground, and the rest were so crowded as to be rendered incapable of acting. The Russians, who had discerned this blunder, resolved to avail themselves of it. Next day rear-admiral Elphingston took his station at the entrance of the bay, to hinder the Turks from getting out. He afterwards gave orders to get ready four fire-ships, commanded by an English lieutenant of the name of Dugdale, and supported by the division of another British officer, rear-admiral Greig. Toward midnight Greig renews the combat, with four ships of the line and two frigates. A little after Dugdale advances with his fire-ships, and bidding defiance to the enemy's shot, and encouraging by his example the Russians appointed to second him, he himself lashes a fire-ship to one of the Turkish vessels, and with his hands, face and hair scorched, leaps into the sea, and swims back to the Russian squadron. The Turkish ships lay so close that the whole became a prey to the flames. The sun, as he arose, no more beheld their flag displayed.

Far

Far from making any effort to ſtop the progreſs of the conflagration, the Turkiſh crews thought only of making their eſcape. Many of the ſeamen took to flight in the boats, others ſprung over board to ſwim, and all who got on ſhore diſperſed over the country, and abandoned themſelves to outrages upon the miſerable inhabitants, which the Ruſſians themſelves could not perhaps have exceeded. It was found neceſſary to march troops to check the progreſs of thoſe banditti, who were on the point of plundering and burning the city of Gallipoli, when the Grand-vizir Moldavangi-Ali-Pacha, lately recalled from exile, routed them. Conſtantinople, at that period, preſented a hideous ſpectacle. More than one thouſand perſons were every day carried off by the plague. Deſerters, and other profligates, were inceſſantly ſetting fire to ſome quarter of the city, that they might have it in their power to plunder with impunity. They even had the audacity, one time, to aſſemble in the ſuburb of Pera and come to blows with the Janiſſaries, whoſe ſabre extirpated a great number of them. There was a violent apprehenſion, at the ſame time, that the Ruſſians were going to force the paſſage of the Dardanelles, and the Baron de Tott was employed to erect additional batteries to guard the entrance.

After the annihilation of the Turkiſh fleet, the Ruſſians went and anchored off Paros, whence they could eaſily exerciſe dominion over all the ſeas of Greece, and in which not a ſingle veſſel appeared but what paid homage to their flag. The Turks were ſo much the more uneaſy at having ſuch an enemy in their vicinity, that rebellion had broken out in various parts of their empire. The Pachas of Caramania, almoſt always on bad terms with the Porte, availed themſelves of the preſent diſaſters entirely to ſhake off the yoke. That part of Syria which is under Sidon and Tripoli imitated the example, and the old Scheik Daher excited revolt in

all the country which extends from Acre to the plains of Eſdraelon and to the frontiers of Egypt.

But of all the chiefs who ſignalized themſelves by rebellion againſt the Grand-ſignor, he who undoubtedly was the moſt formidable, and could beſt ſerve Ruſſia, was Ali-Bey. Raiſed from the rank of ſimple mameluc to that of bey, he diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his courage, and experienced in early life both the favours and the frowns of fortune. The rivals of his power ſucceeded in driving him from Cairo: but he ſoon re-entered that city as a conqueror, and drove them out in his turn. He knew that the Porte favoured the oppoſition made to him, and, animated with an implacable reſentment, he deſired nothing ſo much as the power of contributing to the ſubverſion of the Ottoman empire. The arrival of the Ruſſian ſquadrons ſeemed to preſent a favourable opportunity of glutting his revenge.

Never, perhaps, was an expedition to a diſtant country more ſucceſsful than that of the Ruſſians to the coaſts of Aſia-minor. But never, perhaps, at the ſame time, were there commanders more ignorant, more incapable of eſtimating the character of foreign nations, more jealous of an oſtentatious appearance, and more addicted to debauchery, than Alexis Orloff and his principal officers. Had they poſſeſſed the ſkill of improving their victories and the ſuperiority of their forces, Syria and Egypt would have been for ever loſt to the Ottoman empire. Ali-Bey earneſtly preſſed them to ſupport his rebellion, and to ſend him troops to aſſiſt in driving the Turks out of Egypt. But inſtead of ſeconding him, Alexis Orloff amuſed himſelf with demanding from him an acknowledgment of the Empreſs as his ſovereign.

A young Venetian merchant, named Carlo Roſetti, had inſinuated himſelf into the Bey's confidence, and was the firſt perſon employed in carrying on a negotiation with the Ruſſians. No one could be more diſpoſed or better qualified to bring ſuch a treaty

treaty to a happy iſſue. Orloff had not the ſenſe to take advantage of it. Careleſs of the information which that crafty Italian had it in his power to give him, and diſguſting him by the loftineſs of his deportment, he employed Greeks and Jews who deceived him. He diſtruſted Ali-Bey, and, by his diſingenuouſneſs, forced Ali-Bey to miſtruſt him. It was but a ſhort time before he left the Archipelago that Alexis Orloff diſpatched Pleſcheïeff into Egypt. He was graciouſly received by the Bey, and flattered himſelf with the hope of turning his viſit to good account for Ruſſia; but he came too late. The return of peace interrupted the negotiation.

A courier, addreſſed directly to the Empreſs, carried her the news of the burning of the Turkiſh fleet; ſo that ſhe herſelf had the firſt information, in all Peterſburgh, of that event. Count Ivan Tchernicheff, whom the Empreſs had long before recalled from London and placed over the marine department, had at that time a quarrel with the board of admiralty, and this quarrel had occaſioned ſome delay in diſpatching a buſineſs of no great conſequence. The Empreſs complained of the delay, and thought no more of it. She knew the conceitedneſs and the extreme incapacity of Tchernicheff; but ſuffered him to continue in his place, as ſhe had laid it down for a principle, to change her miniſters and ambaſſadors as ſeldom as poſſible. When ſhe ſent for Tchernicheff to impart to him the tidings of the conflagration at Tcheſmé, the miniſter, believing that the Empreſs meant only to talk to him on the ſubject of the quarrel, called out as he entered the apartment—"I aſſure you, Madam, it is not my fault."—"O! I "know it well," replied ſhe, "but it is not the leſs "certain."—"Ah! yes, Madam, and I am extreme-"ly ſorry for it."—"How! you ſorry that the Turks "have no longer a fleet?" returned ſhe with a ſmile; and immediately communicated to him the diſpatches ſhe had received.

The

A. D. 1771. The joy of the court of Peterſburgh was exceſſive. Magnificent banquets were given in celebration of the triumph of Tſcheſmé, and the Empreſs has ſince given orders to rear a palace, and to lay the foundations of a city, in commemoration of an event ſo glorious. Alexis Orloff haſtened to Peterſburgh, to enjoy the fruits of his atchievements, and to apply for the farther means of extending his conqueſts in the Archipelago. As ſoon as he made his appearance the feſtivity recommenced, and the Empreſs decorated him with the broad ribbon of Saint-George. He propoſed to the council a plan, according to which he was to make himſelf maſter of all Greece, and ſeparate Egypt from the Ottoman empire. In a word, he undertook to force the dangerous paſſage of the Dardanelles, and declared that all he wanted to effect this was ten millions of roubles. "I allow you twenty," Catharine inſtantly replied, "as I wiſh that nothing ſhould be wanting to you." Orders were at the ſame time iſſued for the armament of a freſh ſquadron, to reinforce that which was already in the Archipelago.

Proud of the favour of the Empreſs, of the victories, the honour of which he arrogated to himſelf, and of the laurels which he was going to earn, Alexis Orloff took his departure from Peterſburgh on his return to the Archipelago. Having ſtopped ſome time at Vienna, he there diſplayed an extravagant luxury, and indulged himſelf in indiſcretions very unworthy of the miniſter of a princeſs of ſuch profound diſſimulation as Catharine was. One evening that he ſupped with the Ruſſian ambaſſador and a numerous party, he fell a-talking of the revolution which had tumbled Peter III. from the throne. No one dared to addreſs to him the moſt trivial queſtion relative to the tragical end of the unfortunate Czar. Alexis Orloff, unſolicited, gave the hiſtory of it; and, obſerving the whole company to be ſhocked at the relation, he thought it a ſufficient juſtification of the

3/5



ALEXIS ORLOFF TSCHESMENSKY.

Publisht Feb.y 12.th 1800 by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

the crime he had perpetrated to ſay, "That it was a "ſad thing for a man of ſo much humanity as him-"ſelf to have been conſtrained to execute ſuch or-"ders."—But this repentance could not appear ſincere. The character of Alexis Orloff was too well known; and his whole conduct demonſtrates that he was not a man to be ſcared by the commiſſion of one murder.

On leaving Vienna, Orloff went to rejoin the Ruſſian ſquadron which waited for him at Leghorn; and, though in a ſhattered condition, that ſquadron continued to ruin the Turkiſh marine and commerce. The Empreſs had commiſſioned him to get four pictures painted in Italy, repreſenting the engagements of her ſquadron and the conflagration of the Turkiſh fleet. Orloff was recommended to a celebrated painter, of the name of Hackert. That artiſt having told him he had never ſeen a ſhip blow up, the Ruſſian made no heſitation to furniſh him with this ſpectacle, and riſked the burning of all the ſhips in the road of Leghorn, in order to ſupply the painter with the means of repreſenting, with greater exactneſs, the diſaſter which befel the Capitan-Pacha and Admiral Spiridoff.

Extravagancies are not always crimes. But there is no crime ſo atrocious that the extravagant Alexis Orloff was incapable of perpetrating. At the time of his departure from Peterſburgh he had received orders from Catharine to ſend her a young unfortunate female, placed beyond the reach of her tyranny. Orloff knew but too well how to execute thoſe barbarous orders. It has already been mentioned that the Empreſs Elizabeth had three children, the fruit of her clandeſtine marriage with the maſter of the buck-hounds, Alexis-Gregoriewitz-Razoumoffsky. The youngeſt of thoſe children was a daughter educated under the name of Princeſs Tarrakanoff. Prince Charles Radziwil, informed of this ſecret, and filled with indignation that Catharine ſhould preſume

to

to trample under foot the rights of the Poloneſe, imagined that the daughter of Elizabeth furniſhed him with the means of executing ſignal vengeance. He believed it was poſſible for him to raiſe a ſucceſsful oppoſition to the ſovereign whoſe armies were deſolating his unhappy country, in the perſon of a rival, whom the name of her mother muſt endear to the Ruſſians. Ambition perhaps preſented to him ſtill loftier pretenſions: perhaps he flattered himſelf with the hope of one day partaking the throne to which he wiſhed to elevate the young Tarrakanoff. Be this as it may, he gained over the perſons entruſted with the education of this young Princeſs, carried her off, and conducted her to Rome.

Catharine, apprized of this elopement, ſtrained every nerve to render the deſigns of Radziwill abortive. Availing herſelf of his being chief of the confederation of malecontents, ſhe had all his property ſeized, and reduced him to the neceſſity of ſubſiſting by the ſale of his diamonds, and other valuable effects which he had carried into Italy. Theſe reſources were ſpeedily exhauſted. Radziwill departed in queſt of freſh ſupplies in Poland, and left the young Tarrakanoff at Rome, under the guardianſhip of a ſingle governeſs, and in very narrow circumſtances. Scarcely had he got back to his own country when he was offered the reſtoration of his eſtates, if he would bring the daughter of Elizabeth again into Ruſſia. He refuſed to ſubmit to that indignity; but had the weakneſs to promiſe he would no longer take any intereſt in her. At that price he purchaſed his pardon from Catharine.

Alexis Orloff, charged with the execution of her Imperial Majeſty's ſovereign will, on his arrival at Leghorn, loſt no time in laying a ſnare for the Princeſs Tarrakanoff. One of thoſe intriguers, ſo common in Italy, immediately repaired to Rome; and, having diſcovered the reſidence of the Ruſſian damſel, preſented himſelf at her habitation, under the name

name, and in the garb, of an officer of that nation. He pretended at firſt to be attracted thither ſimply by a wiſh to pay homage to a Princeſs whoſe fate intereſted all his compatriots. He affected extreme concern at finding her in ſuch a deſtitute condition. He offered her relief, which neceſſity obliged her to accept; and the traitor ſoon appeared to her, as well as to the woman who attended her, to be a ſaviour graciouſly ſent them from heaven.

When he thought he had ſufficiently inſinuated himſelf into their confidence, he declared that he was impowered, by Count Alexis Orloff, to offer to the daughter of Elizabeth the throne which her mother had filled. He ſaid that the Ruſſian nation was diſſatisfied with Catharine; that Orloff, in particular, could never forgive her tyranny and ingratitude; and if the young Princeſs would accept the ſervices of that general, and reward them by the gift of her hand, ſhe would ſoon behold the exploſion of the revolution of which he had laid the train.

Propoſals ſo brilliant ought to have opened the eyes of Princeſs Tarrakanoff to diſcern the perfidy of the wretch who made them. But her inexperience and candor prevented all ſuſpicion of foul play. Beſides, the language of Alexis Orloff's emiſſary ſeemed analogous to the ideas which ſhe had received from Prince Radziwill. She believed herſelf deſtined to the throne; and all the chimeras relative to that belief could not but be flattering to her. She abandoned herſelf therefore to the moſt deluſive hope, and replied in terms of acknowledgment to the man who ſpoke only to betray.

Some time after, Alexis Orloff made his appearance at Rome. His agent had announced his arrival. He was received as a benefactor. Some perſons, however, to whom the Princeſs and her duenna had communicated the news of the good fortune which awaited them, cautioned them to be on their guard againſt the deſigns of a man whoſe abandoned character

character had long been notorious, and who, undoubtedly, had too many reaſons to perſevere in his fidelity to the Empreſs to think of forming a conſpiracy againſt her. So far from profiting by ſuch counſels, the Princeſs had the imprudent frankneſs to talk of them to Orloff, who found no difficulty in juſtifying himſelf, and learnt, beſides, only to employ more diſſimulation and addreſs. Not ſatisfied with feeding the ambition of the young Ruſſian, he affected a violent paſſion for her, which quickly inſpired her with a very ſerious one for him. As ſoon as he was ſure of this, he conjured her to unite herſelf to him by the moſt ſacred of bands. In a moſt unfortunate moment ſhe yielded conſent! and it was even with tranſport that the ill-fated maiden promiſed to conſummate a marriage which was to accompliſh her deſtruction. She believed that the title of wife to Alexis Orloff would prove an impregnable ſecurity againſt the terrors with which ſhe was haunted. She could not ſuſpect it poſſible for a man to abuſe the ſanctions of religion, and ties the moſt ſacred, to purſue an innocent victim to perdition. But was there an obligation of religion, was there a ſacredneſs of engagement that could bind the monſter who deluded her? Could the man who ſtrangled the unfortunate Peter III. feel remorſe at diſhonouring the daughter of Elizabeth? Affecting to wiſh the marriage ceremony might be celebrated conformably to the ritual of the Greek church, he ſuborned villains of an inferior order to fill up the parts of prieſts and lawyers. Thus profanation allied itſelf to impoſture, to overwhelm the feeble and too confident Tarrakanoff.

As ſoon as Orloff had become the huſband, or rather the raviſher of this unfortunate Princeſs, he repreſented to her that a reſidence at Rome expoſed her too much to obſervation, and that it would be better for her to retire to ſome other city of Italy, and wait for the moment when the match was to be applied to

the

the conſpiracy which was to raiſe her to the throne. Believing this advice to be dictated by love and prudence, ſhe replied to the perfidious Orloff that ſhe would follow him wherever he pleaſed to carry her. He immediately conveyed her to Piſa, where he had ſome time before hired a magnificent palace. There he continued to treat her with every mark of tenderneſs and reſpect. But he never ſuffered her to be approached by any but perſons in his own pay, and when ſhe went to the theatre or the public walks he always accompanied her himſelf.

The diviſion of the Ruſſian ſquadron under the command of rear-admiral Greig, had juſt returned to the port of Leghorn. On communicating this intelligence to the Princeſs, Alexis Orloff told her it was neceſſary for him to repair thither to give orders to the fleet, and made her an offer to be of the party. She conſented the more readily that ſhe had frequently heard the beauty of Leghorn and the magnificence of the Ruſſian ſhips of war highly extolled. Imprudent creature! The nearer ſhe approached the point at which Orloff was to accompliſh his horrible purpoſe, the greater confidence ſhe repoſed in the tenderneſs and ſincerity of that traitor.

She left Piſa with her uſual retinue. On arriving at Leghorn ſhe alighted at the houſe of the Engliſh conſul, Dick, who had prepared apartments for her under his own roof, and received her with every mark of the moſt profound reſpect. The ladies of the rear-admiral and of the conſul haſtened to preſent themſelves to her, and never quitted her more. She beheld herſelf ſurrounded by a numerous court, every one vying with another to outrun her ſlighteſt wiſhes, and ſeeming to have no object but inceſſantly to procure for her new pleaſures. When ſhe went abroad the populace crouded into her way. At the theatre all eyes were directed to her box. Every thing conſpired

ſpired to complete the deluſion; every thing kept out of ſight the danger ready to burſt upon her head.

It is undoubtedly painful to think that a conſul, an Engliſh admiral, and their wives, could have been ſo vile, ſo loſt to humanity, as to decoy into the ſnare, with perfidious homage and careſſes, a victim whoſe youth, beauty, and innocence ought to have melted hearts the moſt inſenſible. Every thing proves, nevertheleſs, that they were aſſociates in the plot contrived to entrap her, and that they practiſed every art to gain her confidence only to betray her with more certain effect.

The young Tarrakanoff was ſo far from entertaining any apprehenſion of her misfortune, that after having paſſed ſome days in amuſement and diſſipation, ſhe herſelf expreſſed a deſire to viſit the Ruſſian ſquadron. This idea was highly applauded. The neceſſary orders were immediately iſſued, and next day, on riſing from table, all was prepared on the beach for the reception of the Princeſs. Thither ſhe went; ſhe was put on board a barge ſuperbly decorated. The conſul, his wife, and the wife of rear-admiral Greig took their ſeats by her. A ſecond barge carried the rear-admiral and Alexis Orloff, and a third, filled with Engliſh and Ruſſian officers, cloſed the proceſſion. The barges left the ſhore in ſight of an innumerable multitude of ſpectators, and were welcomed by the ſquadron with bands of muſic, ſalutes from the artillery, and repeated huzzas. When the Princeſs approached the ſhip on board of which ſhe was to be received, a magnificent accommodation chair was lowered, in which they made her ſit down, and hoiſted her gently on deck, obſerving to her, that theſe were the particular honours paid to her rank.

But ſcarcely is ſhe on board, when her hands are loaded with irons. To no purpoſe does ſhe implore compaſſion from the unrelenting Orlöff, whom ſhe

ſtill

ſtill addreſſes by the name of huſband. To no purpoſe does ſhe throw herſelf at his feet and bedew them with her tears. The barbarian does not ſo much as deign to reply. They carry her down to the bottom of the hold. Next day the veſſel ſails for Ruſſia.

Upon her arrival at Peterſburgh, the youthful victim was ſhut up in the fortreſs, and treated in the moſt barbarous manner. Six years afterwards the waters of the Neva put a period to her miſery: ſhe was drowned in her priſon.

The inhabitants of Leghorn, meanwhile, who had ſeen the Princeſs embark, ſoon learnt with horror, that inſtead of a banquet which ſhe was taught to expect on board the ſquadron, ſhe had found irons only. Leopold, Grand-duke of Tuſcany, whoſe territorial rights had juſt been ſo ſhamefully violated, wrote immediately to Vienna and to Peterſburgh, complaining of this outrage. But Alexis Orloff inſolently braved both the complaints of Leopold and the indignation of the public.

An adventure in which this ferocious man was concerned during his reſidence at Rome, ſerves equally to diſplay his character. One evening that he ſupped at the houſe of a noble lady, where a numerous company was aſſembled, he wiſhed to make an exhibition of his prodigious ſtrength. He cruſhed with eaſe in his hand ſundry pieces of cryſtal and iron. He afterwards put an apple between two of his fingers and broke it to ſhivers. The Duke of Gloceſter, brother to the King of Great Britain, was at table; one of the fragments of the apple ſtruck that Prince on the face and hurt him. The whole company expreſſed much concern at the accident. Alexis Orloff alone diſcovered no kind of emotion, and did not ſo much as deign to make the ſlighteſt apology to his Royal Highneſs.

Some of the Engliſh degraded themſelves ſo far as to aſſiſt in the machinations of Alexis Orloff; but

others were very far from approving his conduct. They even bluſhed to ſerve under him, and gave in their reſignation. Of this number was Admiral Elphingſton. Greig ſucceeded him.

BOOK VII.

Prince Dolgorouky enters the Krimea—Plague at Moſcow—The King of Poland kidnapped.—Congreſs of Foſkani—Waſſiltſchikoff becomes the Favourite of the Empreſs—Gregory Orloff is baniſhed the Court—Conferences of Bukhareſt—Firſt diſmemberment of Poland—Peace of Kaïnardgi—Emigration of the Eleuths—Diſmiſſion of Waſſiltſchikoff—Firſt Marriage of Paul Petrowitz—Diderot at Peterſburgh.

ALTHOUGH frequently vanquiſhed, the Ottoman armies were eaſily recruited and reſiſted the efforts of the Ruſſians. This was a terrible hydra, the heads of which multiplied beneath the ſtrokes of Romanzoff and his lieutenant-generals. The Ruſſian general Weiſſeman croſſed the Danube, and beat the Turks in the neighbourhood of Iſaccia. In a ſhort time the Grand-vizir forced him to re-paſs the river, and advanced towards Bukhareſt with an army of 100,000 men. There the Turks were completely victorious. But they had not long to congratulate themſelves upon this ſucceſs. In three ſucceſſive combats the Ruſſians had again the advantage.

The Grand-vizir retired to the Bulgarian mountains; and Romanzoff, abandoning the right bank of the Danube, took up his winter quarters in Moldavia and Walachia.

The Khan of the Krimea fought valiantly for the Turks. Catharine reſolved to avenge herſelf, and to carry off this aid from her enemy. She had, for a long

long time, correſpondents in the Krimea. Her emiſſaries were labouring in ſecret to ſpread diviſion among the Tartars, and to deprive the Khan of the confidence of his ſubjects. In this they ſucceeded. Valour ſoon atchieved what intrigue had commenced.

The celebrated lines of Perekop had yielded, forty years before, to the intrepidity of Munich. Inſtructed by that example, the Khans of the Krimea rendered this paſſage more difficult. However, neither a ditch of ſeventy-two feet in breadth and forty-two in depth, nor fifty thouſand Tartars, were able to arreſt the progreſs of Prince Dolgorouky. In croſſing this barrier, that general rendered himſelf maſter of all the Krimea; and, as the reward of his victories, he received from the Empreſs the ſurname of Krimſky.

The Khan, obliged to abandon his country that he might not fall into the hands of the conqueror, withdrew into the ſtates of Turkey. Prince Dolgorouky immediately cauſed a new Khan to be elected, but he too was not yet ſuch as the Ruſſians had occaſion for, and it was not long before he detached himſelf from their party.

The Grand-ſignor, filled with indignation that Abaza Pacha, and ſome other Turkiſh commanders, had in a cowardly manner abandoned the Krimea, ſent them the fatal bow-ſtring, and ordered their bleeding heads to be expoſed at the gate of the ſeraglio.

The evacuation of the Krimea by the Turkiſh commanders was not the only act of perfidy of which the Porte had at that time reaſon to complain. She had juſt concluded with the court of Vienna a ſecret treaty, by which that court engaged to take up offenſive arms in her behalf, on condition that ſhe would defray the expenſes of the war, and reſtore, upon the return of peace, a part of Walachia and ſome other Auſtrian territories which ſhe had conquered. Faithful to theſe promiſes, the Porte began by pay-

ing to the court of Vienna five millions of Imperial florins. The court of Vienna turned them to account immediately: but, to the diſgrace of the Chriſtian profeſſion, it was to take up arms againſt the Porte, and form a re-union with Ruſſia.

For ſome time a terrible ſcourge had deſolated the interior of Ruſſia. Melancholy fruit of the victories of the Ruſſians, the plague had been communicated from Bender to Moſcow; and the ignorance of the phyſicians, and the ſuperſtition of the people, were the cauſes that it made frightful ravages in that city. The phyſicians at firſt believed this malady to be only an epidemic fever; and the people, who ſaw that the phyſicians did not know how to cure it, purſued them from every quarter, and obliged them to conceal themſelves in order to eſcape their fury. Some one pretended that the image of the Virgin, which was at the gate of the Kremlin, poſſeſſed the virtue of preventing the contagion. Immediately it was ſurrounded by multitudes and loaded with offerings. But as a conſiderable number of perſons already infected by the plague mingled themſelves in the croud, they communicated the diſeaſe to thoſe who as yet had not caught the infection. Ambroſe, archbiſhop of Moſcow, perceiving all the danger which might ariſe from ſuch a concourſe, cauſed the image to be carried away from the place where it was ſet up: the people became furious, and, accuſing the archbiſhop of inhumanity, of ſacrilege, and even of wiſhing to appropriate to himſelf the revenues of the Virgin, they broke open the doors of a monaſtery in which this prelate had ſought an aſylum. The archbiſhop upon this imagined that he might eſcape the rage of the multitude by concealing himſelf in the ſanctuary, where, according to the Greek ritual, the prieſts alone have permiſſion to enter. Unfortunately a child ſaw him paſs, and haſtened to give information of it. The people ruſhed into the church, laid hold of the old man, and dragged him

him to the door to diſpatch him. The wretched archbiſhop, perceiving death to be inevitable, conjured his aſſaſſins to permit him to aſcend to the altar, to receive the communion once more. They conſented to this, and calmly beheld him conclude his pious ceremony. Scarcely had he finiſhed when they darted upon him anew, dragged him to the outſide of the church, and barbarouſly maſſacred him.

The Empreſs had already ſent proper aſſiſtance to arreſt the progreſs of the contagion; but it was not of the ſmalleſt avail. It was neceſſary to employ a man whoſe authority could reſtrain the people, and ſubject them to precautions and to cleanlineſs, but little obſerved in Ruſſia. Gregory Orloff had the courage to go and brave at once the plague and ſuperſtition. He repaired to Moſcow with an extraordinary promptitude. He prohibited and prevented every kind of aſſembly. He viſited himſelf the perſons attacked by the peſtilence; he procured them the aſſiſtance of which they ſtood in need; and was careful, above all things, to recommend to the ſurgeons and the officers by whom he was ſeconded, to cauſe to be burnt in their preſence the apparel of thoſe patients who fell victims to this terrible ſcourge. The diſeaſe at laſt yielded to the multiplied exertions of Gregory Orloff, and to the ſeverity of winter. But it had already carried off near 100,000 of the inhabitants of Moſcow.

On his return to Peterſburgh, Gregory Orloff found again in Catharine an affectionate lover and a grateful ſovereign. That Princeſs cauſed a triumphal arch to be erected, and a medal to be ſtruck, to record to poſterity the ſervice which he had juſt rendered to his country.

The plague had not confined its attacks to the interior of Ruſſia; the Ruſſian and Ottoman armies which fought upon the banks of the Danube were infected with it. They ſpread it in Poland; and it

is this which accelerated the invaſion which the King of Pruſſia had for a long time meditated.

The Empreſs was daily adding to the heavy yoke which ſhe had impoſed on Poland. Her troops purſued on every ſide the confederates of Bar, and pillaged or deſtroyed their poſſeſſions. That Princeſs herſelf had a ſhare in the booty. The famous library of Prince Radziwill was carried off, the precious depoſit of Lithuanian hiſtory, and was tranſported to Peterſburgh, from whence, without doubt, it will come no more. But at the very time that this deteſtable robbery was carrying on, Catharine ſent to Warſaw declarations, in which ſhe ſpoke of nothing but her equity, her benevolence, and the inclination ſhe had to reſtore peace to Poland.

The Poles, irritated at the tyranny of the Ruſſians, were inceſſantly making new efforts to free themſelves from it. They believed their unfortunate king was in league with the Empreſs, and in this perſuaſion were deſirous of avenging upon him the evils of which ſhe was the cauſe. The confederates had elected for general a noble Poloneſe, named Pulawſky, an intrepid man, and ſo violent for liberty that he did not heſitate to promote, even by crimes, the moſt honourable of cauſes.

Pulawſky, reſolved to take poſſeſſion of the perſon of the King, confided the execution of his project to three other confederates, with whoſe intelligence and audacity he was well acquainted. After having taken an oath, with their hands between thoſe of their general, to deliver the King to him, or to kill him if they could not bring him alive, the three chiefs and fifty dragoons, diſguiſed as peaſants, entered by different quarters into Warſaw. They learnt, that the Sunday following the King was to paſs the evening at the houſe of the Prince Czartorynſki, his uncle. Upon this ſome of them went to poſt themſelves without the city, whilſt the reſt lay in ambuſcade on the paſſage of the King. Towards ten o'clock at night this

this Prince, accompanied by fourteen or fifteen perſons, and having one of his aids-de-camp in the carriage with him, was returning to the palace, when all at once the conſpirators advanced, and ordered the coachman to ſtop. Several piſtols were at the ſame time fired off againſt the carriage. A heiduque fell pierced by a ball. The reſt of the King's ſuit, not even excepting his aid-de-camp, took to flight. One of the aſſaſſins fired a piſtol ſhot at the King, which penetrated his hat; another made a blow at his head, and made a deep wound. Afterwards they ſeized him by the collar, and dragged him between their horſes through the moſt obſcure ſtreets. Perceiving very ſoon that he loſt breath, and that it was impoſſible for him to follow them on foot, they made him mount on horſeback; and when they were on the brink of the *foſſé* which ſurrounds Warſaw, they obliged him to croſs it with them. The horſe which carried the King fell and broke his leg: the King was wounded in the foot. Another horſe was given to him. One of the chiefs tore from him the Pruſſian order of the Black Eagle, and the diamond croſs which was faſtened to it. Then the greater part of the conſpirators diſperſed. Seven only of them, under the command of Kozinſky, remained with the King, and wandered a long time with him in the dark, endeavouring to avoid every frequented road. In a ſhort time they found themſelves in a foreſt, which is not above a league diſtant from Warſaw. The voices of ſome Ruſſian patroles were heard. The conſpirators were frightened and betook themſelves to flight. The King remained alone with Kozinſky. But not daring to call for aſſiſtance for fear that Kozinſky ſhould kill him, he tried to perſuade him to favour his eſcape. Kozinſky heſitated for a long time: his oath deterred him. At laſt he yielded to the ſolicitations of the King; and, after having thrown himſelf upon his knees to demand his pardon, he conducted him to a mill which was but at a little

diſtance. The King, without making himſelf known, immediately wrote a billet, which he conveyed by a peaſant to the colonel of his guards.

Warſaw was in the utmoſt conſternation. The King's hat had been found all covered with blood. That Prince was believed to be dead. But as ſoon as it was underſtood that he had eſcaped from his aſſaſſins, the people abandoned themſelves to tranſports of joy.

Several of the villains were taken, and periſhed on the ſcaffold. Kozinſky obtained his pardon. He withdrew into Italy, where the King granted him a penſion. With reſpect to General Pulawſky, he publiſhed a manifeſto, in which he declared that he had no hand in the outrage committed upon the Poliſh monarch. No perſon put any faith in this declaration.

The danger which Staniſlaus-Auguſtus had run, furniſhed the Ruſſians with a freſh pretext for perſecuting the confederates of Bar, and for making preparations towards the diſmemberment of Poland. But had Catharine any occaſion for pretexts? We ſhall preſently ſee that ſhe had arranged matters in ſuch a manner as to be able to do without them.

A. D. 1772. The Ruſſians and Ottomans ſtood equally in need of peace. Their armies, enfeebled by engagements innumerable, by fatigue and by contagion, conſtantly recruited themſelves, and became conſtantly more diminiſhed. The ſquadron of Alexis Orloff ſtill domineered over the ſeas of Greece; but the long reſidence of the Ruſſians in a climate ſo different from their own, and the exceſſes to which they abandoned themſelves, occaſioned an epidemic diſtemper among them, which threatened to ſweep them away even to the laſt ſeaman of their crews. The new Capitan-Pacha, Gazi Haſſan, zealous to avenge the diſaſters of his marine, was preparing new armaments at Conſtantinople, and flattered himſelf with the hope of being able to oppoſe to the Ruſ-

ſians

ſians a ſquadron more formidable than that which the flames had devoured. The chevalier de Tott, a French officer in the ſervice of the Porte, triumphed in the ignorance of the Turks, and had introduced into their arſenals an order and an activity which was dangerous to their enemies. The valiant Muſſum-Oglou was elevated for the ſecond time to the poſt of Grand-vizir, and had re-aſſumed the command of the army of the Danube. Notwithſtanding this the two powers negotiated, through the medium of the miniſters of Auſtria and Pruſſia. An armiſtice was agreed upon, and a congreſs was appointed at Foſkani.

This occaſion appeared favourable to the projects of Gregory Orloff. He made intereſt to obtain the honour of going to treat with the plenipotentiaries of the Divan. It had long been his wiſh to be a partaker of the throne which he had ſecured to Catharine. He believed, that in giving peace to the Ruſſians, he ſhould acquire eternal claims upon their gratitude, and do away the difficulties which had been oppoſed to his marriage: but this was preciſely what gave birth to others more unſurmountable.

Catharine had been greatly attached to Orloff and loved him ſtill. Orloff, on the contrary, had never been attached to Catharine but from complaiſance and ambition. For a long time puffed up with the favours of his ſovereign, he diſplayed a zeal to merit them: but when he thought he had acquired ſufficient rights over her, his zeal cooled, and thoſe favours even ſeemed to be frequently burdenſome to him. The greater efforts Catharine made to allure him back to her, the more he appeared eager to avoid her, and to ſeek elſewhere charms which he no longer found in her. That Princeſs was mortified at the coldneſs of an ingrate; and provoked at his infidelities. But ſhe was ſtill attached to him by ſuch powerful ties, that ſhe durſt not think of breaking them aſunder. Bobrinſky, above all, rendered the love

love of Orloff dear to her. She had him brought up in the houſe of the chamberlain Schkourin, and went frequently to ſee him under a borrowed name, and diſguiſed in ſuch a manner as not to be recognized.

One day that ſhe had juſt quitted this child, and was meditating how to cure Orloff of his inconſtancy, ſhe thought ſhe had diſcovered a method, by eſpouſing him privately. She made him the propoſition. Orloff rejected it in a haughty manner. He replied to the Empreſs, that he did not think himſelf unworthy of bearing publicly the name of her huſband, and of ſeating himſelf with her on a throne which he had preſerved to her. Catharine, in aſtoniſhment, diſſembled her diſpleaſure; but diſcerned immediately that the pride of her favourite might be productive of fatal conſequences to her; and did not delay overcoming an attachment which expoſed her to too great humiliation.

Although Panin did not live on open terms of diſagreement with Gregory Orloff, he did not the leſs wiſh for the diſgrace of that favourite. Too ſkilful, and without doubt too timid, to make a direct attack upon him, he did not let ſlip an opportunity of giving him an under-hand blow. Orloff was far from following his example. He bore but little enmity, though a great deal was borne towards him. His haughtineſs had created him a great number of adverſaries, his favour had raiſed him many more. Every one was pleaſed to ſee him withdraw from court, and the Empreſs ſhared the joy of her courtiers. She hoped that his abſence would completely deſtroy the remainder of the aſcendant which he had preſerved over her.

Panin, who carefully watched the inclinations of that Princeſs, was not ſlow of perceiving that ſhe frequently regarded with complacency a ſub-lieutenant of the guards, named Waſſiltchikoff. He immediately conceived the idea of making this young man

man ſerve as an inſtrument for effecting the ruin of Orloff. Zakar Tſcherniſcheff, to whom the arrogance of the favourite was ſtill more odious than to Panin, ſeconded with joy the project of this miniſter. Both the one and the other thought that the Grand-duke, who was not ignorant that Orloff had preſumed to aſpire to the throne, could not but behold with ſatisfaction every thing which had a tendency to keep him at a diſtance from it. An attempt was therefore made to ſtimulate the new propenſity of the Empreſs. Orloff was at the ſame time repreſented to her as an ambitious man, who deſired to go and negociate the peace at Foſkani, only in order to betray Ruſſia and to become independent, in aſſuming the ſovereignty of Moldavia and Walachia. It was ſo much the more eaſy to render him ſuſpected by that Princeſs, that every ſucceeding day ſhe found his rival more to her taſte.

Waſſiltchikoff pleaſed her, becauſe he was young and robuſt, but he was deficient in underſtanding, in talents, in experience, even in perſonal courage. It is probable that he would never from his own merit have ſucceeded with the Empreſs. He was not left without ſupport. The Prince Baratynſky, verſed in the art of intrigue, was not ſparing either of his counſels or of his exertions. Waſſiltchikoff profited by them. His docility ſupplied the place of merit. The Empreſs was ſo well pleaſed with him, that ſhe nominated him her chamberlain, made him magnificent preſents, and frequently treated him in public with a familiarity which rendered it very eaſy to perceive their good underſtanding.

When Catharine had propoſed to the haughty Orloff to eſpouſe him in private, this favourite flattered himſelf that his refuſal would only ſtimulate the deſire of that Princeſs, and that acceſs to the throne would become by that means more eaſy. Accuſtomed to a love, of which he had the moſt endearing pledges, he did not believe it poſſible he could loſe

loſe the heart of the Empreſs. What then muſt have been his thoughts when he learnt that ſhe had availed herſelf of his abſence to chuſe a new lover? He at firſt trembled with aſtoniſhment and rage. But pride ſoon came to his conſolation. He imagined that his preſence would be ſufficient to rekindle a flame which he believed but ill extinguiſhed. Full of this idea, he forgot negotiations, peace, all the intereſts of the empire, departed from Foſkani without even demanding permiſſion of the Empreſs, and arrived at the gates of Peterſburgh. At the inſtant he preſented himſelf, the officer of the guard advanced towards his carriage, and ſhewed him the order which he had, not to permit him to enter the capital. Orloff obſerved a profound ſilence, and took the road to Gatſchina, one of his country reſidences.

Only two days before Orloff arrived at Peterſburgh, intelligence had been received that he had quitted Foſkani. This ſudden return cauſed great uneaſineſs at court. The Empreſs, who was well acquainted with the impetuoſity of Orloff, and who apprehended that he might preſent himſelf in ſpite of her, gave orders that the guard of the palace ſhould be doubled, and that ſentinels ſhould be placed at the door of her new favourite. Not yet quieted by theſe precautions, ſhe cauſed the locks of her apartments to be changed, of which Orloff had the key. All theſe arrangements were unneceſſary: Orloff ſhould not have inſpired a ſingle apprehenſion. As ſoon as his diſgrace was known he had no longer any partiſans, and his enemies diſcovered themſelves from every quarter.

Orloff perceived all the danger of his ſituation. His courage was not however ſhaken. It is even pretended that he then made Pugatſcheff take up arms, who had been long devoted to him, and whom he had prepared for rebellion, to render himſelf more neceſſary to Catharine, and to oblige her to eſpouſe him. However this might be, when the Count Zakar

kar Tſchernicheff came, in the name of the Empreſs, to demand of him the reſignation of his employments, he inſolently refuſed it. That Princeſs might eaſily have puniſhed the ſubject who reſiſted her will; ſhe preferred treating with indulgence the lover whom ſhe had long cheriſhed. A negociation was carried on with Orloff. Overcome by the indulgence which his ſovereign ſtill deigned to diſplay towards him, he conſented to withdraw from Peterſburgh, and to go and travel for ſome time through Europe. As the price of his ſubmiſſion, he received 100,000 roubles in ready money, a warrant for a penſion of 150,000, a magnificent preſent of plate, and an eſtate with 6000 peaſants. He had already obtained a patent of Prince of the Empire. It was Catharine's wiſh that he ſhould take the title, without doubt, that her ancient lover might appear in the eyes of foreign nations with a luſtre worthy of the favour which he had enjoyed.

The part which Catharine acted ſeemed to announce ſome weakneſs: but it was conformable to her character. That Princeſs, whoſe ſoul was ſo ſtedfaſt and ſtately, knew how to condeſcend when her intereſt required it. She felt that, in puniſhing Orloff, ſhe would intimidate all thoſe who had ſerved him. She wiſhed to perſuade them that her gratitude ſurvived even her affections.

The congreſs of Foſkani had been opened in ſuch a manner as to inſpire the hope of an approaching peace. The Ottoman miniſters preſented to the Ruſſians ſome ſuperb carpets, extremely fine ſtuffs, and ſome excellent arms; and Oſman Effendi, who was the firſt to ſpeak, ſaid, "That the Grand-ſignor, his "maſter, had recommended to him to ſerve God and "to love peace."

The Ruſſians gave as preſents to Oſman and his colleagues ſome precious ſtones elegantly ſet, divers golden toys, and ſome very beautiful furs. Afterwards they replied, that they likewiſe were lovers both

both of peace and of juſtice. They nevertheleſs demanded ſuch enormous ſacrifices that the Turks were diſguſted. After diſcuſſing ſome uſeleſs propoſitions the plenipotentiaries ſeparated.

Some time afterwards the negotiations recommenced at Bukhareſt, between Mareſchal Romanzoff and the Grand-vizir Muſſum Oglou. Theſe two warriors, who had ſo frequently combated againſt each other, were not ignorant how much their armies had occaſion for repoſe, but their conferences were equally fruitleſs with thoſe of Foſkani. The term of the armiſtice was expired. The peace-makers thought of nothing now but war.

During the whole time of the negotiations preparation had been made for battle. The Ruſſians had concluded with the new Khan of the Krimea a treaty, by which this Prince declared himſelf independent of the Grand-ſignor, and put himſelf under the protection of the Empreſs. The Porte, in indignation at the defection of the Tartars, as well as at the ceſſion which they had made to the Ruſſians of the fortreſſes of Kertſch and Jeni-kalé, ſent into the Black Sea a ſtrong ſquadron of galliots and chebecs. The Empreſs had already there a fleet of frigates, and ſent to join it ſeveral Engliſh and Dutch officers, under the command of Admiral Sinawin.

But a more important object occupied Catharine at this moment. She beheld herſelf at laſt on the point of reaping the fruit of the diſturbances and the diviſions which ſhe had diſſeminated amongſt the Poles. It has been already ſeen, that for a long time, in concert with the King of Pruſſia, ſhe left to this Prince the care of procuring the conſent of the court of Vienna to the diſmemberment of Poland. She was beſides very ſure, that ſhe would have but few obſtacles to overcome on the part of other powers. France had then a miniſter who poſſeſſed but little foreſight. England was attached to Ruſſia by her commerce. The ſtates adjoining to the Baltic might have

have reaſon to be jealous at ſeeing the Ruſſians and the Pruſſians take poſſeſſion of ports upon that ſea, but not one of them had the means nor the temerity to make any oppoſition. The Ottomans, were they more to be dreaded? Were they in a condition to give any aſſiſtance to Poland, when they ſo little underſtood how to defend themſelves, and when they beheld themſelves attacked in every quarter of their vaſt empire? Finally, Catharine had nothing to apprehend but a refuſal from the court of Vienna. Frederick promiſed her the acquieſcence of this court.

That Prince had it in his power, without running any riſk, to make ſuch a promiſe. He had long been acquainted, from the report of his miniſters, with the character of the heir of the houſe of Auſtria.

When, in 1769, Joſeph II. had an interview with him at Neiſs in Sileſia, the Pruſſian monarch, profiting by the aſcendant which he derived from his experience and his glory, propoſed to the young Emperor the firſt partition of Poland. Joſeph II. flattered with the hope of extending his dominions, liſtened with joy to the project of the King of Pruſſia; but he would not promiſe to give his conſent before he had conſulted with the old Prince Kaunitz, whoſe counſels directed him. Kaunitz applauded the plundering project. Some time after the two monarchs had a ſecond interview at Neuſtadt, in Auſtria, and the diſmemberment of Poland was reſolved upon.

The plague which ravaged the frontiers of Poland had, the preceding year, furniſhed the King of Pruſſia with an opportunity of ordering his troops to advance up to Poliſh Pruſſia. The Emperor had the ſame pretext for cauſing his to enter into the provinces moſt conveniently ſituated for him.

It appeared to have been the duty of Joſeph II. to give aſſiſtance to the confederates of Bar. The laſt treaty obliged him even to unite himſelf with the Turks againſt the Ruſſians. But this Prince had totally

tally different deſigns, and knew ſo well how to diſſemble, that the confederates, deceived by his promiſes, regarded a long time as their defenders the ſoldiers who had come to invade their country.

Foreign armies extended themſelves from one end of Poland to the other, and equally acted againſt the confederates, who were very ſoon obliged to diſperſe. The greateſt number retired to their fire-ſides: the reſt went to carry into foreign nations their complaints and their misfortunes.

All Europe had their eyes fixed on Poland. It was not poſſible to imagine why three formidable powers ſhould invade, at a time of profound peace, a country, the independence of which had been guaranteed by the moſt ſolemn treaties. It was likewiſe a ſubject of wonder, what could be the object of the inceſſant negotiations which occupied thoſe powers. At laſt it was diſcovered. The miniſter of the Emperor was the firſt who notified the treaty of Peterſburgh to the King and ſenate of Poland. The ambaſſador of Ruſſia and the envoy of Pruſſia preſented to them, almoſt at the ſame inſtant, declarations in ſupport of this treaty.

The Poloneſe, fired with indignation, loudly complained of this injuſtice. They again claimed the intervention of the powers which had become guarantees to the treaty of Oliva, a treaty which had aſſured to them the indiviſibility of their territory, and which had long been regarded as the grand charter of the north. Some few of thoſe powers made repreſentations, of as little avail as the complaints of the Poles. Not ſatisfied with having already put themſelves in poſſeſſion of part of the provinces of Poland, the three plundering courts demanded that a diet ſhould ſolemnly make a ceſſion of theſe provinces to them.

A. D. 1773. The diet was immediately convoked and aſſembled. Promiſes and money were laviſhed in order to gain the deputies. However, the majority of the diet for a long time refuſed to give conſent

ſent to the diſmemberment. Irritated at a reſiſtance of which they had not the leaſt expectation, the miniſters of the three courts threatened the diet with all the diſpleaſure of their ſovereigns. They ſaid that they would cauſe the King to be arreſted and depoſed: and their emiſſaries ſecretly ſpread a report, that if the diet did not yield, Warſaw would be delivered up to pillage. By dint of manœuvring, they at laſt ſucceeded in extorting a conſent from the diet, which at the ſame time paſſed a decree, to reſtrict to a very few days the period of their ſittings, and they named commiſſaries to determine, with the miniſters of the three courts, the conditions of the partition. There is good reaſon to believe that theſe conditions were dictated by the miniſters. They were ſigned in the month of September following.

Some nobles of the invaded provinces preſumed to exclaim againſt the treaty, and to publiſh manifeſtoes. But of what avail were theſe iſolated exclamations in oppoſition to numerous armies?

Before the convocation of the diet, and through its whole duration, the King had openly declared againſt the partition. It was nevertheleſs pretended that he ſecretly favoured it, and the perſons who were acquainted with his ancient devotedneſs to Ruſſia could not perſuade themſelves that he ever would renounce it.

As ſoon as the acceſſion to the treaty of partition was voted, ſeveral of the principal members of the diet haſtened to the King, and bitterly reproached him with the ruin of their country. That Prince at firſt replied to them with gentleneſs; but, ſoon perceiving that his moderation only ſerved to embolden them, and to render them more unjuſt, he aroſe, threw his hat on the ground, and ſaid to them haughtily:—"Gentlemen, I am weary of liſtening to you. "The partition of our miſerable country is a conſe- "quence of your ambition, of your diſſentions, of "your eternal diſputes. To yourſelves alone you

" ought to attribute your misfortunes. With reſpect " to myſelf, if no greater portion of land remained " to me than this hat could cover, I ſhould ſtill be, " notwithſtanding, in the eyes of all Europe, your " lawful but unfortunate king."

The diſmemberment of Poland deprived her of more than five millions of inhabitants. The country which fell to the lot of Ruſſia, and which was the moſt extenſive, contained 1,800,000; that of Auſtria, two millions and a half, on a much ſmaller extent of territory. Pruſſia acquired only 860,000 ſouls, but ſhe was recompenſed by the commerce and the vicinity of the Viſtula, and of the city of Dantzick, of which Frederick had already formed the project of making himſelf maſter.

The three courts which had thus appropriated to themſelves the ſpoils of Poland, meditated at the ſame time a plan to put it for ever out of her power to recover what they had juſt raviſhed from her. However dangerous the form of her government was, they wiſhed to render it ſtill worſe. They cauſed to be granted to the commiſſaries of the diet full powers for co-operating, in conjunction with them or their miniſters, towards the alterations which the conſtitution of the republic required, and, under the ſpecious pretext of correcting defects, grievouſly aggravated them.

After ſeveral lengthened-out conferences a new diet was aſſembled, in which the miniſters of the three courts propoſed their plan of reform. The diet was more tumultuous and more indocile than that which had preceded it; and, notwithſtanding the influence of the Ruſſian miniſter, who cauſed to be read by his ſecretary the new plan of the conſtitution, this plan was at firſt rejected. It is too curious not to be inſerted in this place, at leaſt the baſis of it, as well as the preamble of the inſidious memorial which the miniſters of the three courts preſented at the ſame time.

" The

"The courts are ſo deeply intereſted in the paci-
"fication of Poland, that whilſt they are occupied in
"putting the treaties in a train to be ſigned and ra-
"tified, their miniſters think it their duty not to loſe
"an inſtant of that precious interval to re-eſtabliſh
"order and tranquillity in this kingdom. We are
"therefore going to communicate to the commiſſion
"a part of thoſe fundamental laws, to the acceptance
"of which our courts will not permit the ſlighteſt ob-
"ſtacle to be oppoſed, nor the appearance of retarda-
"tion.

"1ſt. The crown of Poland ſhall be elective *to per-*
"*petuity*, and all order of ſucceſſion ſhall be prohi-
"bited. Every perſon who makes an attempt to in-
"fringe this law ſhall be declared the enemy of the
"country, and be proſecuted accordingly.

"2d. Foreigners who may aſpire to the throne,
"occaſioning moſt frequently diviſions and diſtur-
"bances, ſhall be from henceforth excluded, and a
"law ſhall be paſſed, that for the future no one but a
"Poloneſe by deſcent, born a gentleman, can be
"elected King of Poland and Grand-duke of Li-
"thuania. The ſon or grandſon of a king not to be
"elected immediately after the death of his father or
"grandfather, and rendered incapable of being cho-
"ſen till after the interval of two reigns.

"3d. The government of Poland ſhall be, and
"ſhall continue to perpetuity, a free government,
"independent, and in form of a republic.

"4th. The true principles of this government con-
"ſiſting in a ſtrict obſervance of the laws, and in the
"equilibrium of the three orders: to wit, the king,
"the ſenate and the nobleſſe, a permanent coun-
"cil ſhall be eſtabliſhed, to which the executive
"power ſhall be delegated. Into this council ſhall
"be admitted perſons of the order of nobility who
"had been hitherto excluded from the adminiſtra-
"tion of affairs in the interval of diets," &c.

By theſe laws the houſe of Saxony, and the other foreign princes who might have preſerved the integrity of the remainder of Poland, were excluded from the throne; the *liberum veto*, with the other dangerous privileges of the nobleſſe, were re-eſtabliſhed, and every diſorder perpetuated.

Stackelberg was ſtill the ambaſſador of Catharine at Warſaw. More pliable than Repnin, he had an equal degree of haughtineſs with him, and not leſs of a ſpirit of intrigue. By dint of addreſs and corruption he gained the majority of the deputies, and the diet approved the new form of government. This perverted government, eſtabliſhed by Ruſſia, Auſtria and Pruſſia, ſeemed to have a title to be ſupported by theſe powers: but they were not ſlow of taking advantage of its vices to produce its annihilation.

Whilſt Catharine was acquiring, by means of negotiation, a part of the provinces of Poland, her armies were continuing to ravage the frontiers of Turkey. Fortune was not however always favourable to them. Fourteen thouſand Ruſſians, who attempted to paſs the Danube at Giorgeſn, allowed themſelves to be ſurpriſed by Dagheſtan-Ali-Pacha, and ſix hundred of them remained priſoners with the Turks. The young Prince Repnin was of this number. He was carried to Conſtantinople, and confined in the caſtle of the ſeven towers. An Engliſhman, named Elliot, who was in the Ruſſian ſervice, diſtinguiſhed himſelf at Giorgeſn in an extraordinary manner. He vaulted with as much agility as boldneſs over the head and the ſabres of the Spahis, and fell into the river, which he croſſed by ſwimming.

Mareſchal Romanzoff croſſed the Danube, and marched ſtraightway to Siliſtria. Four-ſcore thouſand Turks were encamped upon a neighbouring height. General Weiſſeman attacked them; they ſhut themſelves up in the city. Romanzoff preſented himſelf the next day. The Grand-vizir had detached

tached from his army 50,000 men to go to the relief of Siliſtria. Romanzoff made his retreat during the night; but was haraſſed by the Turks, who killed a conſiderable number of his men. Obliged to re-paſs the Danube, this general went to encamp near Zablonitz in Walachia.

The Grand-vizir occupied the left bank of the Danube. A detachment of his army defeated a conſiderable body of Ruſſians at Roſkana. Theſe inferior engagements iſſued frequently in favour of the Ottomans.

Diſpleaſed at beholding that her armies were not acquiring any new victory, Catharine ſent orders to Mareſchal Romanzoff to inform her why he did not give battle. This general replied, that it was becauſe the army of the Grand-vizir was three times more numerous than his, and that he might very well turn this ſuperiority to good account. Catharine immediately wrote to him:—"The Romans never enquired into the number of their enemies, but where they were, in order to engage them."

A. D. 1774. Muſtapha III. died, and Abd-Ul-Hamid his brother, aſcended the throne of Conſtantinople. The concluding years of the reign of Muſtapha had been marked by ſeveral bloody diſaſters. His ſucceſſor endeavoured to reſtore the ſplendor of the Ottoman glory. He made immenſe preparations for the campaign which was going to open. The Turkiſh armies were again raiſed to the number of 400,000 fighting men.

Mareſchal Romanzoff likewiſe received conſiderable reinforcements. He reſolved once more to croſs the Danube and advance to attack the Turks. They valiantly diſputed the paſſage with him; but their efforts were vain. General Soltikoff was the firſt who gained the oppoſite ſhore. Souwaroff and Kamenſkoï followed him cloſely. The Turks were driven back. Romanzoff in a ſhort time pitched his camp at the gates of Siliſtria.

A few days afterward the Turks made an attack upon Soltikoff. They were to the number of 25,000, and fought for a long time with the utmoſt intrepidity: but they were conſtrained to yield to the ſkill and courage of the Ruſſians.

The ſame day Kamenſkoï and Souwaroff beat the Reis-Effendi, who was at the head of 40,000 Turks, and carried off his artillery.

All theſe reverſes of fortune rendered the Ottomans deſperate. With them diſorder and revolt are almoſt uniformly the conſequences of a defeat. The troops of the army of the Grand-vizir cut each other's throats, or deſerted in conſiderable detachments. This general was encamped at Schumla, and found himſelf at a great diſtance from the other corps of the Turkiſh army. Romanzoff, who obſerved the diſadvantage of that poſition, ſo completely ſurrounded the camp of the Vizir that he cut off from him all means of communication, not only with his detached corps but likewiſe with his magazines. The Vizir, therefore, not having it in his power to receive aſſiſtance, to retire, or to engage, determined to ſue for peace.

The plenipotentiaries aſſembled immediately at Koudjouk-Kaïnardgi. The Ruſſians perſiſted in the demands which they had made at the laſt congreſs: The Turks acceded to them; and the preliminaries of the treaty were ſigned upon a drum by Mareſchal Romanzoff and the Kiaya of the Grand-vizir; for, in order to avoid appearing again in the preſence of his conqueror, the haughty Muſſum-Oglou feigned indiſpoſition. By this treaty Ruſſia obtained a free navigation on the Black Sea, and upon all the Ottoman ſeas, as well as the paſſage by the channel of the Dardanelles; on this condition, however, that they ſhould never have in the ſeas of Conſtantinople more than one armed veſſel. She preſerved Azoph, Taganrok, Kinburn, and gave up the reſt of her conqueſts. The independence of the Krimea was one of the principal

cipal clauſes of the treaty, and that which coſt the Turks moſt dear. Undoubtedly they were far from being acquainted with all the policy of Catharine, but ſeemed to have a preſentiment that ſhe wiſhed to ſee the Krimea independent, only the better to reduce it to ſlavery.

Catharine had then the two-fold advantage of augmenting her own power and of weakening her enemy. The commerce of the Black Sea, and of the ports of the Levant, opened to her a ſource of immenſe riches. The protection which ſhe granted to the Tartars furniſhed her with the means of cauſing diviſions among them, and of conquering their country. The acquiſition of the Poliſh Ukraine put her in a condition, with ſtill greater facility, to carry on the war on the Danube, to make the Ottoman empire tremble, and to conſummate the ruin of Poland. The diſcipline eſtabliſhed among the koſacs added to her armies a formidable cavalry. The correſpondence which ſhe kept up in the iſlands of the Archipelago, and in Walachia and Moldavia, became to the Turks an eternal ſource of trouble and inquietude. In a word, the Empreſs beheld her influence and her glory extending far and wide.

The better to ſecure this advantage, ſhe did not ceaſe to recompenſe her generals with magnificence, and her bounty extended, in all the countries of Europe, to the learned men and the artiſts who enjoyed any portion of celebrity. Even in the heat of the war, libraries, collections of pictures, beautiful ſtatues, and valuable monuments of antiquity, were conveyed at a vaſt expence to enrich Peterſburgh, and one of the moſt beautiful diamonds in the world was added to the Imperial crown.

But whilſt Catharine appeared to enjoy the height of proſperity, the moſt ſerious calamities were deſolating the interior parts of her empire. Her finances were ſadly deranged. She received aſſiſtance from the Engliſh only by granting to their commere im-

menſe advantages. The plague had made frightful ravages at Moſcow and in the adjacent countries. That horrible diſeaſe for a long time conſumed the Ruſſian armies; the fleet of the Archipelago was not exempted from it. The revolt waſting the provinces of Kaſan, of Aſtrakan, of Orenburgh, threatened Moſcow, and continual emigrations changed commercial countries into deſerts.

That emigration calls upon us here to pauſe a while to reflect upon it. It developes the character of a nation little known, and diſplays with what injuſtice and what barbarity Ruſſian commanders preſume to treat free and peaceable men. A horde of 600,000 Tourgouths paſtured their numerous flocks in the plains which are watered by the Volga, between the provinces of Aſtrakan and of Kaſan. The governor of Aſtrakan gave to a lieutenant, named Kiſchenſkoï, the office of overſeer to theſe Tourgouths. Kiſchenſkoï, a man extremely covetous, inſenſibly made himſelf maſter of a conſiderable part of their flocks, and ſold them for his own profit. His extortions in a ſhort time procured him an immenſe fortune. But his avarice was not on this account diminiſhed; it ſeemed, on the contrary, to increaſe in proportion as he acquired the means of ſatisfying it.

The Khan of the Tourgouths was a venerable old man, who had ſhed his blood in the ſervice of Ruſſia. The Empreſs gave him, as a recompenſe, her portrait, in a large medal ſurrounded with brilliants, and the Khan wore it ſuſpended from his neck. One day Kiſchenſkoï, who had already received ſeveral preſents from the Khan, preſumed to demand more. The old man, in indignation, could not refrain from reproaching him with his injuſtice, and with all the grievous methods he employed to ruin the unfortunate Tourgouths. Kiſchenſkoï, who was offended by the truth of theſe reproaches, had the audacity to give the Khan a box on the ear; and having at the ſame time ordered his ſoldiers to arreſt the miniſter

of

of this prince, he cauſed the puniſhment of the battoges to be inflicted on him.

The Khan immediately diſpatched ſome of the principal Tourgouths to carry his complaints to Peterſburgh. The miniſter of war, Zakâr Tſchernitſcheff, who protected Kiſchenſkoï, ſcarcely deigned to liſten to theſe meſſengers.

The Tourgouths had ſubmitted to the rapacity and the plunder of the Ruſſian officer, but they could not endure either the contempt with which he had preſumed to treat their Khan, nor the injuſtice of the court of Ruſſia. The prieſts and the ancients of the horde, having held a council, reſolved to abandon the territory of the Ruſſian empire, and to retire to the foot of the mountains of Thibet, the country of their anceſtors. The ſecret was ſo well kept that two days had already elapſed ſince the Tourgouths had taken to flight, and had carried off a ſmall Ruſſian detachment, before the other Ruſſians diſcovered it. Three regiments were fruitleſsly ſent in purſuit of them. The Tourgouths employed greater diligence than they did, and had beſides preceded them by two days. Theſe regiments wandered for a long time in the deſerts, where a part of the ſoldiers periſhed.

When the court of Peterſburgh received intelligence of the emigration of the Tourgouths, a council of war was nominated to examine into the conduct of lieutenant-colonel Kiſchenſkoï, and bring him to his trial. But this council was guilty of great negligence in the proſecution of the inquiry. Kiſchenſkoï employed a part of his plunder in procuring himſelf friends at court, or in corrupting his judges; and, to the great ſcandal of the principal part of the Ruſſians, this man, who had loſt to his country 600,000 inhabitants, was recompenſed for it by the title of Colonel.

Catharine re-demanded the Tourgouths from the Emperor of China. This monarch replied, "That "he was neither ſo unjuſt a prince as to deliver his "ſubjects

" ſubjects up to foreigners, nor a father ſo cruel as to " baniſh his children who had returned into the bo- " ſom of their family; that he had not been informed " of the project of the Tourgouths till the moment " of their arrival, and that then he had haſtened to " reſtore to them the habitations which belonged " to them from the remoteſt antiquity; that, finally, " the Empreſs had no reaſon to complain of the " Tourgouths, but much reaſon to do ſo of the " officer, who had dared to lift his hand to the face " of a Khan, and to order the battoges to be inflicted " on his miniſter."

Amidſt the great intereſts which occupied her, the court of Peterſburgh was not neglectful of petty intrigues. Amidſt the cares which the government required, Catharine did not renounce her pleaſures. She frequently paſſed from the council to the ball-room and to the theatre, and from the moſt important ſittings of the ſenate to the moſt frivolous amuſements. She gave audience to the ambaſſadors of foreign powers, without having occaſion to make greater preparations than ſhe made for the reception of her courtiers, and ſhe dictated a law with the ſame facility as a billet-doux. Tranquil in her new amours, ſhe never ſpoke of thoſe which had preceded them. Panin, Tcherniſcheff, Baratinſky, applauded themſelves for what they had atchieved.

But that which gave them the greateſt tranquillity was the baniſhment of Gregory Orloff. For almoſt five months he had been travelling in foreign countries. His enemies flattered themſelves that he would continue to do ſo for two years at leaſt. The emiſſaries whom they had appointed to watch his motions, frequently gave them information of his route. He was believed to be in Holland. It was imagined that he would make the tour of England, France, Italy. All at once he re-appeared at the court of Peterſburgh. The Empreſs refuſed to admit him into her preſence. She ſent him an order to go to Revel. But ſhe ſent him

him at the ſame time very conſiderable preſents, and laviſhed honours and careſſes on the moſt intimate friends of that ancient favourite.

What then could be the motive of this conduct? Catharine no longer loved Orloff; ſhe no longer feared him; but ſhe dreaded, ſhe deteſted a faction which, ſhe believed, muſt of neceſſity be formed, under covert of a name dear to the empire, and formidable to Orloff, that of the Grand-duke. She wiſhed to oppoſe the party of her ancient favourite to this faction, and to ſhelter herſelf under the protection of a man who had already ſo ably defended her. Triumphant over her enemies, the admiration of Europe, idolized by her courtiers, that Princeſs was frequently a prey to the moſt lively uneaſineſs; but ſhe concealed it carefully. She apprehended the poſſibility of ſeeing herſelf precipitated from the throne, and ſhe formed the project of further aggrandizing her eſtates. She knew that her life was ſought for, and ſhe ſpoke with gaiety of the long career which ſhe hoped to run. Accuſtomed to paſs ſeveral hours a day in her cloſet alone, employed in reading or writing, ſhe once found there a billet, in which ſhe was threatened with aſſaſſination: never did ſhe diſplay greater confidence and tranquillity.

Covetous of every ſort of glory, ſhe knew how to lay herſelf under reſtraint inceſſantly in order to obtain it. She was deceitful, vindictive, ungrateful: ſhe was believed to be ſincere, merciful, generous. The blood of the unfortunate Ivan ſtill ſmoked, when Catharine appeared touched with the hard fate of the family of that Prince. Duke Anthony-Ulric of Brunſwick, and the regent Anne his wife, had, after Ivan, two ſons and two daughters, who were born in priſon. The regent Anne died in child-bed. Duke Anthony-Ulric, and the four children who remained to him, after having been dragged from dungeon to dungeon, lived in confinement in a convent at Kolmogor, a little town ſituated at the diſtance of twelve or fifteen leagues

leagues from Archangel. Certain that ſhe had nothing to apprehend from the Duke, Catharine made him an offer of his liberty, with the means of retiring into Germany. This Prince refuſed. "Why," replied he, "ſhould I quit the Ruſſian empire to publiſh the exceſs of my misfortunes, and to excite unprofitable compaſſion?"

For a long time paſt Waſſiltchikoff had occupied the place of favourite. As he did not abuſe his credit either to accumulate immenſe treaſures, or to injure his rivals, he excited not the leaſt envy. The Empreſs frequently praiſed his moderation, and that quality, ſo rare in a courtier, appeared to render him every day more dear to her. But all at once he ceaſed to pleaſe. At a moment when he had juſt been receiving proofs of her tenderneſs, he received an order to take his departure for Moſcow. He obeyed. Some new preſents from the Empreſs accompanied him: but this was only a cuſtomary recompenſe; the heart had no ſhare in it.

Whether it was that Orloff had been ſecretly recalled from Revel, or whether his abode in that city was unſupportable to him, he once more made his appearance at court. The Empreſs did not puniſh him for it: ſhe received him, on the contrary, with an appearance of ſatisfaction. Proud of this reception, and of the recollection of his paſt favour, ſtill reckoning upon the devotedneſs of his creatures, who were in great numbers, he thought it poſſible to recover his honours and his credit. Whilſt he enjoyed them, he had frequently appeared to deſpiſe them. As ſoon as he was deprived of them, he felt that they were neceſſary to him. Orloff, born in the obſcurity, and brought up in the licentiouſneſs, of barracks, found himſelf all at once borne by fortune to a point of elevation which, in augmenting his natural haughtineſs, had neither altered his inclinations nor poliſhed his manners. Eleven years paſſed in the ſociety of the Empreſs, in all the refinements of luxury and

and voluptuouſneſs, did not prevent him from braving the inclemencies of ſeaſons, from expoſing himſelf to the moſt ſevere fatigues, and from purſuing the moſt vulgar pleaſures. From the time that he no longer occupied the place of favourite, he remained poſſeſſor of a revenue of 260,000 roubles, and a perſonal eſtate of 300,000. Inſtead of keeping his houſehold with grandeur, with magnificence, he led the life of an officer in garriſon. With the means of having a table ſerved with every delicacy, he ate almoſt always with the officers of the court, whoſe repaſts were but very indifferent. He was not more difficult in his amours. He tendered his careſſes, without diſtinction, to a groſs Finlander, a wild Kalmuc, or to the prettieſt woman in Peterſburgh.

Jealous of the authority which his rivals enjoyed, and contemplating with envy the throne upon which he had ſo long flattered himſelf that he ſhould be ſeated, Orloff demanded his re-eſtabliſhment in the exerciſe of his employments, and that Panin, whom he accuſed of being the firſt author of his diſgrace, ſhould be exiled. Orloff ſeemed, at this moment, to have recovered all his aſcendancy over the heart of Catharine. She exhibited herſelf in his eyes with all the weakneſs of the moſt tender lover. She did not heſitate to reſtore him to his offices. She refuſed, however, to baniſh Panin, and contented herſelf with promiſing that ſhe would diſmiſs him from court as ſoon as the Grand-duke was married.

Panin was extremely grieved at ſeeing Orloff eſtabliſhed in his employments; but he could impute it to himſelf alone, as he had done nothing to prevent it. Rejoiced at the fortune and the conſequence which he enjoyed, living in indolence in the midſt of buſineſs, ſeeking a tranquil ſociety in the tumult of a court, he gave himſelf up only by fits to running down his rivals, and, with greater ability than they poſſeſſed, he frequently ſaw them triumph.

" Count

"Count Panin is a poor man," ſaid a courtier who had long ſtudied his character; "he loves nothing "but eaſe and retirement. You become his friend "whenever you put on the appearance of laughing "at his bons mots, and furniſh him with an oppor- "tunity of exerting his talents for detraction. He "laughs himſelf then with all his heart, and forgets "the affairs of ſtate, diſpatches, couriers, and the in- "trigues formed againſt him."

Catharine had long meditated on marrying the Grand-duke; but as this Prince ſeemed to be of a feeble temperament and of a cold conſtitution, ſhe apprehended that he was but little diſpoſed to give heirs to the empire. Her confidants ſoon went to work to diſſipate her fears. They perſuaded a young Poliſh widow, named Sophia Ocipowna Ouchakova Czartorynſka, to try the effect of her charms upon the heart of the Prince. That woman conſented, and had a ſon by him, to whom was given the name of Simeon Welikoï.

From this time the Empreſs began to conſider what conſort ſhe ought to make choice of for the Grand-duke. She was however a little embarraſſed in her choice. She did not wiſh to have a princeſs who might become her own rival, and who, inſtructed by her example, might hazard an attempt to deprive her of her throne and life. It was neceſſary for her, on the contrary, to chuſe one who had neither the means nor the inclination to render herſelf an object of apprehenſion. She fixed her regards on the daughters of the Landgrave of Heſſe-Darmſtadt. Theſe Princeſſes were three ſiſters. Catharine invited their mother to bring them to her court. However derogatory this propoſition was to the dignity of the Landgravine of Heſſe-Darmſtadt, ſhe accepted. She was ambitious. She liſtened only to the hope of placing one of her daughters on the throne of Ruſſia, and repaired to Peterſburgh. The Empreſs received her with

with magnificence, and overwhelmed her with preſents. After having had time to become acquainted with the three young Princeſſes, Catharine choſe for the conſort of the Grand-duke the Princeſs Wilhelmina, who, on embracing the Greek ritual, took the name of Natalia Alexiewa, and was united to the heir of the Czars.

Orloff and his party were in hopes that this marriage would be ſpeedily ſucceeded by the diſgrace of Panin. He received orders to quit the apartment which he occupied in the palace in quality of governor to the Prince. His friends trembled. The courtiers avoided him. He gave himſelf up for loſt. His pupil had the generoſity to quell this ſtorm. He went in ſearch of his mother, and repreſented to her that Panin had been always faithfully attached to the ſervice of the empire, and that it would be too cruel for him to be baniſhed from court, at the moment when he had the greateſt reaſon to expect a recompenſe. This proceeding altered the reſolution of the Empreſs. Inſtead of ſending Panin an order to retire, ſhe wrote him a letter replete with expreſſions of affection; ſhe thanked him for the attention which he had paid to the education of the Grand-duke, and confirmed him in the adminiſtration of foreign affairs.

Thoſe who were ignorant of the motive which had determined the Empreſs to retain Panin, found in her conduct an inexplicable contradiction. Orloff preſumed to reproach her. She did not give him clearer information on the ſubject. Not chuſing that this favourite ſhould know that a mother had yielded to the ſolicitations of her ſon, ſhe told him that it was neceſſary to ſacrifice the pleaſure of turning off a miniſter who gave diſſatisfaction, to the occaſion there was for his ſervices. Always ſkilful in diſguiſing her ſentiments, ſhe did not ſcruple to deceive the favourite, who flattered himſelf that he poſſeſſed her entire confidence. Although ſhe appeared to have reſtored

to

to him her firſt tenderneſs, ſhe ſecretly cheriſhed in her heart a paſſion which was not ſlow in diſcovering itſelf: ſhe wiſhed for the ſecond time to remove Orloff, but ſtill kept on good terms with him.

Among the men of ſcience and letters with whom the Empreſs maintained a regular correſpondence, Voltaire and Diderot were the perſons whom ſhe diſtinguiſhed the moſt. She invited them ſeveral times to pay her a viſit. The philoſopher of Ferney knew by experience all the danger of courts: he did not permit himſelf to be tempted by the deſire of ſeeing that of Ruſſia. The philoſopher of Paris diſplayed more complaiſance: he repaired to Peterſburgh. Catharine overwhelmed him with benefits and praiſes. During the whole time that he was at her court ſhe converſed with him every day on ariſing from dinner. Philoſophy, legiſlation, politics, were uſually the ſubject of theſe converſations. Diderot developed his principles on liberty and the rights of the people with his cuſtomary eloquence and enthuſiaſm. The Empreſs appeared enchanted; but ſhe was not a whit the more diſpoſed to profit by them.

"Monſieur Diderot," ſaid ſhe, "is a hundred "years old in many reſpects; but in others he is no "more than ten."

That Princeſs had not moſt probably, in ſecret, a better opinion of the wiſdom of Voltaire; but ſhe never ſpoke of him except with the reſpect due to the firſt diſpenſer of glory. The manner in which ſhe wrote to him is well known. I have already quoted ſome fragments of her letters. I ſhall nevertheleſs tranſcribe one in this place, to diſplay farther with what art ſhe maſked herſelf in the eyes of that celebrated man, and ſought to attract thoſe flatteries which he has but too liberally laviſhed on her.

———"With regard to haughtineſs, I wiſh to "make you on this ſubject my grand confeſſion. I "have had great ſucceſs during the war: I very na- "turally rejoice in it. I have ſaid Ruſſia ſhall be ren-

"dered

" dered conſpicuous by that war; it will be ſeen that " this nation is indefatigable; that ſhe poſſeſſes men " of eminent merit, and who have all the qualities " requiſite to form heroes: it will be ſeen that ſhe is " not deficient in reſources, but that ſhe can ſtand " up in her own defence, and carry on war with vi- " gour, when unjuſtly attacked.

" Completely inſpired with theſe ideas, I have " never made any reflection on Catharine, who, at " the age of forty-two, can increaſe neither in body " nor underſtanding, but who, in the natural order " of things, muſt remain, and does remain, as ſhe is. " Do her affairs go on well?—She ſays, ſo much the " better! If they go on leſs proſperouſly, ſhe will " make uſe of all her faculties to reſtore them again " to the beſt arrangement poſſible.

" This is my ambition, and I have no other; what " I ſay to you is truth. I will go ſtill farther; I will " tell you, that in order to ſpare the effuſion of hu- " man blood, I ſincerely wiſh for peace; but that " peace is ſtill far diſtant, although the Turks, from " different motives, ardently deſire it. Theſe people " do not know how to make it.

" I equally wiſh a ſettlement of the unreaſon- " able quarrels of Poland. I have to do there with " giddy heads, each one of which, inſtead of contri- " buting to the common peace, operates to the con- " trary, from caprice and volatility. My ambaſſador " has publiſhed a declaration which ought to have " opened their eyes. But it is to be preſumed they " will rather expoſe themſelves to the laſt extremity, " than adopt uniformly a wiſe and rational conduct. " The *vortices* of Deſcartes have never exiſted but in " Poland. There every head is a vortex which whirls " inceſſantly round itſelf. Chance alone ſtops it, and " never reaſon or judgment.

" I have not as yet received either your *queſtions* " or your watches from Ferney. I have no doubt " that the workmanſhip of your manufacturers will be

" perfect, as they carry on their operations under your " inſpection.

" Do not find fault with your people for having " ſent me an overſtock of watches: that expenſe " will not ruin me. It would be very unfortunate for " me if I was ſo reduced as not to have at the proper " ſeaſon a ſufficient number of trifling ſums, as often " as I have occaſion for them. Do not, I beſeech " you, form a judgment of our finances by thoſe of " the other ruined powers of Europe: you would do " me injuſtice. Although we have carried on war " for three years paſt, we are building, and every " thing elſe goes on as regularly as in a time of pro- " found peace. Two years have elapſed ſince any " new tax was impoſed. The war is at preſent in an " eſtabliſhed ſtate: once regulated, it does not in the " ſlighteſt degree cauſe diſorder in other affairs. If " we can take one or two Caffas more, the war is " paid.

" I ſhall be ſatisfied with myſelf every time that I " meet with your approbation, Sir. I have alſo re- " peruſed my inſtructions for the code ſome weeks " ago, becauſe I then believed that the peace was " nearer than it actually is; and I have found that I " did right in forming it. I acknowledge that this " code, for which ſeveral materials are preparing and " others quite ready, will coſt me ſtill conſiderable " labour, before it can be brought to that degree of " perfection which I wiſh to ſee it attain. But no " matter; it muſt be completed, although Tagan- " rok ſhould have the ſea to the ſouth, and high " mountains to the north.

" However, your projects upon that place could " not have been put into execution till peace had " ſecured its environs againſt all apprehenſions of an " attack by land and by ſea; for, till the capture of " the Krimea, this was the frontier place oppoſite to " the Tartars. Perhaps in a ſhort time the Khan of " the Krimea may be brought to me in perſon. I un-

" derſtand

" derſtand at this moment that he has not croſſed " the ſea with the Turks, but that he remains in the " mountains with a very ſmall retinue, in a ſituation " nearly ſimilar to that of the Pretender in Scotland, " after the defeat of *Culloden*. If he comes to me, " we will make an attempt to throw him into anima- " tion this winter; and, to avenge myſelf of him, I " will make him dance, and he ſhall go to the French " comedy.

" I was on the point of cloſing this letter when I " received yours of the 10th of July, in which you " inform me of the adventure which befel my *inſtruc-* " *tions* in France. I was acquainted with this anec- " dote, and even of its appendix, in conſequence of " the order of the Duke de Choiſeul. I confeſs to " you that I have laughed at it when I read it in the " gazettes, and found that I was ſufficiently revenged.

" The fire at Peterſburgh has, according to the re- " ports of the police, conſumed in all 140 houſes, " among which there were twenty built of ſtone; the " reſt were only barracks of wood. The high wind " carried the flames and the brands all around, which " renewed the conflagration the next day, and gave " it a ſupernatural air. But it is not to be doubted " that the high wind and the exceſſive heat cauſed all " this evil, which ſhall be ſpeedily repaired.

" With us building goes on with greater celerity " than in any other country in Europe. In 1762 " there was a fire twice as conſiderable, which con- " ſumed an immenſe quarter of the city built of " wood. The whole was rebuilt in brick, in leſs than " three years."

BOOK VIII.

Diſcontents in various Parts of the Empire—Cauſes which determined different Impoſtors to aſſume the name of Peter III.—Revolt of Pugatſcheff—His Succeſſes—His Reverſes—His Death—Potemkin becomes Favourite—Manner of inſtalling and diſmiſſing Favourites—Journey to Moſcow—Rewards granted to Mareſchal Romanzoff and the other Generals—Troubles in the Krimea—Zawadoffſky Favourite—Death of the Grand-duke's firſt Conſort—Journey of that Prince to Berlin—His ſecond Marriage—Zoritz Favourite.

THE proſperity of the Empreſs ſeemed for a moment to have reached its extreme boundary. A dreadful ſtorm had ariſen in the moſt remote provinces of the empire. It roared, it ſpread, it threatened to ſubvert the throne of Catharine. That Princeſs had given much cauſe of offence to the greateſt part of her ſubjects. The grandees were diſguſted at her caprices, and with the inſolence of her favourites. The clergy burnt with deſire to avenge the diminution of their privileges. The people groaned under the preſſure of the innumerable vexations they had to endure. Finally, the peaſants were reduced to deſpair at beholding all their children torn from them one after another to recruit the armies, which the ſword of the Turks and the ravages of the plague were inceſſantly mowing down on the banks of the Danube. The koſacs of the Don firſt diſplayed the ſignal of rebellion. They had at their head a man who, well acquainted with their credulity, and obſerving the ſpirit of diſcontent diffuſed among them, was ſoon in a condition to excite ſeveral provinces to revolt, and who, had he poſſeſſed the ſkill to make the

the moſt of his ſucceſſes, might undoubtedly have changed the fate of Ruſſia.

But it is neceſſary firſt of all to unfold the motive which determined that man to undertake the bold part which he performed. The papas never could forgive Catharine for refuſing to give them back their revenues. They hoped to find in impoſture one of the ſureſt and moſt practicable means of vengeance: they did not fail to have recourſe to it. They were at pains to have it whiſpered about that Peter III. was not dead, and that he would ſoon appear to redemand his throne of the Empreſs. There accordingly did in fact appear, in the province of Woronetz, a pretended Peter III. but he was taken, detected as an impoſtor, and puniſhed with death.

Some years afterwards, a deſerter from the regiment of Orloff, named Tcherniſcheff, appeared in the village of Kopenka, on the frontiers of the Krimea, and likewiſe attempted to paſs for the deceaſed Emperor. The papas procured him a great number of partiſans; and they were preparing to crown him in a church, when the colonel of a Ruſſian regiment, who had been informed that Tcherniſcheff was ſtirring up the people, came upon him by ſurpriſe, and inſtantly had his head cut off.

In the territory of Montenero, tributary to the Grand-ſignor, a phyſician, whoſe name was Stephano, availed himſelf of the enthuſiaſm with which the Ruſſian name inſpired the Greek Chriſtians of that province, to propagate a belief among them that he was Peter III. The monks, nay the biſhop, warmly ſupported him, and this pretenſion occaſioned an inſurrection among the people. But the janiſſaries ſoon obliged Stephano to conſult his ſafety by flight. More fortunate than the other repreſentatives of Peter, he eſcaped the ſcaffold.

A fourth impoſtor ſhewed himſelf afterward in the government of Ouſa. Born a ſerf on one of the eſtates

of the Woronzoff family, he fled for refuge among the koſacs, and followed a detachment on its march to join the Ruſſian army. On arriving at one of the ſtations fixed in the deſert between the Don and the Volga, he aſſembled his comrades, and aſſured them he was Peter III. That ſtupid and barbarous company believed him, acknowledged him as Emperor, and ſwore they would die in his defence. He immediately named his miniſters, his generals, and prepared to wear the crown with as much ſecurity as if he had been in poſſeſſion of a kingdom and of a powerful army. But his reign was not of long duration. At the end of a few hours a Ruſſian officer came and ſeized his newly created majeſty by the hair, had him bound by the hands of his own ſubjects, and ſent him to priſon at Tzaritzin. There the ſoldiery and the populace, inſtigated by the monks, made an attempt to reſcue the impoſtor. But Colonel Zipletoff, commandant of the fortreſs, part of the garriſon of which maintained their fidelity, advanced, with a diſcharge of muſketry, to diſperſe the inſurgents. The impoſtor was inſtantly ſentenced to the knout, and periſhed under the laſh of the executioner.

A priſoner of Irkoutſk attempted an imitation of the four thoughtleſs wretches who have juſt been mentioned, and fared no better. All theſe tragical farces were a prelude merely to the bloody ſcenes preparing by a more formidable cheat.

Ymelian Pugatſcheff was the ſon of a koſac, and born at Simoweiſk, a village ſituated on the banks of the Don. He ſerved at firſt as a ſimple trooper in the army which the Empreſs Elizabeth ordered to march, in 1756, againſt the King of Pruſſia. He afterwards ſerved in the campaign of 1769, againſt the Turks. He fought under General Panin at the ſiege of Bender. After the capture of that city he wiſhed to have his diſcharge. It was refuſed. He made his eſcape

eſcape into Poland. Some hermits of the Greek perſuaſion, to whoſe hoſpitality he reſorted, kept him in concealment for ſome time.

He frequently converſed with thoſe hermits on the ſubject of his campaigns and of his different adventures. He related to them, one day, that when he was in the army of General Panin, a Ruſſian officer ſaid to him, after having long conſidered his face and perſon, "If the Emperor Peter III. my maſter, were "not dead, I could believe you to be the man." The hermits ſeemed to pay no great attention to this relation: but, ſome time after, one of their companions, whom Pugatſcheff had not yet ſeen, ſuddenly exclaimed, "Is not that the Emperor, Peter III.?" The monks from that moment laid themſelves out to ſeduce him, and found no great difficulty in ſucceeding. As ſoon as he was ſufficiently prepared to ſerve as the inſtrument of their impoſture, he departed for the city of Dubranka, where he ſtopped ſome days. From thence he got into little Ruſſia, and ſojourned among the ſectaries, ſo numerous there, who practiſe the Greek religion, ſuch as it was taught by the primitive church. Afraid of being ſoon detected as a deſerter, he took refuge among the koſacs of the Don, and became adjutant to the hetman Yewremoff. Thence he migrated to the inhabitants of the banks of the Yaïk, a river to which Catharine has given the name of Oural. Pugatſcheff confided to many of thoſe koſacs the deſign he entertained of forming a party, and engaged them to accompany him to the heights of mount Caucaſus, aſſuring them they would there find powerful ſupport. It was not known that he had already reſolved to paſs himſelf for Peter III. But, as it was no ſecret that he ſtirred up the people to ſedition, they had him arreſted at Malekoffska, and ſent him to Kaſan to be tried. The governor neglected to bring this diſturber of the public peace to judgment. Pugatſcheff was frequently viſited in priſon by the papas, who, without doubt, were in his

ſecret. They furniſhed him with money, which he employed in bribing his guards, and made his eſcape. He immediately joined ſome of his aſſociates, went down the Volga as far as the mouth of the Irghis, forced his way up that river, and penetrated into the deſert. There he ſaw his force every day increaſe. When he believed he might reckon on a formidable party, he boldly declared himſelf to be the Emperor Peter III. miraculouſly eſcaped from the dagger of aſſaſſins.

The rebellion had already burſt into a flame among the koſacs of the Yaïk. They are ſo attached to their religious prejudices and to their beard, which they ſuffer to grow to an immoderate length, that it is impoſſible with ſafety to make them renounce it. Prince Wiaſchemſkoï, procurator-general of the ſenate, had ſtripped them of a great part of their paſture-lands, and forced them to diſpoſe of a large proportion of their live-ſtock. The miniſter Zakar Tcherniſcheff, after having reduced their pay, already very moderate, had given no other reply to their deputies, who went to Peterſburgh to complain and petition for redreſs, but a hearty drubbing. Afterwards they were called upon for recruits to form a regiment of huſſars. They furniſhed theſe; but the moment the recruits were called upon to cut off their beards they refuſed. General Traubenberg, a Livonian, who was at Yaïtſk, ſet at nought their remonſtrances, and ordered them to be ſhaved in the public market-place. The inhabitants of Yaïtſk, rouſed to indignation at this act of violence, which they conſidered as a ſacrilege, flew to arms, and maſſacred Traubenberg and ſeveral of his officers. At the commencement of the following year, General Freymann, a German, came to re-eſtabliſh order at Yaïtſk, and inflicted cruel puniſhments on the ringleaders of the revolt. But thoſe ſeverities ſerved only to ſtimulate the ſpirit of ſedition and revenge.

Pugatſcheff, wiſhing to take advantage of the diſ-

ordered

ordered ſtate of Yaïtſk, repaired thither ſecretly, and found no difficulty in making friends at that place. The monks had already circulated a rumour that a new emperor was on the point of appearing, and the people, irritated againſt the governor and the ſoldiery, conceived hopes that this emperor would deliver them from their accumulated vexations. Pugatſcheff learned at Yaïtſk that the koſacs had juſt been provoked into a ſecond revolt, and that a party of them had retired into the moraſſes. He inſtantly went and joined them. Having at firſt found many of them aſſembled to purſue the employment of fiſhery, he announced himſelf as Peter III. and ſaid, "That he had made his eſcape from priſon at the "moment they were going to deſtroy him; that the "traitors who had dethroned him, and who trembl-"ed at the thought of his re-appearance, had diſ-"ſeminated a falſe account of his death; that he had "been under the neceſſity of diſguiſing himſelf as a "koſac, to carry arms for his perſecutors, and to "conceal himſelf afterwards among the true and "faithful believers, to whom he had made himſelf "known; that having at laſt been informed the "brave koſacs of the Yaïk had reſolved to throw off "the yoke of the uſurper, he was come to put him-"ſelf into their hands, and to march in their com-"pany to take vengeance."

The koſacs were eaſily to be ſeduced. Prepared by the monks for the ſpeedy appearance among them of an emperor who would protect their religion, they greedily ſwallowed every thing that Pugatſcheff ſaid, recognized him as the Czar Peter III. and ſware to replace him on the throne, and to ſacrifice life itſelf in maintaining him there. Pugatſcheff, accompanied by theſe koſacs, by his firſt partiſans, and by many others who flocked to his ſtandard, attacked the colonies which the Empreſs had recently ſettled on the banks of the Irghis. He ſtood in need of their arms and their horſes: theſe he took away; but did them

no

no farther miſchief, for he then affected a moderation which ſoon degenerated into the moſt tremendous ferocity. Having already under his command 14,000 ſoldiers, he advanced boldly to the gates of Yaïtſk. He addreſſed a ſummons to the governor under the ſignature of Peter III. commanding him to deliver up the city. The governor refuſed to obey. Pugatſcheff made the aſſault, but was vigorouſly repulſed. Perceiving it would be impoſſible for him to carry the place by ſtorm, he reſolved to reduce it by famine. This attempt was equally unſucceſsful. The garriſon, reduced to feed on horſe-fleſh and even on boiled leather, obſtinately refuſed to capitulate, and reſtrained the inhabitants, who were diſpoſed to open the gates to Pugatſcheff. The patience and zeal of this garriſon met with their reward. A conſiderable body of Ruſſians arrived to ſave them from the maſſacre to which, undoubtedly, they were deſtined by the rebels.

Pugatſcheff ſpeedily indemnified himſelf for this diſappointment. He ſurpriſed the colonies of the Iletz, and carried, ſword in hand, the two firſt fortreſſes which protected them. The fort of Tatiſchewa, which he afterwards attacked, made a ſtouter reſiſtance. But as this fort was built entirely of wood, he ſet fire to it, and obliged the garriſon to conſult their ſafety by flight.

The governor of Orenburgh, informed of the progreſs of the rebels, diſpatched a detachment to oppoſe them, under the command of Colonel Buloff. That officer was deficient both in prudence and firmneſs. Surpriſed in the defiles of the mountains by the troops of Pugatſcheff, he ſurrendered without ſtriking a blow, and was maſſacred moſt mercileſsly. Thoſe of his ſoldiers who refuſed to enliſt among the rebels were detained as priſoners. General Tcherniſcheff, who was on his march to join Colonel Buloff, at the head of a ſecond detachment, allowed himſelf to be ſurpriſed as he did, and met a ſimilar fate.

The

The army of Pugatſcheff being powerfully reinforced, both by recruits preſſed into the ſervice and the voluntary and more numerous recruits of the koſacs, he proceeded to lay ſiege to Orenburgh. The governor of that city had already conſiderably weakened his garriſon by the ſeveral detachments he ordered to march againſt the rebels. The ſoldiers who remained were in no condition to make a defence. Orenburgh was on the point of being captured, when the garriſon of Kraſnogorſk advanced to its relief, and, gallantly cutting a paſſage for themſelves through the beſiegers, entered the city and ſaved it.

The report of Pugatſcheff's conqueſts procured him additional ſupport. Whole hordes crouded to his ſtandard. The Baſchkirs, hunting tribes, who live on the territory of Ruſſia, and bear her yoke with extreme impatience, declared for the rebels, and furniſhed them with numerous recruits. The Kirghis cloſely followed the Baſchkirs. Their example was followed by the Budziaks, Tartars whom the Empreſs had ordered to be tranſplanted to the banks of the Volga after the capture of Bender, and who could never pardon her their tranſmigration. The revolt extended over the other colonies of thoſe countries. The peaſants employed in the copper-mines and in the founderies of the mountains of Oural, deſerted their labour and took up arms.

Pugatſcheff vigorouſly puſhed the ſiege of Orenburgh. While one part of his troops occupied the trenches, another went and carried off the copper money from the mines, and caſt bullets and cannon, which he employed againſt the city. Part of the winter paſſed in this ſiege, during which he abandoned himſelf to continual exceſſes of debauchery and cruelty.

The rebel army was by this time ſo numerous, that the regiments ſent from Kaſan oftener than once ran the riſk of being forced, in defending the paſs of the mountains which ſeparate that city from Orenburgh.

In

no farther miſchief, for he then affected a moderation which ſoon degenerated into the moſt tremendous ferocity. Having already under his command 14,000 ſoldiers, he advanced boldly to the gates of Yaïtſk. He addreſſed a ſummons to the governor under the ſignature of Peter III. commanding him to deliver up the city. The governor refuſed to obey. Pugatſcheff made the aſſault, but was vigorouſly repulſed. Perceiving it would be impoſſible for him to carry the place by ſtorm, he reſolved to reduce it by famine. This attempt was equally unſucceſsful. The garriſon, reduced to feed on horſe-fleſh and even on boiled leather, obſtinately refuſed to capitulate, and reſtrained the inhabitants, who were diſpoſed to open the gates to Pugatſcheff. The patience and zeal of this garriſon met with their reward. A conſiderable body of Ruſſians arrived to ſave them from the maſſacre to which, undoubtedly, they were deſtined by the rebels.

Pugatſcheff ſpeedily indemnified himſelf for this diſappointment. He ſurpriſed the colonies of the Iletz, and carried, ſword in hand, the two firſt fortreſſes which protected them. The fort of Tatiſchewa, which he afterwards attacked, made a ſtouter reſiſtance. But as this fort was built entirely of wood, he ſet fire to it, and obliged the garriſon to conſult their ſafety by flight.

The governor of Orenburgh, informed of the progreſs of the rebels, diſpatched a detachment to oppoſe them, under the command of Colonel Buloff. That officer was deficient both in prudence and firmneſs. Surpriſed in the defiles of the mountains by the troops of Pugatſcheff, he ſurrendered without ſtriking a blow, and was maſſacred moſt mercileſsly. Thoſe of his ſoldiers who refuſed to enliſt among the rebels were detained as priſoners. General Tcherniſcheff, who was on his march to join Colonel Buloff, at the head of a ſecond detachment, allowed himſelf to be ſurpriſed as he did, and met a ſimilar fate.

The

The army of Pugatſcheff being powerfully reinforced, both by recruits preſſed into the ſervice and the voluntary and more numerous recruits of the koſacs, he proceeded to lay ſiege to Orenburgh. The governor of that city had already conſiderably weakened his garriſon by the ſeveral detachments he ordered to march againſt the rebels. The ſoldiers who remained were in no condition to make a defence. Orenburgh was on the point of being captured, when the garriſon of Kraſnogorſk advanced to its relief, and, gallantly cutting a paſſage for themſelves through the beſiegers, entered the city and ſaved it.

The report of Pugatſcheff's conqueſts procured him additional ſupport. Whole hordes crouded to his ſtandard. The Baſchkirs, hunting tribes, who live on the territory of Ruſſia, and bear her yoke with extreme impatience, declared for the rebels, and furniſhed them with numerous recruits. The Kirghis cloſely followed the Baſchkirs. Their example was followed by the Budziaks, Tartars whom the Empreſs had ordered to be tranſplanted to the banks of the Volga after the capture of Bender, and who could never pardon her their tranſmigration. The revolt extended over the other colonies of thoſe countries. The peaſants employed in the copper-mines and in the founderies of the mountains of Oural, deſerted their labour and took up arms.

Pugatſcheff vigorouſly puſhed the ſiege of Orenburgh. While one part of his troops occupied the trenches, another went and carried off the copper money from the mines, and caſt bullets and cannon, which he employed againſt the city. Part of the winter paſſed in this ſiege, during which he abandoned himſelf to continual exceſſes of debauchery and cruelty.

The rebel army was by this time ſo numerous, that the regiments ſent from Kaſan oftener than once ran the riſk of being forced, in defending the paſs of the mountains which ſeparate that city from Orenburgh.

In

In the courſe of the winter a body of 10,000 Kalmucs, after having revolted in the vicinity of Stauropol, and maſſacred brigadier Veguézac, who commanded them, formed a junction with the troops of Pugatſcheff. But what contributed, perhaps, to render his army more formidable, was a great number of thoſe Polanders whom Catharine had exiled to the deſerts of Siberia. Elated by ſo many advantages, Pugatſcheff over-ran and laid waſte the mountains of the government of Orenburgh. The ſmall city of Ouſa was the only one which had the courage to reſiſt him. He committed the ſiege of it to one of the chiefs of his army, and marched ſtraight to Ekatherinenburgh, where he knew there were depoſited near a million of roubles, in copper money newly coined. This city owed its ſafety to an accident. At the moment when Pugatſcheff was hanging over it, he received falſe information that a Ruſſian army, ſuperior to his own, was advancing by another route. He gave credit to it. Having ſlackened his march to give time to his forces to join him, he afforded an opportunity to the regiments diſperſed over the frontiers of Siberia of aſſembling for the defence of Ekatherinenburgh.

When he firſt had recouſe to arms, Pugatſcheff, faithful to the leſſons of the hermits of Podolia, and of the prieſts roſkolniky, affected great piety and moderation: he wore the habit of a biſhop, gave his benediction to the people, aſſuring them he wiſhed nothing for himſelf, and that his ſole ambition was to ſeat the Grand-duke his ſon on the throne, and then to retire and finiſh his days among the pious recluſes who had given him an aſylum, on his eſcape from the perſons employed to murder him. This conduct procured him ſoldiers. Other means made victory ſure. Uniting then courage to activity, he loſt no opportunity of diffuſing far and wide the terror of his arms. He dextrouſly availed himſelf of the advantage which his knowledge of the country and the imprudence or ignorance

ignorance of the Ruſſians furniſhed him. He quitted the plundering of a canton only to fly to a ſiege; and no ſooner had he reduced a city than he haſtened to fight a battle. But this man, who triumphed ſo rapidly over the ſeverities of fortune, wanted wiſdom to improve her favours. Succeſs inflamed his pride; he imagined that no obſtacle could poſſibly preſent itſelf but what he might eaſily ſurmount. He threw off all reſtraint, gave the reins to his ſanguinary temper and his brutal paſſions; he ſuffered the enthuſiaſm of his partiſans to cool, gave his enemies time to prepare themſelves to ſubdue him, and fooliſhly ſtopped ſhort in the midſt of his career.

The ſpirit of rebellion had ſpread as far as Moſcow. Mareſchal Romanzoff durſt not weaken his own force by ſending ſuccours thither. That city was defended by a garriſon of no more than 600 men. Pugatſcheff had only to make his appearance in order to become maſter of it. This he neglected to do; and, by that overſight, loſt not only the firſt city of the empire, but an army of 100,000 ſerfs who there expected him, and who would have broken aſunder their chains on his approach.

Pugatſcheff did not even avail himſelf of his advantages in the provinces where he had conquered. He waſted the greateſt part of winter in the uſeleſs ſieges of Orenburgh and Yaïtſk. It was under the walls of Orenburgh that he put to the ſabre all the officers and men of family who were brought in. He put to death about 3000 of this deſcription: he did not ſpare even their wives and children; whole families were exterminated. He intended to ſhed, he ſaid, to the very laſt drop, the blood of that Ruſſian nobility ſo haughty and ſo tyrannical. But, with a contradiction altogether unaccountable, while he was endeavouring to extirpate nobility, he conferred on ſuch of his partiſans as he could moſt ſecurely truſt, the names of the principal families of the empire, and

and the insignia of the different orders of knighthood.

He alienated the affections of one part of his compatriots by flying in the face of their religious prejudices, of which at first he approved himself the zealous supporter. Though he had married, several years before, Sophia, the daughter of a kosac, and had three children by her, he was not ashamed to espouse a common strumpet, at Yaïtsk, and celebrated his nuptials with bacchanalian orgies, worthy of the partner he had selected.

Catharine, alarmed at a revolt which shook her throne, took measures for checking its farther progress. She recalled General Bibikoff from the frontiers of Turkey, gave him the command of a considerable army, and orders to march against the rebels. At the same time she published at Petersburgh, and in the other principal cities of the empire, the following manifesto.

"We, Catharine II. by the grace of God, Empress and Sovereign Lady of all the Russias, &c. make known to all our faithful subjects, that we have learnt with the highest indignation and extreme concern, that a certain kosac, a deserter and a vagabond of the Don, by name Yemelian Pugatscheff, after having wandered over Poland, has some time ago assembled, in the districts of the government of Orenburgh which border on the river Irghis, a troop of vagabonds like himself; that he is there committing the most dreadful outrages of every kind, by depriving, in the most inhuman manner, the quiet inhabitants of their possessions, and even of life; and that, in order to decoy into his party, hitherto composed of banditti only, the persons who fall in his way, and especially the unfortunate patriots, whose credulity he imposes upon, he has had the audacity to assume the name of the late Emperor Peter III. It would be superfluous

" fluous in this place to expoſe the abſurdity of ſuch " an impoſture, which cannot clothe itſelf with ſo " much as the ſhadow of probability in the eyes of " ſenſible people; for, thanks to the divine good- " neſs, thoſe ages are paſſed away when the Ruſſian " empire was plunged in ignorance and barbariſm, " when the Griſchkas, the Otrepiefs, their adherents, " and ſeveral other traitors to their country, availed " themſelves of impoſtures equally groſs and deteſ- " table, to arm brother againſt brother, citizen againſt " citizen.

" Since theſe eras, which it is painful to call to " remembrance, all true patriots have enjoyed the " fruits of public tranquillity, and tremble at the re- " collection merely of ancient troubles. In a word, " there is no man worthy of bearing the Ruſſian " name, who does not regard with abhorrence the " impudent falſehood by which Pugatſcheff imagines " he is able to deceive and betray ſimple and credu- " lous people, by promiſing to enfranchiſe them from " every bond of ſubmiſſion and obedience to their " ſovereign, as if the Creator of the univerſe had con- " ſtituted human ſocieties in ſuch a manner as poſ- " ſibly to ſubſiſt without an intermediate authority " between ſovereign and ſubjects.

" At the ſame time, as the audacity of this vile re- " fuſe of the human race is productive of conſequen- " ces pernicious to the provinces adjacent to that diſ- " trict; as the report of the atrocities there commit- " ted may terrify perſons, accuſtomed to apprehend " the calamities of others as ready to burſt upon " themſelves; and as we watch, with indefatigable " care, over the tranquillity of our faithful ſubjects, " we inform them by this preſent manifeſto, that we " have taken, without delay, the meaſures we deem- " ed the moſt proper for quelling the ſedition; and " that, in order totally to annihilate the ambitious " deſigns of Pugatſcheff, and to exterminate a band " of robbers, who have had the raſhneſs to attack the

" ſmall

" ſmall military detachments ſcattered over thoſe
" countries, and to maſſacre the officers whom they
" had taken priſoners, we have ſent thither, with a
" ſufficient number of troops, General Alexander Bi-
" bikoff, commander in chief of our armies, and ma-
" jor of our regiment of life-guards.

" Thus we entertain no doubt of the proſperous
" iſſue of theſe meaſures, and we flatter ourſelves
" that the public tranquillity will be ſpeedily reſtored,
" and that the wretches who are deſolating a part of
" the government of Orenburgh will quickly be diſ-
" perſed. We are, furthermore, perſuaded that our
" faithful ſubjects will hold in deteſtation the impoſ-
" ture of the rebel Pugatſcheff, as deſtitute of all
" probability, and will repel the artifices of thoſe
" ill-intentioned perſons, who ſeek and find their pri-
" vate advantage in the ſeduction of the weak and
" credulous, and who have no other way of ſatiating
" their avidity, but by ravaging their country and
" ſpilling innocent blood.

" We are equally perſuaded that every genuine
" ſon of his country will be zealous in fulfilling his
" own duties, in contributing to the maintenance of
" good order and of the general repoſe, in guarding
" himſelf againſt the ſnares of ſeduction, and in ac-
" quitting himſelf of the obedience due to his lawful
" ſovereign. Thus all our faithful ſubjects may ceaſe
" from every alarm, and live in perfect ſecurity, as we
" employ our whole attention, and make our whole
" glory to conſiſt in it, toward the preſervation of
" their property and the extenſion of the common
" felicity."

Three additional oukaſes cloſely followed that which announced the march of Bibikoff. In one, the people were cautioned thenceforward to reſpect no laws but ſuch as were authenticated under the ſignature of the Empreſs herſelf. In another, an invitation was given to deſerters, and particularly to the koſacs of the Don and of the Yaïk, to rejoin the ſtandard

dard of the Empreſs, with an aſſurance of indemnity up to the firſt of April of the following year. Finally, by the third, Pugatſcheff was proſcribed, and a reward of 100,000 roubles promiſed for his head.

Pugatſcheff, on his part, was not more ſparing of manifeſtoes; and, in publiſhing them, always took care to appropriate to himſelf the name of Peter III. By one of thoſe proclamations he liberated all the peaſants. He likewiſe ordered a coinage of roubles, with his own effigies and this inſcription on the one ſide:—"*Peter III. Emperor of all the Ruſſias.*"—And on the reverſe were theſe words:—"*Redivivus et* "*Ultor.*"

Meanwhile General Bibikoff had already reached Kaſan. Being informed that the rebels had gotten poſſeſſion of Samara, he detached a part of his army to retake that place. The ſiege was of no long duration. The rebels abandoned the city with eight pieces of cannon and 200 priſoners.

The nobles of Kaſan were convoked. Bibikoff invited them to join him, and aſſiſt in cruſhing the rebellion. The nobles were prediſpoſed to do ſo. Their own cauſe was at ſtake. Their example was followed by thoſe of Simbirſk, of Penza, and of ſome other diſtricts; and the regiments which they formed without loſs of time, conſiderably increaſed Bibikoff's force. On this the Empreſs wrote to the general, in the following terms:—"That ſhe not only obſerved "with gratitude the zeal which the nobleſs had ſo "generouſly diſplayed, in offering to ſacrifice every "thing for the public good, but in order to give, "on this occaſion, a diſtinguiſhed mark of her good "will, ſhe wiſhed herſelf to become a member of the "nobleſs of Kaſan, and to be enrolled as a denizen "of that city."

Lieutenant-colonel Grineff obtained the firſt advantage at Alexieff. After an obſtinate reſiſtance, the rebels left him maſter of the field of battle and of three pieces of braſs ordnance. A few days after

they ſuddenly attacked him on his march, but were a ſecond time put to flight. Some others of Bibikoff's lieutenants were likewiſe ſucceſsful in their encounters with different bodies of Tartars. Notwithſtanding this the numbers and the audacity of the rebels daily increaſed. They flocked together from every quarter of Oriental Ruſſia, and ravaged an extent of country of more than 600 leagues.

General Bibikoff, advancing at the head of 35,000 men, obliged Pugatſcheff to raiſe the ſiege of Orenburgh, where famine had begun to make fearful ravages. The rebels retreated to the vicinity of Tatiſchewa. Bibikoff diſpatched Major-general Prince Gallitzin, with a conſiderable body of troops, in purſuit of them. Prince Gallitzin attacked Pugatſcheff and fought him gallantly; but did not obtain, this firſt time, a decided advantage. He perceived that the ferocious intrepidity of the rebels was directed by officers who had not derived all their military ſkill from the deſerts of the Baſchkirie, or learnt it under the tents of the Kalmucs. On retreating before Prince Gallitzin, Pugatſcheff ſuddenly changed his route, and fell impetuouſly on Bibikoff, who had reſerved about his perſon only a ſmall part of the army. The conflict was bloody. It was rumoured that the Ruſſian general fell on the field of battle; but he died in his bed very ſoon afterwards.

Prince Gallitzin burnt with impatience to avenge the defeat of Bibikoff. He attacked the rebels afreſh near Kargaula, twelve miles from Orenburgh, put a great number of them to the ſword, and diſperſed the reſt. On that day Pugatſcheff fought for ſix hours together; but, beholding himſelf abandoned on all ſides, betook himſelf to flight, and with difficulty eſcaped to the mountains of Oural. His partiſans haſtened to join him there. He re-appeared at the head of a formidable army. He made himſelf maſter of ſeveral places to the eaſtward of the mountains, and reduced to aſhes ſuch as made the ſlighteſt reſiſtance.

ſiſtance. A body of Ruſſians attacked him, and forced him again to ſeek refuge in the moſt inacceſſible heights. There he perceived that the only reſource left him, was an attempt to retrieve his fortune by ſome brilliant exploit. All at once he deſcends like a torrent from the ſummits of the Oural, and marches with rapidity toward Kaſan, leaving every ſtep of his route marked with fearful traces of his cruelty. No ſooner had he appeared before Kaſan than he ſet fire to the ſuburbs. Major-general Paul Potemkin, governor of the province, might have kept the field againſt Pugatſcheff, and prevented the burning of Kaſan: he choſe rather to ſhut himſelf up in the fortreſs, where the rebels beſieged him, and he would undoubtedly have been taken, had not Colonel Mikelſon come up to his relief. Pugatſcheff durſt not wait the arrival of Mikelſon; he precipitately raiſed the ſiege and took to flight. But Mikelſon purſued him cloſe, overtook him, haraſſed him three days ſucceſſively, and at laſt gave him a complete defeat after a long and bloody conflict. Pugatſcheff continued to defend himſelf till he was left with not more than 300 koſacs. Attended by this troop, whoſe valour and fidelity ſupported the hopes of the impoſtor, he galloped off, croſſed the Volga, and regained the deſert.

This freſh defeat might have intimidated all who entertained a deſign of joining the rebels. Nevertheleſs Pugatſcheff found himſelf ſtill reſorted to by ſwarms of koſacs of kalmucs, of baſchkirs and of peaſants, whom the very name of liberty, and the deſire of ſhaking off the yoke of oppreſſive maſters, had induced to abandon their labours and reſort to arms. Elated by the number of his troops, which ſeemed to multiply in proportion as they were mowed down by the Ruſſian artillery, he reſolved to go and attack Moſcow. His partiſans continued ſecretly to blow the flame of ſedition in that city. The people expected him as a deliverer: but it was now too late.

At the moment Pugatſcheff was putting himſelf in motion, he received intelligence that the Ruſſians had juſt concluded a treaty of peace with the Ottomans. Apprehending on this that he would have to contend with the greateſt part of the army of Mareſchal Romanzoff, he thought it expedient to bend his courſe in a different direction.

Informed that ſome Ruſſian regiments were encamped on the banks of the Volga, he deſcended along the ſide of that river, ſurprized the regiments, and routed them. He took by aſſault two or three petty fortreſſes. That of Saratoff was of the number. The commandant, who knew the fate which awaited him, took advantage of the moment when the conqueror gave himſelf up to pillage, and made his eſcape, accompanied by only fifty men. The city of Demitreffsk fell into the hands of Pugatſcheff by treachery. He had the barbarity to order the governor to be empaled.

While at Demitreffsk, he was told that the aſtronomer Lowitz, member of the academy of ſciences at Peterſburgh, was buſy in the vicinity, in taking levels for a canal propoſed between the Don and the Volga. He immediately gave orders for his attendance; and when the peaceable ſon of ſcience was introduced into his preſence, commanded him to be elevated on halbards, to raiſe him, he ſaid, nearer to the ſtars, and had him maſſacred by his koſacs. But ſo many atrocities muſt neceſſarily have come to a period. The moſt abominable exceſſes of Pugatſcheff were the beſt ſecurity to the Empreſs.

That Princeſs, delivered fro n the anxieties to which the Turkiſh war had long ſubjected her, gave orders to diſpatch additional troops to oppoſe the rebels, and gave the command of them to General Panin. This officer had acquired reputation by the capture of Bender. But, from the inſtant that Orloff had recovered his credit, the hatred which the favourite indulged againſt the prime miniſter extend-

ed

ed to his brother, and the Empreſs conſented for ſome time to leave one of her beſt generals in a ſtate of inaction. The occaſion ſhe had for his ſervices, or rather the reviving credit of his brother, called him again into employment. In ſhort, he marched againſt Pugatſcheff. The arch-rebel was then preſſing hard on the city of Tzaritzin, and doomed it, beyond a doubt, to the fate of Saratoff: but he was obliged to raiſe the ſiege with precipitation. Panin ſent a freſh detachment to Colonel Mikelſon. With this reinforcement Mikelſon cut off the convoys of Pugatſcheff, ſtarved his army, and attacked him at the moment when, with ſeveral waggons under a load of baggage, and encumbered with a multitude of women who accompanied his march, he found himſelf entangled in a defile of the mountains. Notwithſtanding the diſadvantage of their poſition, the rebels ſcorned to ſurrender. A great number of them were killed on the ſpot: many others periſhed on the precipices, and among the ſteep rocks to which they fled for ſafety.

Pugatſcheff quitted not the field of battle till no means of defence remained. He once more ſwum acroſs the Volga; then paſſed the vaſt deſert extending from that river to the ſmaller ſtream of Uſem, and found himſelf nearly in the ſame place where he at firſt diſplayed the ſtandard of revolt. Many friends had rejoined him in his flight; but famine, fatigue and dejection, determined numbers of them to give him up. He might ſtill, however, have long continued to diſturb the repoſe of the empire, had not treachery come to the aſſiſtance of the Ruſſian armies.

Antizoff, the confidential aſſociate of Pugatſcheff, and one of the moſt diſtinguiſhed chiefs among the koſacs, had been taken priſoner. He was deemed a proper perſon to be employed in reclaiming his nation. Preſents and promiſes were laviſhed on him; and he was authoriſed to aſſure his compatriots, that

the practice of beſtowing on them gratuities for guarding the frontiers ſhould be reſtored. The expenſe incurred by the Turkiſh war had occaſioned a ſuſpenſion of the payment of thoſe gratuities, and this was one of the motives which incited the koſacs to rebellion.

While Antizoff was negotiating this accommodation, three other koſacs, likewiſe gained over, undertook to deliver up Pugatſcheff. All the three had hitherto ſerved him with fidelity, and poſſeſſed his confidence. One of them, named Twogoroff, was of Iletz; the other two, whoſe names were Tſchoumakoff and Fidouleff, had been the firſt partiſans in the revolt at Yaïtſk. Happening one day to be alone with Pugatſcheff, they thought of practiſing upon him by trick. "As we are beſet on all ſides by "our enemies," ſaid Twogoroff, "I believe the beſt "courſe we can take is to ſurrender, on condition "of obtaining a pardon." The idea of ſurrender filled Pugatſcheff with indignation. He did not anſwer a ſingle word; but drew his dagger, and was going inſtantly to inflict the puniſhment of death on the man who dared to ſuggeſt a timid advice. The three koſacs watched all his motions. They fell at once upon him, diſarmed him, and having bound his hands behind his back, conveyed him, without loſs of time, to the camp of Major-general Samaroff, who was expecting them a little way off. Samaroff ſent Pugatſcheff to Simbirſk. General Panin had him put up in an iron cage, and tranſported to Moſcow, together with ſome other of his principal accomplices.

As ſoon as the Empreſs received information that Pugatſcheff was in priſon at Moſcow, ſhe named a commiſſion, which was joined to the ſenate, to conduct the trial of the rebel. At the ſame time ſhe carefully recommended to them to reſt ſatisfied with a ſimple confeſſion of his crime, without putting him to the torture, and without inſiſting that he ſhould diſcover his

his abettors. She was apprehenſive, no doubt, that the diſcoveries of the criminal might oblige her to extend puniſhment too far, and plunge the empire into freſh commotions. Pugatſcheff was ſentenced to have both his hands and both his feet cut off; that they ſhould be exhibited to the people, and that afterwards he ſhould be quartered alive. But he did not undergo that barbarous puniſhment. It is alleged by ſome that an order from the ſovereign ſaved him from the ſeverer parts of his ſentence; by others, that the executioner was leſs inhuman than the judges. Be it as it may, Pugatſcheff was firſt beheaded, after which his body was divided into quarters, and expoſed in different parts of the city. Five of the ringleaders of the rebellion were likewiſe decapitated. Others received the knout and were ſent to Siberia. Such was the termination of a revolt which for a conſiderable time threatened Catharine's throne and life, and coſt the empire the deſtruction of a great number of cities, and of more than 250 villages; the interruption of working the mines of Orenburgh and of the commerce of Siberia, and the blood of many thouſands of the inhabitants. Pugatſcheff aſſuredly never could have retained the crown of Ruſſia, but the malecontents wiſhed to ſee it plucked from the head of the poſſeſſor, without knowing perhaps on whom they meant to beſtow it.

Soon after Pugatſcheff was brought to puniſhment, the Empreſs had a new opportunity of diſplaying the clemency of her character. She extended mercy to men who were not, in truth, chargeable with the enormities of that robber, but were nevertheleſs highly criminal; I mean the treaſurers of the empire. They had applied the public money to their own private uſes, and thereby incurred the puniſhment of death: Catharine would not ſuffer them to be ſo much as brought to trial. Naturally iraſcible and violent, ſhe affected great patience and gentleneſs.—"What I

"am not able to overthrow," ſaid ſhe, "I undermine "and eradicate."

The poſt of favourite had been reſtored to Gregory Orloff merely from policy. Policy may aſſume the ſemblance of love, but does not command it. Catharine affected for her ancient lover a paſſion ſhe no longer felt. She was laviſh of her careſſes, but could not again open her heart to him. Orloff deceived himſelf, then, in ſuppoſing he was the ſole cauſe of Waſſiltſchikoff's diſmiſſion. This ſacrifice had been made to another and not to him.

A conſiderable period had elapſed ſince the Empreſs remarked the manly beauty and graceful demeanor of Potemkin. She recollected, with complacency, that on the day of the revolution of 1762, Potemkin, then a very young man, ſeized the inſtant of her mounting on horſeback to preſent his ſword-knot to her. She wiſhed at length to know him more intimately; and the firſt interview ſhe had with him ſecured to this new lover the advantage over all his rivals. Waſſiltſchikoff was diſmiſſed. Orloff was reſumed, and gave diſguſt. Potemkin alone adminiſtered conſolation in ſecret for the ſolicitude occaſioned by the war, the terrors which the rebellion inſpired, and the miſunderſtanding which prevailed between the ancient favourite and the prime miniſter Panin. Potemkin was preſumptuous. His good fortune inebriated him. His pride ſoon met with its puniſhment.

One day that he was playing at billiards with Alexis Orloff, he had the aſſurance to boaſt of the favour he enjoyed, and aſſerted that it depended entirely on himſelf to procure the baniſhment from court of all who fell under his diſpleaſure. Alexis Orloff retorted in a haughty ſtyle: a ſcuffle enſued. Potemkin received a blow which ſtruck out one of his eyes. This was not the full extent of his misfortune. Gregory Orloff, informed of the whole affair by



GREGORY ALEXANDROWITZ POTEMKI

at the Age of 38 Years.

Published Feb.y 12.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

by his brother, flew to the Empreſs, and inſiſted on Potemkin's diſmiſſion.

Potemkin retired to Smolenſko, the place of his birth, where he remained almoſt a year, in ſolitude, ſuffering ſeverely from his eye, and under the languor of baniſhment from court. He ſometimes gave out that it was his intention to turn monk; at other times he predicted that he ſhould become the moſt powerful man in Ruſſia. At length, he ſuddenly thought of writing to the Empreſs, beſeeching her to think of him. The Empreſs inſtantly diſpatches his recal, and completely reſtores him to favour. Orloff had been out upon a hunting match for ſeveral days. Advantage was taken of his abſence to inſtal Potemkin in the palace; and when the ancient favourite returned, neither complaints nor reproaches could ſhake the credit of the new one.

It may be neceſſary in this place to unfold what were the duties and the diſtinctions of Catharine's favourites. When that Princeſs had made choice of a new favourite, ſhe conferred on him the rank of aid-de-camp, that he might accompany her wherever ſhe went without furniſhing any occaſion for cenſure. From that time forward the favourite occupied apartments in the palace under thoſe of the Empreſs, and which had a communication with them by a private ſtaircaſe. The firſt day of his inſtallation he received a preſent of 100,000 roubles, and every month found 12,000 on his toilet. The purveyor of the court had orders to keep up for him a table of 24 covers, and to defray the whole expenſe of his houſehold. The favourite was obliged to attend the Empreſs on all her excurſions. He could not leave the palace without aſking and obtaining permiſſion. He rarely durſt venture to chat with other women; for if he meant to keep his place, it was incumbent on him to take care how he awakened the ſovereign's jealouſy.

As often as the Empreſs fixed her eyes on a ſubject in the view of raiſing him to the poſt of favourite, ſhe contrived

contrived to have him invited to dinner by ſome one of her confidants, to whom ſhe paid a viſit as if by accident. There ſhe converſed with the ſtranger, and endeavoured to find out whether he was worthy of the favour to which ſhe deſtined him. When her judgment proved favourable, a look conveyed the knowledge of it to the confidant, who, in her turn, communicated the intelligence to him who had the honour to pleaſe. Next day he received a viſit from the court-phyſician, who came to examine into the ſtate of his health; and the ſame evening accompanied the Empreſs to the hermitage, and took poſſeſſion of the apartment prepared for him. It was when the choice fell upon Potemkin that theſe formalities were firſt ſettled; ſince then they have been conſtantly obſerved.

When a favourite ceaſed to pleaſe, there was likewiſe a particular mode of ouſting him. He received orders to travel. From that moment he ſaw the Empreſs no more. But he was ſure of finding, at the place to which he repaired, rewards worthy of Catharine's pride.

A. D. 1775. The peace concluded with the Turks, and the capture of the rebel Pugatſcheff allowed Catharine time to abandon herſelf to all the indulgence of the paſſion which her new lover inſpired. He had acquired an almoſt abſolute empire over her. He knew it: he abuſed it. He extorted from her favours innumerable; and when, from ſome remaining ſenſe of decency, ſhe refuſed him any thing, he made his point good by dint of peeviſhneſs, and even of anger. By means ſo extravagant he forced his way into the council, and made good his nomination as vice-preſident of the war department. Count Zakar Tcherniſcheff was at the head of that board. Potemkin, who could not endure a ſuperior, reſolved to ruin him in the eſtimation of the Empreſs, and he ſucceeded. Zakar Tcherniſcheff gave in his reſignation; and though the favourite was totally deſtitute

of

of the qualifications which the important charge of the war adminiſtration demands, he did not heſitate to aſſume it. Preſumption ſo exceſſive created him many enemies. He was reproached with undertaking a multiplicity of buſineſs, without bringing any thing to a concluſion; with promiſing advancement to every pretender, but without doing a kindneſs to any perſon whatever, and with effectual exertions only in extending his own enormous influence.

The Empreſs had the addreſs to reconcile Potemkin to the Orloffs, and employed every effort to maintain the peace among them. Though ſhe felt no remainder of tenderneſs, and perhaps no reſidue of gratitude, for Gregory Orloff, ſhe ſtill kept on decent terms with him. As to him, ever jealous, not of the pleaſures, but of the honours which Potemkin enjoyed, he begged leave to retire; but the Empreſs would not conſent to it. She choſe rather to endure the ſcandalous ſcenes to which he expoſed her by remaining at court, than ſee him carry off to a remote ſituation, a reſentment which could not be dangerous, but which circumſtances rendered an object of apprehenſion to her. Beſides, ſhe had a farther motive to induce her to retain him: ſhe hoped that his preſence would, to a certain degree, operate as a check on the audacity of his rival. After having long oppoſed Panin to Orloff, ſhe endeavoured to oppoſe Orloff to Potemkin.

Vexed at being refuſed permiſſion to withdraw from court, a permiſſion formerly granted much againſt his will, Orloff had a long explanation with the Empreſs. He recapitulated all the obligations ſhe was under to him; he made a boaſt of his zeal, of his fidelity; he had the aſſurance to ſay that ſhe could reproach him with nothing but not being quite ſo young as his rival. Catharine heard him with great compoſure; and without pretending to deny her offences as a lover, aſſured him the Empreſs was always his friend. Employing with him that art of perſuaſion

of

of which ſhe was ſuch a complete miſtreſs, ſhe prevailed with him to remain.

Orloff, nevertheleſs, ſoon found a freſh mortification to ſwallow. Scarcely had Pugatſcheff been executed, when the Empreſs conceived a deſign of going to Moſcow. She wiſhed, at once, to enjoy the triumph ſhe had obtained over a rebel ſubject, and to put the laſt hand toward extinguiſhing the hope which might lie half-ſmothered in the breaſt of the malecontents. Orloff endeavoured to divert her from this intention: Potemkin urged her to fulfil it. This laſt advice was more conformable to the inclinations of Catharine. Potemkin eaſily carried his point. She took her departure.

This Princeſs was not ignorant that on her route to Moſcow ſhe had to paſs through provinces in which the papas enjoyed very high credit, and held the people under a yoke of the moſt grovelling ſuperſtition. She held in contempt a puerile bigotry, and abhorred the dangerous miniſters of it. But ſhe recollected that ſhe had employed it ſucceſsfully when her object was to hurl her conſort from the throne, and found herſelf obliged ſtill to employ them, in order to bring back the alienated hearts, and attract the veneration, of the deluded multitude. She carried with her, therefore, a great number of ſmall images of the ſaints, which ſhe depoſited in all the churches and chapels on the road. She farther deſtined, for the cathedral of Moſcow, a large image of the Virgin, very richly habited and adorned with diamonds, and had it placed in a carriage which, through the whole journey, and on her making her public entry into Moſcow, went in proceſſion after her own. Six hundred men of each of the regiments of guards had preceded her arrival in that city, and appeared under arms to receive her. Two triumphal arches had been reared, and a ſumptuous banquet provided. Her retinue was brilliant, the croud of ſpectators immenſe; order and magnificence were every

every where displayed. Nothing was wanting but the acclamations of joy. The people, more astonished than kindly affected, exhibited not the slightest sign of satisfaction. The Empress had given orders to announce a diminution of taxes: but all hearts seemed to be as little affected by her benefits as by her ostentation.

The Grand-duke met with a very different reception. Wherever he went the homage with-held from his mother was lavished on him. It is alleged that a courtier, struck at observing this contrast, and desirous of sounding the dispositions of the heir of the throne, said to him, "You see, Prince, how much "you are beloved. Ah! if you had a mind!"—— The Grand-duke made no reply, but darted a severe look at the courtier, which proved that, though the throne which of right appertained to him was kept too long out of his possession, he nevertheless knew how to act the part of a respectful son.

Some days after the Empress arrived at Moscow, she undertook a pilgrimage to the convent of the Trinity, situated at the distance of 40 verstes from the city, and celebrated for having served as an asylum to Peter I. when he wanted to shake off the guardianship of the regent Sophia. Catharine performed this journey on foot, attended by all her court. Count Panin was the only one she did not invite to act a part in this hypocritical farce. He said accordingly, to avenge himself of this species of discourtesy, "The "Empress did not wish me to partake of her pil- "grimage, because she thought me neither devotee "enough nor courtier enough." But perhaps Catharine only found in him too much indolence and obesity to admit of his journeying 40 verstes on foot. Panin not only neglected to pay the attentions of a courtier, but daily forgot more and more his functions as a minister. Ease and pleasure had become his sole employment. He read but seldom the dispatches of the ambassadors, and still more rarely did he

he deign to anſwer them. This conduct furniſhed arms to his enemies. It was particularly favourable to the ambitious views of Potemkin, who ardently wiſhed to turn out Panin. On ſucceeding to the influence which Orloff had enjoyed, Potemkin dared to form the ſame projects which his predeceſſor had done. He thought that he might pretend to the hand of the ſovereign: but he dreaded Panin's frankneſs, his perſuaſive eloquence, nay his ſkill in the arts of intrigue, which, in ſpite of his indolence, that miniſter could ſtill put in practice.

How many a ſtrange metamorphoſis has ambition produced! The loftieſt man in all Ruſſia, he who ſeemed the leaſt calculated to ſubmit to reſtraint, and who, having not ſo much as the ſhadow of religion, turned all into ridicule, Potemkin all at once aſſumed the exterior of the moſt auſtere piety. From the commencement of Lent he was obſerved to renounce good cheer, of which he was extremely fond. He went ſo far as to reſtrict himſelf to roots for food, and drank nothing but water. He went to confeſſion almoſt every day, and wearied heaven with long prayers. He had taken care to make choice of the ſame ghoſtly director with the Empreſs. He informed him of the commerce in which he lived with her, and intreated him to declare to that Princeſs, that his alarmed conſcience would no longer ſuffer him to gratify a love not ſanctioned by wedlock. Whether the monk had been gained or not, he faithfully executed his commiſſion. Catharine did not condeſcend to explain herſelf to him. It was eaſy for her to gueſs what had ſuggeſted Potemkin's ſcruples; ſhe ſent for that hypocritical lover, and ſpoke to him in a tender, but at the ſame time in a lofty ſtyle. She told him, that though he was dear to her, ſhe was ſufficiently miſtreſs of herſelf to conquer her paſſion, and that if he no longer wiſhed to occupy the poſt of favourite, ſhe could have the reſolution to give him a ſucceſſor.

Potemkin

Potemkin humbled, confounded, was incapable of concealing his chagrin in ſuch a manner as to prevent its being remarked by the courtiers. He was even heard to ſay that he intended to take orders, and have himſelf conſecrated an archbiſhop. But the Empreſs returned to Peterſburgh. Potemkin followed her, and ſoon laid aſide a falſe devotion, to addict himſelf entirely to the purſuits of ambition and pleaſure.

Court intrigues have for ſome time diverted our attention from objects of ſuperior importance. It muſt not, however, paſs unobſerved, that Catharine's pleaſures never encroached on her application to the buſineſs and government of her empire. At an early period of her reſidence in Moſcow, Mareſchal Romanzoff arrived in that city, and was welcomed by the Empreſs with a glow of benevolence which the moſt illuſtrious ſupporter of her throne well deſerved. It was at firſt her intention that he ſhould enter Moſcow the ſame day with herſelf, and that, advancing on horſeback between the triumphal arches reared on the occaſion, he ſhould meet her without diſmounting. But the valiant and modeſt conqueror of the Ottomans thought it his duty to decline thoſe honours. He was ſenſible, that by accepting all that gratitude deviſed in his behalf, there might be danger of wounding imperial pride. His glory had already excited but too much envy in the breaſt of the courtiers, eſpecially in that of Potemkin. What would it have been had he participated the honours which the ſovereign had prepared for herſelf? He appeared before her, therefore, not as a triumphant commander, but as a plain ſoldier coming to give an account of his actions.

Next day the Empreſs, attended by the Grand-duke, the principal officers of the empire, and the whole court, repaired on foot from the ancient palace of the Czars to the cathedral of Moſcow, to aſſiſt at a ſolemn maſs, and to join in the *Te Deum* chanted in celebration

celebration of the peace. This ceremony being ended, the private treaſurer of the Empreſs read aloud a liſt of the rewards which ſhe granted the generals who had diſtinguiſhed themſelves in the war againſt the Turks.

Field-mareſchal Romanzoff received an eſtate in land with 5000 peaſants; 100,000 roubles in ready money; a very handſome ſervice of plate; a hat, decorated with a ſprig of laurel and ſet with precious ſtones, to the value of 30,000 roubles; the ribbon of the order of St. George and an epaulet in diamonds, with a moſt magnificent field-mareſchal's batoon.

Alexis Orloff got 60,000 roubles, and a ſword enriched with very ſuperb diamonds.

Generals Paul Potemkin, Panin, Dolgorouky, Soltikoff, Tcherniſcheff, and ſeveral others, likewiſe received marks of Catharine's munificence.

Moſt of thoſe generals, nevertheleſs, were no leſs jealous of the recompenſe beſtowed on Mareſchal Romanzoff, than diſcontented with their own. Alexis Orloff, General Panin and Prince Dolgorouky, were unable to ſuppreſs their diſſatisfaction, and reſigned their offices. Catharine accepted their demiſſion. In the evening ſhe ſaid in the hearing of her court: "I have diſpatched a courier to day; I leave you to "gueſs whither." No one could form a conjecture: but next day the enigma was explained. The Empreſs had ſent to a village near Moſcow for ſome dozens of thoſe little ſpinning tops which boys whip about for their diverſion, and ordered them to be carried to the three generals who had juſt obtained leave to retire, with a meſſage from her, importing, "That as "henceforth they were likely to have much leiſure "time on their hands, ſhe had ſent ſomewhat to "amuſe them." What a diſplay of Catharine's haughtineſs was this cruel ſarcaſm, addreſſed to men who conſidered themſelves as the props of her throne!

The generals of this Princeſs were not the only perſons toward whom ſhe ſignalized her munificence.

The

The abolition of ſundry taxes was a benefit in which the inhabitants of the whole empire participated. She had been for years employed in framing regulations for the interior adminiſtration of her ſtates. She had them printed at Moſcow; but ordered them to be at firſt obſerved only in the governments of Smolenſko and of Twer, becauſe the people of thoſe two provinces appeared to her the moſt intelligent, the moſt docile, and the beſt adapted to bring to a happy iſſue an experiment of new legiſlation.

Before promulging theſe regulations, the Empreſs repaired to the ſenate in great ſtate, and had them read and regiſtered in her preſence. She had already ordered to enrol there an oukaſe that well merited the gratitude of a great number of her ſubjects. The inhabitants of the extremities of the empire had been hitherto obliged to reſort to Peterſburgh or to Moſcow to have juſtice adminiſtered. Catharine wiſhed to ſpare them ſuch tedious and expenſive journeys. She declared that law-ſuits ſhould in future be determined by the provincial tribunals, reſerving however to the parties the right of appeal from the ſentence of thoſe courts to either of the ſenates, and even to the council of the Empreſs, but under this farther declaration, that if the firſt deciſion was confirmed, the party appealing ſhould pay a fine.

Another oukaſe diffuſed ſatisfaction among the inhabitants of Siberia. The revolt of Pugatſcheff had long interrupted their commerce, and the ſcarcity of money greatly relaxed its operations. By deviſing a remedy for the laſt of theſe inconveniences, the Empreſs made the firſt to be forgotten. A bank was eſtabliſhed at Tobolſk, and the direction of it committed to Gotowzoff, who had already given proof of his capacity in the management of the noble bank of Peterſburgh. The trade of Siberia thenceforward recovered its activity.

The general commerce of the empire, eſpecially,

attracted the attention of Catharine. She encouraged it with all the power ſhe poſſeſſed; for ſhe conſidered it, and juſtly, as one of the principal ſources of her greatneſs. It was therefore with extreme ſatisfaction ſhe then underſtood that ten ſhips, laden with the wines of Greece, had juſt made their way from the Archipelago into the Ruſſian ports of the Black Sea, and on the ſea of Azoph. The commandant of the Dardanelles had at firſt obſtructed their paſſage: but the vigorous remonſtrances of colonel Peterſon, the Ruſſian agent at Conſtantinople, had obliged the Divan to permit them to purſue their voyage.

In the edict which preceded the regulations above mentioned, the Empreſs, deſirous of exciting emulation, and in the view of conferring a kind of dignity on thoſe of her ſubjects who devoted themſelves to commerce, exempted them from the capitation tax, and from the obligation, to which they had hitherto been ſubjected, of drawing lots for recruiting both the land and ſea ſervice. She permitted, at the ſame time all the free peaſants to have themſelves enrolled in one of the five claſſes of merchants, on condition of paying annually to the crown one per cent of the capital employed in their trade. In the view of farther extending the commerce of Ruſſia, Catharine renewed her treaty with Great Britain. She likewiſe encouraged induſtry and agriculture. New manufactures were eſtabliſhed. Exertions were made to rebuild the villages, and to repair all the miſchief which the rebellion of Pugatſcheff had brought upon the colonies ſettled by the banks of the Volga. But unfortunately the perſons to whom the Empreſs confided the exerciſe of her power, very rarely promoted her views. Placed in authority to render her government acceptable to numerous tribes, they made it an object of deteſtation.

Some of the new colonies had been ravaged by the incurſions of the rebels, and the whole together languiſhed under the mal-adminiſtration and diſhoneſty

of

of the Ruſſian agents. The 100,000 ſettlers whom Catharine had invited into her ſtates, and who were moſtly Germans, found themſelves reduced, ten years after, to 29,000, ſcattered and diſcouraged, in the vicinity of Saratoff, Kiœff and Tſaritzin.

Eagerly intent on leaving at Moſcow more than one monument to record her munificence, the Empreſs had reſolved, from 1767, to have the Kremlin rebuilt, and had entruſted the execution of that work to the Ruſſian architect Bajanoff, the pupil of the Neapolitan Vanvitelli, and worthy of ſo renowned a maſter. The firſt foundations of it were laid, and the plan of the artiſt promiſed an edifice which ſhould be one of the moſt beautiful and moſt extenſive in the univerſe. Unfortunately, the ground on which it was to be reared, being partly covered by, and adjacent to, the Moſcowa, it was neceſſary to prop it up by immenſe counterforts. The architect intended to conſtruct them all at once: but the expenſe of the war cut off the neceſſary ſupplies of money; and he raiſed only two or three of thoſe ſupports, which ſunk toward the end of 1774. This induced Catharine to abandon her deſign. She then employed Bajanoff to build a ſmall gothic palace at Tcherno-Jark, the idea of which ſhe conceived from peruſing a work containing a repreſentation of the Gothic monuments preſerved in England. The palace of Tcherno-Jark is extremely pretty, and perhaps ſingular in its kind.

Catharine was ſtill at Moſcow, when ſhe received intelligence that certain officers had been following the example of Lieutenant-colonel Kiſchenſkoï, whoſe improper conduct has already been expoſed. Their oppreſſions compelled a horde of Baſchkirs to revolt. Thoſe Tartars not only refuſed to pay the accuſtomed tribute, but maſſacred the Ruſſian officers, and the papas who had been ſent among them. They afterwards placed, in the portative chapels of thoſe papas, images of the Dalai-Lama, preferring their ancient idolatry to a religion the votaries of which were in

their eyes merely inſatiable plunderers. The Empreſs thought it expedient to enter into a negotiation with them. Officers leſs rapacious than the former were appointed, and the whole horde quietly ſubmitted again to the authority of Ruſſia.

While Catharine was ſoothing the rebellious Tartars of the eaſtern part of her dominions, ſhe employed every effort to bring under ſubjection to her yoke thoſe of little Tartary. The conqueſts of Prince Dolgorouky had diſpoſed a great number of the inhabitants of the Krimea to favour the Ruſſians. The new Khan, Dewlet-Gherai, remained faithful to the Ottomans: part of his people refuſed to obey him. Peace was already concluded between the Turks and Ruſſians; but the Tartars were ſtill fighting. The Ruſſians ſcattered among them preſents and diſſention. They ſecretly ſtimulated them to revolt. They even ſometimes ſupported them by force of arms. All of a ſudden they appeared in the Krimea with recruited ſtrength; and under pretence of attempting to ſurprize Dewlet-Gherai, they took care to furniſh him with the means of eſcaping. Dewlet-Gherai availed himſelf of the opportunity. But ſcarcely had this Khan fled from his country, when the Ruſſians had Sahim-Gherai elected in his place, whoſe eaſineſs of temper and attachment to Ruſſia they were well acquainted with.

A. D. 1776. The Ruſſians quickly conſtructed a fortreſs between Kerch and Jeni-Kalé. The Turks, incenſed at the revolution in the Krimea, and at the uſurpation of the Ruſſians, threatened to have recourſe to arms. The imprudent and feeble Sahim-Gherai, at the inſtigation of a Ruſſian agent, who reſided in his vicinity, ſent a deputation of ſix myrzas to Peterſburgh. This homage was too flattering to the pride and ambition of Catharine not to be cordially accepted. She already perceived in thoſe myrzas new ſubjects arrived to tender her the oath of allegiance. She treated them with diſtinction; and at the

the moment they were going to be conducted to an audience, they were arrayed, by order of the Empreſs, with magnificent caftans. They requeſted her protection to their Khan, fatal protection, which that unfortunate Prince purchaſed at a rate much too dear!

Mareſchal Romanzoff had already received orders to aſſemble an army on the banks of the Boriſthenes. Every thing ſeemed to threaten a rupture between Ruſſia and the Porte. But Prince Repnin, ambaſſador extraordinary from the Empreſs at Conſtantinople, ſucceeded in cooling for ſome time the reſentment of the Divan. This was what Catharine wiſhed. She only wanted to have time to prepare for fighting with advantage. War was neceſſary to her projects of invaſion.

Inceſſantly preoccupied with her grand deſigns, Catharine appeared, ſometimes, to be entirely engroſſed in the purſuit of pleaſure. Her time was ſo ſkilfully apportioned, that ſhe contrived to have a ſufficiency for tranſacting buſineſs with her miniſters, for deviſing new plans of legiſlation, for writing with her own hand the orders diſpatched to her ambaſſadors and generals, for maintaining a regular correſpondence with men of letters and artiſts, for ſtatedly giving audience to her ſubjects, for participating in all the amuſements of her court, and for managing her amorous intrigues. Conſtant to the calls of ambition, ſhe was frequently faithleſs in love, and the arts of coquetry were as dear to her as to the reſt of womankind.

Scarcely had ſhe returned to Peterſburgh when Potemkin ceaſed to be the object of her tender affections. She loaded him with benefits: it appeared as if ſhe had not honours and dignities ſufficient to laviſh upon him. She profeſſed to love him, and him only, and her heart was already decidedly beſtowed on another. A young Ukrainian, named Zawadoffſky, was ſecretly in poſſeſſion of her favours. She began with making him her ſecretary. Almoſt im-

mediately ſhe openly avowed him to be her favourite. This change produced a ſcene very extraordinary at the court of Catharine. When ſhe had once iſſued an order, there was an apparent impoſſibility of its remaining unexecuted. She inſiſted, in every caſe, on being obeyed. Now it is well known that the diſgraced favourite always received orders to ſet out upon his travels, and that he was never more permitted to preſent himſelf to the Empreſs till ſhe vouchſafed to recal him. The lofty Orloff himſelf had ſubmitted to this regulation. Potemkin had the boldneſs to neglect it. When he received the fatal order he feigned compliance, and next day came and very calmly took his place oppoſite to the Empreſs at the moment ſhe was going to make up her party at whiſt. Without expreſſing diſpleaſure at Potemkin's preſumption and diſobedience, Catharine held out a card to him, and told him he was a very fortunate player, without ſaying a word more about his withdrawing from court. Potemkin retained his honours, his employments, his credit, and from being the lover, became the friend of the Empreſs. Zawadoffsky poſſeſſed the art of pleaſing; but Potemkin had rendered himſelf uſeful, and his genius, more analogous to the genius of Catharine than that of any other of her lovers, ceaſed not to maintain its aſcendancy.

Orloff, however, who had been informed rather too haſtily of Potemkin's diſgrace, flew to Peterſburgh. There he found his rival ſtill enjoying, not the love, but the confidence of the ſovereign. Orloff believed it poſſible for him to recover that confidence, while a lover, young and unacquainted with politics, occupied the heart of Catharine: he was ſpeedily undeceived. He made his appearance at court, kiſſed the Empreſs's hand, and obſerving Potemkin in habits of intimacy with her, inſtantly withdrew and found his way back to Moſcow.

Courtiers the moſt habituated to ſtudy the Empreſs,

preſs, could not divine which was the preferred lover. They did not believe that Potemkin would tamely ſurrender the claims which he had upon the heart of that Princeſs: they forgot that in the preſence of ambition love is mute.

Panin ſeemed to be plunged more deeply than ever into his unfeeling indolence. But the Empreſs permitted him to continue in his employments, both becauſe his long ſervices merited that recompenſe, and becauſe he ſtood connected with a very powerful party. That party earneſtly wiſhed to ſee the Grand-duke redemand a throne which of right belonged to him, and would undoubtedly have ſtrained every nerve to ſupport his pretenſions. But the longanimity of the Prince, and the reſpect he bore to his mother, repelled every ambitious idea. The Empreſs, nevertheleſs, who ſometimes forgot what her ſon had no wiſh to attempt, and dwelt on what it was poſſible for him to do, was not free from anxiety. She dreaded all thoſe whom ſhe believed capable of ſuggeſting bold counſels to that Prince, and much more ſtill thoſe who could arm in his behalf.

Theſe apprehenſions had not eſcaped the penetration of the King of Pruſſia. From the heart of Brandeburgh he diſcerned every thing that paſſed through the ſoul of Catharine, and dextrouſly took advantage of it. He knew that he himſelf was the only perſon who could effectually ſupport the rights of the Grand-duke. Accordingly, whenever he wiſhed to make the Empreſs adopt his views, he never failed to expreſs the cordial intereſt he took in her ſon. The ſuſpicions of Catharine were rouſed, and, in order to preſerve Frederick's friendſhip, no ſacrifice ſeemed too dear.

The Grand-duke had conceived a warm attachment to Count Andrew Razoumoffsky. He admitted him into all his parties, and repoſed entire confidence in him. The Empreſs, who well knew the daring ſpirit of Razoumoffsky, took the alarm at this

intimacy, and reſolved to break it off. Razoumoffsky himſelf furniſhed her with an opportunity. Catharine remarked ſome ſigns of a good underſtanding between him and the Grand-dutcheſs. She had no difficulty in believing that Razoumoffsky had the aſſurance to entertain looſe ideas on the perſon of the Princeſs, and hinted it to the Grand-duke. That Prince could not be perſuaded there was any foundation for his mother's ſuſpicions; but, without retracting his kindneſs from Razoumoffsky, reſolved within himſelf to obſerve his deportment, and recommended to his conſort to maintain the ſtricteſt reſerve. Whether it be that in truth the Grand-dutcheſs already had ſome inclination for Razoumoffsky, or whether the reſtraint impoſed on her actually inſpired that inclination, ſhe kept up a ſecret correſpondence with him. It is alleged ſhe went ſtill farther: ſhe meditated revenge againſt the woman who had inſinuated a ſuſpicion of her virtue to her huſband, and engaged in political intrigues, which could not fail to be offenſive to the Empreſs. Whether her projects had a foundation in truth or not, ſhe was not allowed time to put them in execution: ſhe died in child-bed. The loſs of her drew down on Catharine the imputation of one crime more.

As ſoon as the Grand-dutcheſs had breathed her laſt, the Empreſs put on the ſemblance of being overwhelmed with grief, and retired to Tzarſko-Zelo, taking the Grand duke with her. That Prince was penetrated with unaffected ſorrow. Nevertheleſs, after his depreſſion was ſomewhat abated, he examined the papers of his conſort, and found among them Razoumoffsky's letters. He immediately carried them to his mother, and demanded vengeance on the man who had dared to diſobey her orders. The Empreſs, afraid that this correſpondence might make too much noiſe, and not wiſhing to break with the ſon of the hetman who had formerly ſerved her ſo well, gave way however to the reſentment of the Grand-duke.

But

But inſtead of ſending Razoumoffsky to Siberia, ſhe exiled him to Venice, with the title of envoy extraordinary. Razoumoffsky had already been entruſted with embaſſies of importance. He was ſenſible that this new miſſion proceeded from diſpleaſure. He did not heſitate at the ſame time to accept it. The Empreſs afterwards appointed him her miniſter at the court of Naples. He was ſtill in that city when the Grand-duke travelled through Italy; and it was remarked, that during his reſidence at Naples, the Prince ſent a prohibition to Razoumoffsky to appear in his preſence.

A few days before the death of the Grand-dutcheſs Prince Henry of Pruſſia arrived at Peterſburgh. Frederick being informed, that while the buſineſs of the demarkation of Poland was going forward, the commiſſaries of the partitioning powers could agree neither among themſelves, nor with the Polanders, had deſired his brother to go and confer with the Empreſs, and terminate the differences which were diligently fomented between the court of Ruſſia and that of Pruſſia. Prince Henry haſtened to procure him that ſatisfaction.

The ſame honours were paid the Prince as on his firſt viſit to Ruſſia. He entered the capital at a very late hour. It was the evening before Eaſter. The Empreſs, ever diſpoſed to flatter the ſuperſtitious propenſity of the multitude, paſſed the greateſt part of the night at church with all her court. Prince Henry did not ſee her till the day after. He had frequent converſations with her in private, on the ſubject of the obſtacles which retarded the ſettlement of Poland, and found little difficulty in removing them. It was in one of thoſe converſations that the Empreſs having ſtarted ſome objections, the Prince ſuddenly made this reply:—"Madam, I perceive a cer-
"tain method to terminate every diſpute. It will
"not perhaps be acceptable to you, out of conſidera-
"tion for Poniatowſky; but you ought to approve of
"it,

"it, for it is poſſible to tender an indemnification of "much more value to that monarch, than the throne "which is inceſſantly tottering under him. The reſt "of Poland muſt be divided."

This idea was congenial to the ſoul of the ambitious Catharine, and the annihilation of Poland was determined.

Scarcely were the funeral obſequies of the Grand-dutcheſs performed, when the Empreſs bethought herſelf of providing another bride for her ſon. She told Prince Henry that ſhe had caſt her eyes on the Princeſs of Wurtemberg, his niece, and that ſhe wiſhed to ſee her united to the Grand-duke.

The Princeſs of Wurtemberg was already promiſed to the hereditary Prince of Darmſtadt. But Prince Henry, judging that the empire of Ruſſia would be a much more valuable object for her than the landgraviate of Heſſe, went to work immediately to diſſolve her prior engagements. He diſpatched a courier to the King of Pruſſia to inform him of the Empreſs's intentions, and to requeſt his co-operation. Frederick did not heſitate a moment. The union propoſed by his brother was too favourable to the project of more cloſely connecting Ruſſia and Pruſſia, to admit of any thought of difficulty as to the means of effecting it. He knew of the paſſion with which the Princeſs of Wurtemberg had inſpired the Prince of Heſſe-Darmſtadt; but, when political intereſts were to be promoted, what ſignified love in the eſtimation of Frederick? He himſelf talked to the young Prince, and ſo dextrouſly managed his aſcendant over him, that the lover was made to believe his duty and his glory were concerned in making the ſacrifice of his affections.

Sure of the acquieſcence of the Prince of Heſſe-Darmſtadt, Frederick diſpatched the neceſſary inſtructions to Prince Henry, and intimated that the family of the Princeſs of Wurtemberg could never think of oppoſing the elevation of their daughter.

He

He at the ſame time invited the Grand-duke to pay him a viſit at Berlin, as he wiſhed, before matters were brought to a concluſion, that the Prince might have an opportunity of ſeeing his intended conſort. He was himſelf very happy to lay hold of the preſent occaſion to procure a perſonal interview with Paul Petrowitz.

The Empreſs, perfectly ſatisfied with all theſe arrangements, made very conſiderable preparations for her ſon's journey to Berlin in company with Prince Henry. She aſſigned 40,000 roubles to defray the Princeſs of Wurtemberg's travelling expenſes. She ſent for Mareſchal Romanzoff to Peterſburgh, from his reſidence at his government of the Ukraine, and charged him to attend the Grand-duke to Berlin. "To the friendſhip of Prince Henry," ſaid ſhe, "and "to the zeal of the moſt illuſtrious ſupporter of my "throne only, could I have confided the perſon of "my ſon."

The Grand-duke ſet out firſt from Tzarſko-Zelo; Prince Henry took leave of the Empreſs next day. Whatever might be the real ſentiments of that Princeſs, ſhe diſcovered very powerful emotions at the moment of ſeparation. Scarcely had they joined company at Riga when they received ſeveral letters from her. The following is a copy of that which ſhe wrote with her own hand to Prince Henry.

"I take the liberty to forward to your Royal High-"neſs the four letters which I mentioned, and which "you will have the goodneſs to take under your "charge. The firſt is for the King your brother, "and the others for the Princes and Princeſſes of "Wurtemberg. Permit me to entreat, ſhould the "heart of my ſon declare in favour of the Princeſs "Sophia-Dorothea, as I have no doubt it will, that you "would deliver the laſt three according to their ad-"dreſs, and ſupport their contents with the perſuaſive "eloquence God has beſtowed on you.

"The

"The convincing and repeated proofs of friend-
"ſhip which you have given me, the high eſteem I
"have conceived of your virtues, and the extent of
"confidence with which they have inſpired me, per-
"mit me not for a moment to doubt of the ſucceſs
"of an affair which I have ſo much at heart. Could
"I have entruſted it to better hands?

"Your Royal Highneſs is aſſuredly a ſingular ne-
"gotiator: pardon my friendſhip this expreſſion.
"But I do not believe there ever exiſted an inſtance
"of a tranſaction of this nature, conducted as it has
"been, for it is the production of friendſhip and of
"confidence the moſt unreſerved.

"This Princeſs ſhall be the pledge of it. I ſhall
"never be able to look upon her without recollecting
"in what manner the buſineſs commenced, proceed-
"ed and terminated, between the royal houſe of
"Pruſſia and that of Ruſſia. May it perpetuate the
"union ſubſiſting between us!

"I conclude with thanking your Royal Highneſs,
"in the moſt affectionate terms, for all the atten-
"tions you have paid, all the pains you have taken;
"and I entreat you to reſt aſſured that my gratitude,
"my friendſhip, my eſteem, the high conſideration
"in which I hold you, ſhall terminate only with my
"life.

"CATHARINE.

"*Tzarſko-Zelo*, 11*th June* 1776."

After having paſſed twenty-four hours at Riga, and reviewed the evolutions of ſeveral regiments encamped at ſome diſtance from the city, the two Princes repaired to Mittau, where they were entertained by the Duke of Courland. This duke was the ſon of the celebrated Erneſt-John de Biren, who had juſt cloſed in tranquillity his long and tempeſtuous career.

The Grand-duke was received at Berlin with the honours due to the heir of the throne of Ruſſia.

Prince

Prince Henry preſented him to the King, who had advanced to meet him as far as the door of his apartment. The Grand-duke, on coming into his Majeſty's preſence, addreſſed him in theſe terms:

"Sire, the motives which have induced me to come "from the extremities of the north to theſe fortunate "climes, are the deſire of aſſuring you of the friend- "ſhip which ought for ever to unite Ruſſia and "Pruſſia, and impatience to behold a Princeſs deſ- "tined to mount the throne of the Muſcovites. In "receiving her from your hands, I can confidently "promiſe that Princeſs will be more dear both to me, "and to the nation over which ſhe is called to reign. "Finally, I obtain what I have long wiſhed for; in "contemplating the greateſt of heroes, the admira- "tion of the preſent age, and a prodigy to poſ- "terity."

Frederick haſtened to reply:—"I do not merit, "Prince, ſuch an eulogium. You behold in me "only a poor valetudinarian, with hairs ſilvered by "age. But believe me, I conſider myſelf ſingularly "happy in receiving within theſe walls the reſpect- "able heir of a puiſſant empire, the only ſon of my "beſt friend, of Catharine the Great."

The Pruſſian monarch then turned to Mareſchal Romanzoff, and added:—"Conqueror of the Otto "mans, moſt welcome! I perceive a ſtriking re- "ſemblance between you and my general Winter- "field."

"Sire," replied the Mareſchal, "I ſhould be flat- "tered to reſemble, even imperfectly, a general who "has diſtinguiſhed himſelf ſo glorioufly in the ſer- "vice of Frederick."

"Ah!" replied the King, "you ought to value "yourſelf much more on victories which will tranſ- "mit your name to the lateſt poſterity."

After half an hour's converſation with Frederick, the Grand-duke was introduced into the Queen's apartment, where the whole court had aſſembled.

There

There he ſaw the Princeſs of Wurtemberg. Their nuptials were immediately ſettled.

Feſtivals ſucceeded feſtivals at Charlottenburgh, at Potſdam, at Sans-Souci. But that which muſt have been moſt highly gratifying to Mareſchal Romanzoff, was the ſpectacle of the military exerciſes of the garriſon of Potſdam. Frederick made his troops manœuvre by ſquare battalions, in imitation of the bloody battle of Ragoul, in which 18,000 Ruſſians, under the command of Romanzoff, had conquered 100,000 Ottomans.

Prince Henry afterwards carried the Grand-duke to Rheinſberg, where he entertained him with a banquet which laſted four days, and in which he diſplayed no leſs taſte than ſumptuouſneſs.

On leaving Rheinſberg, Paul Petrowitz returned to Peterſburgh. The Princeſs of Wurtemberg ſoon followed. She embraced the Greek religion, and was joined in wedlock to the Grand-duke. Twenty years after their marriage this couple mounted together the throne of Ruſſia.

Catharine having given a ſecond conſort to her ſon, extended the boundaries of her vaſt empire, and extinguiſhed the flames of ſedition in the moſt diſtant provinces, ſeemed to have nothing left but to ſit down quietly and enjoy the plenitude of her power. But a ſtate of repoſe was not adapted to her ambitious ſoul; tranquil pleaſures were not ſufficient for her reſtleſs genius. She ſtill eagerly panted for glory, or rather for celebrity, which ſhe too frequently confounded with true glory; and there was nothing ſhe would not have ſacrificed to this inſatiable appetite. When her armies ceaſed to gather laurels beyond her frontiers, Fame was conſtrained to prepare for her triumphs of a different kind. Europe reſounded with the report of the dazzling acts of her munificence, of the encouragement ſhe gave to the ſciences and the arts, of the prizes ſhe aſſigned to talents, of the benefits ſhe conferred on foreigners, and of the numerous

merous inſtitutions which ſhe created to increaſe the induſtry and riches of her people. Certain flatterers, well paid for their labour, emphatically trumpeted abroad all theſe facts, and the echoing of gazettes multiplied the noiſe of them. The academy of Peterſburgh, which reckoned among its members many men deſervedly celebrated, but was not the leaſt addicted to adulation of all academies, ſometimes made the premature apotheoſis of Catharine. When that Princeſs did not attend their ſittings, they erected in the place which ſhe would have occupied, a buſt repreſenting her, with the attributes of Minerva. It muſt be admitted, however, that Catharine did not, in every reſpect, reſemble the chaſte daughter of Jupiter.

Gregory Orloff, who had returned to court without being recalled, ſeemed to have been inſenſibly reconciled to behold Potemkin occupying the firſt place by the ſide of Catharine's throne. Potemkin, elated with the credit he poſſeſſed, and more ſolicitous to preſerve unlimited power than the affections of the Empreſs, calmly permitted her to indulge her inclination toward Zawadoffsky. For eighteen months this laſt occupied the place of ſubaltern favourite, when all of a ſudden his ambition caught fire. He had the example of Potemkin before his eyes. He believed it poſſible, like him, to paſs from the arms of the Empreſs into the poſt of prime miniſter. But, in order to this, it was neceſſary to drive Potemkin from it. To this arduous undertaking he vigorouſly applied himſelf. He endeavoured to render the deſpotiſm of Potemkin hateful to the ſovereign. He got himſelf ſeconded by diſcontented officers, by envious courtiers, by women of ability and intrigue. Potemkin, informed of thoſe cabals, and more intelligent than his rival, reſolved to ſupplant him. Chance almoſt inſtantly furniſhed him with an opportunity.

A young

A young Servian, named Zoritz, an officer of huſſars, had come to Peterſburgh to ſolicit preferment. He was tall, very finely formed, and every way calculated to excite the inclinations of a voluptuous woman. Potemkin, who was well acquainted with Catharine's inconſtancy and violence of appetite, gave Zoritz a captain's commiſſion, and made him throw himſelf in the Empreſs's way. She did not fail to diſtinguiſh him. The next day Zawadoffsky was diſmiſſed. Zoritz replaced him.

Zawadoffsky, who had already received many ſubſtantial marks of Catharine's bounty, got at the moment of his diſmiſſion a gratuity of 90,000 roubles, an addition of 4000 to his annual penſion, and a conſiderable landed eſtate.

Zoritz at the ſame time received an eſtate in land worth 120,000 roubles, beſides the uſual preſents, a great part of which the greedy Potemkin took care to ſqueeze out of him. This new lover, without education, without experience, could not poſſibly give umbrage to the lofty Potemkin. Content with miniſtering in obſcurity to the pleaſures of the Empreſs, the only advantage he derived from the favour he poſſeſſed, was to ſtrengthen the credit of the man to whom he was indebted for it. It was with Potemkin alone that Catharine weighed the deſtinies of Europe.

BOOK IX.

Political Relations between Ruſſia and Denmark—Imperious Conduct of the Ruſſian Miniſters at Copenhagen—Struenſee—Bernſtorff—Ceſſion of Schleſwig—Political State of Sweden—Guſtavus III. at Peterſburgh—Treaty of Conſtantinople—Diſmiſſion of the Favourite Zoritz—Rimſky Korzakoff ſucceeds him—Armaments of Ruſſia—War between Pruſſia and Auſtria—Peace of Teſchen—Armed Neutrality—Catharine's Excurſion to Mohiloff—Joſeph II. at Peterſburgh—Frederick-William at Peterſburgh—Diſmiſſion of Korzakoff—Grand-duke's Travels in Europe.

FROM the elevation of Catharine II. to the throne of Ruſſia, the court of Peterſburgh had never ceaſed to maintain political connections with that of Copenhagen, or rather to exerciſe a powerful influence over it. This influence, the work of Peter I. underwent ſome interruption during the adminiſtration of his ſucceſſors. Catharine II. reſtored it to full vigour. That Princeſs did not inherit the animoſity and the projects of Peter III. againſt Denmark: ſhe attacked it neither with her ſquadrons nor her armies; but ſhe knew how to keep the cabinet of that kingdom long floating between hope of obtaining the entire ceſſion of Schleſwig, and the fear of ſeeing itſelf deprived of that important poſſeſſion.

A farther intereſt ſtill held the court of Copenhagen attached to that of Peterſburgh: ſhe could not believe herſelf to be perfectly ſecured againſt the ambition of the Kings of Pruſſia and of Sweden but by the alliance of Ruſſia; for this reaſon ſhe made continual efforts to draw ſtill cloſer the bonds of that alliance. She has been frequently ſeen, under the reign of the Empreſs Elizabeth, to purchaſe, by preſents,

ſents, the good-will of the miniſters and favourites of that Princeſs, and even ſometimes to penſion them. Could ſhe then be leſs generous towards thoſe of Catharine, or were they themſelves more difficult than the former? Whatever might be the caſe, as ſoon as Catharine thought herſelf eſtabliſhed upon her throne, ſhe wiſhed to domineer over Denmark as well as the reſt of the north, and took no more pains to preſerve a good underſtanding with that court.

She commenced by repaying with ingratitude the Count de Ranzau-Aſchberg, who was miniſter from Denmark to Peterſburgh in 1762. Ranzau, a witneſs of the preparations which Peter III. was making in order to conquer Holſtein, attached himſelf to the party of the Empreſs, and even formed a cloſe connection with Gregory Orloff. The Empreſs made uſe of him to co-operate with her in rendering odious the war which her huſband was undertaking; and Orloff let him into the ſecret of the conſpiracy forming againſt that Prince. Flattered with this confidence, Ranzau gave Orloff ſome uſeful counſels, and ſeconded him with all his power. The conſpiracy was ſucceſsful. Ranzau was at firſt favourably received by Catharine; but in a ſhort time coldneſs, and even diſdain, ſucceeded to the firſt emotions of ſatisfaction, and Ranzau, highly diſſatisfied with the Empreſs and the favourite, took the road to Denmark again.

Catharine, who without doubt took pleaſure in humiliating the court of Copenhagen, choſe Saldern for her envoy extraordinary to that court. Saldern, born in Holſtein of very obſcure parents, had at firſt occupied a petty ſituation at Tritau, from which he had cauſed himſelf to be turned out for ſome miſdemeanor: he afterwards went to ſeek his fortune in Ruſſia. Intriguing and audacious, he introduced himſelf at the court, and ſucceeded there. When the Empreſs ſent him to Copenhagen, he conducted himſelf with an inſolence which recalled more forcibly

cibly his extraction, and the diſgrace with which he had been diſmiſſed from his firſt employment. He preſumed to ſpeak to the Daniſh monarch and to his miniſters with a diſguſting haughtineſs. He wiſhed for information on every tranſaction which was carrying on, and dictated, in a menacing tone, the manner in which it ought to be decided. It was Saldern who, contrary to the opinion of the council and the inclination of the people, determined the King of Denmark to travel through France and England, a journey the conſequences of which have been ſo fatal to that feeble Prince and to his imprudent conſort.

Saldern did not content himſelf with prying into the affairs of ſtate, he intermeddled in the concerns of the King's houſehold, and directed his moſt trivial actions. He placed around him perſons upon whoſe devotedneſs he might depend, and baniſhed all thoſe who ſeemed to him of a contrary diſpoſition. In a word, he exerciſed a deſpotiſm at the ſame time arrogant and deſcending to the minuteſt trifle.

When the Empreſs recalled Saldern from Copenhagen, ſhe replaced him by Philoſophoff, not leſs haughty, and not leſs jealous of maintaining the aſcendant of his court. Philoſophoff very ſoon acquired at Denmark the ſame credit as his predeceſſor. This was not, to ſay truth, very difficult. The monarch was ſilly, his council timid. The Ruſſian miniſter had only to pronounce the name of Holſtein, in order to behold every thing ſubſervient to his will. We ſhall here produce an inſtance of the inquiſitorial authority which Philoſophoff arrogated to himſelf.

The Count de Saint-Germain was charged at Denmark with the adminiſtration of the war department. Living in a ſtrict intimacy with the Count de Gortz, a very diſtinguiſhed German officer, he offered him a ſituation in the Daniſh army, after having obtained the conſent of the monarch to it. Philoſophoff was informed of this; and whether it was that he had

ſome particular reaſon for diſliking the Count de Gortz, or whether he did not chuſe that an officer of merit ſhould enter into the ſervice of Denmark, he immediately wrote to the King:—"I have juſt "learnt that you have offered an appointment in the "ſervice to the Count de Gortz. I have orders from "my court to break off all communication with yours, "and to quit Copenhagen, rather than permit that "intriguing and dangerous man to fix his reſidence "near you." Nothing farther was neceſſary to prevent the Count de Gortz from ſeeing the realization of the offers which had been made him.

However, the credit of Philoſophoff diminiſhed in proportion as that of Struenſee increaſed, and it was not till the period of the bloody cataſtrophe of this laſt, that the Ruſſian miniſter re-aſſumed his influence. Philoſophoff at firſt made ſome vain efforts to remove Struenſee from the court. He had againſt him a double motive of hatred: he knew that Struenſee was in oppoſition to the Ruſſian intereſt, and he could not forget that he had been the means of cauſing him to loſe the favours of one of the prettieſt women in Copenhagen. Beſides, Philoſophoff ſupported the old Count de Bernſtorff, who was devoted to Ruſſia, and excluded from the miniſtry by Struenſee.

I will not attempt to retrace theſe intrigues in this place. It is well known what was the fate of Struenſee, who, from being the phyſician, became the lover of the young Queen Caroline-Matilda, and prime miniſter, and whoſe haughtineſs and imprudence created to him thoſe enemies who ſhortly after dragged him to the ſcaffold. It is well known that the Queen herſelf was impriſoned, excluded from the throne, and exiled to Zell, where ſhe died from exceſs of grief. The Ruſſian miniſter beheld with joy the ſucceſs of the conſpiracy formed againſt Struenſee and the young Queen, and reaped the fruits of it. The Queen dowager Julia-Maria, who had brought

brought about the revolution, held in her hands the reins of the ſtate. That Princeſs was far from having for Ruſſia ſo great devotedneſs as the unfortunate King under whoſe name ſhe governed. But ſhe was too ſagacious not to be ſenſible of the neceſſity of keeping on good terms with Catharine and her intriguing miniſter.

Ranzau was diſmiſſed. His active ſpirit gave uneaſineſs to the Queen, whom he had ſo faithfully ſerved. But although ſhe wiſhed to remove him becauſe ſhe dreaded him, ſhe pretended to adopt this meaſure only out of complaiſance for Ruſſia.

The old Count de Bernſtorff was already dead, Philoſophoff deſired that the nephew of this miniſter ſhould take the place of which he had been deprived. He thought him worthy of it, undoubtedly, from his attachment to Ruſſia; the Danes muſt have judged that he was ſtill more ſo, from the ability with which he has laboured for the happineſs of his country.

Bernſtorff was of a majeſtic ſtature, and had a noble figure. He diſtinguiſhed himſelf from his early youth by his politeneſs, his modeſty, the clearneſs of his underſtanding, and the moſt perſuaſive eloquence. In proportion as he advanced in years, his excellent qualities became more conſpicuous, and procured him the general eſteem of his compatriots. Living at court, and devoted to the ſtudy of politics, he was not leſs ſimple in his manners, nor leſs undiſguiſed in his converſation. Though a ſtateſman, he was extremely ſenſible; though a miniſter, he faithfully kept his word. Diligent and indefatigable in buſineſs, he had a quickneſs of conception, and a happy manner of explaining his ideas. The enemy of flattery, indifferent with regard to pleaſures, diſplaying an uncommon preſence of mind, and a temper uniformly equal, he never allowed himſelf to be biaſſed from purſuing the ends which he had in view. He was never ſeen puffed up by ſucceſs, nor caſt down by reverſe of fortune. If he triumphed, he

knew that he would very ſhortly have new obſtacles to ſurmount: if his deſigns miſcarried, he diſcerned all the reſources which it was ſtill in the power of fortune to ſupply. His only fault was perhaps rather too great an attachment to his own opinions, which he always defended with warmth: but even this fault had the advantage of proving that Bernſtorff did not deceive, and never wiſhed to deceive. The iſſue of a family in the Electorate of Hanover, Bernſtorff had a great predilection for the Engliſh nation. He likewiſe knew the regard which it was his duty to feel for the court of Ruſſia. He was, notwithſtanding, not the leſs juſt toward other powers, and did not the leſs zealouſly labour for the advantage of Denmark, to which he conſecrated every moment of his life.

Scarcely had he entered into the miniſtry, when Bernſtorff, faithful to the principles of his uncle, employed himſelf to obtain from Ruſſia the ceſſion of that part of Holſtein over which ſhe had maintained claims. He was not ignorant how far the corruption of the Ruſſian miniſters was intereſted in keeping Denmark dependant on them; but it was in the very exceſs of this corruption that he deſcried one of the methods of enfranchiſing her. He likewiſe knew that the pride of Catharine would with difficulty make her reſolve to abandon the ſmalleſt portion of her ſtates, and he undertook to make uſe of that very pride to perſuade her to conſent to that ſurrender. Philoſophoff was firſt gained over. Several chiefs of the government, favourites, ſecretaries, ſold their language or their ſilence. The covetous Saldern, ſeduced by conſiderable preſents, did not heſitate to utter a language totally different from that which he had till then held, and took upon himſelf the charge of the negotiation. He repreſented to the Empreſs, that it was beneath her dignity to keep poſſeſſion of a paltry principality, which rendered her dependant on the empire of Germany. The haughty Catharine, who

who in effect felt herſelf wounded by this ſpecies of ſubjection, believed that a diſcourſe, dictated by covetouſneſs, was to be attributed only to the intereſt taken in her glory. She ceded, in the name of her ſon, all claims upon Holſtein, for the counties of Oldenburgh and of Delmenhorſt, which Paul Petrowitz abandoned at the ſame time to the Biſhop of Lubec, Prince Frederick Auguſtus of Holſtein Gottorp. The treaty of exchange was ſigned at Kiel, the 16th of November 1773.

That event occaſioned the greateſt joy at Copenhagen. The day on which the treaty was ſigned was celebrated there with the utmoſt magnificence. It was not obſerved in the ſame manner at Peterſburgh. Catharine was not ſlow of perceiving that ſhe had been the dupe of the ſkill of Bernſtorff. Saldern, whoſe miſconduct was eaſily proved, fell into diſgrace. But the Empreſs conſoled herſelf for the loſs of Holſtein by the aſſurance of poſſeſſing in Denmark a ſubmiſſive ally, and always ready to give her aſſiſtance againſt Sweden.

More in the neighbourhood of Ruſſia, Sweden has excited, by turns, the apprehenſions and the ambition of the court of Peterſburgh. Peter I. had reſolved to annihilate that power, and the victories of Charles XII. did not prevent his carrying off from him four of his moſt beautiful provinces. The ſucceſſors of this Prince have inherited his projects, and the Ruſſian nation keeps up an implacable hatred againſt a people whom, in the end, ſhe has vanquiſhed, but who have cauſed her to purchaſe her conqueſts by oceans of blood. Every war againſt Sweden could not but give pleaſure to that ferocious and revengeful nation. Every means of cruſhing her rivals could not but be dear to the court of Ruſſia.

The Swediſh nobleſs, divided into two factions, which are diſtinguiſhed under the name of *Caps* and of *Hats*, have been by their diſſentions but too favour-

able to the ambition of Ruſſia. When, under the reign of the Empreſs Elizabeth, Count Panin was the miniſter of that Princeſs at Stockholm, the money which he ſcattered with profuſion, and the connections which he formed, gave him an aſcendant, of which he artfully availed himſelf to raiſe an oppoſition in the ſenate to the court. He directed the one by his intrigues, he reſtrained the other by terror. Count Oſtermann afterwards imitated and ſurpaſſed him. More ardent, more active than Panin, he held Sweden in a ſort of ſubjection; and it may with juſtice be affirmed, that during the life of Frederick Adolphus, the miniſter of Ruſſia and the French ambaſſador reigned by turns in Stockholm. The end which the Ruſſian miniſter had in view was, without doubt, to diſpoſe Sweden to become a Ruſſian province; but he flattered the nobles with the hope of forming a republic of it, under the protection of his ſovereign, a project conceived a long time before by them and by Lord Carteret, ambaſſador from England.

On his acceſſion to the throne, Guſtavus III. humiliated at the influence of Ruſſia and the authority of the ſenate of Stockholm, attempted to deliver himſelf from this double yoke.

The party of the Caps, who domineered in the ſenate, had alſo the preponderancy in the diet of 1772. Proud of the power which they had ſo frequently abuſed under Frederick Adolphus, they wiſhed to extend its bounds under his ſucceſſor, and preſcribed to this monarch a form of oath different from that which the fundamental laws of the ſtate exacted. Guſtavus III. ſigned that form without reading it, reſerving by that means to himſelf undoubtedly a pretext for breaking the engagement which he was forced to contract.

This Prince, who had already placed all his confidence in the Counts de Scheffer and de Salza, concerted

certed meaſures with them and the French ambaſſador Vergennes, and they traced together the plan of the revolution, as it was ſhortly after put in execution.

The diet was not ſlow in forming ſuſpicions reſpecting the deſigns of the young King. They took umbrage that ſeveral officers went once or twice a week to the houſe of General Ramſay, who they knew was devoted to the court, and they forbid the regiment of guards to aſſemble itſelf to exerciſe, even upon the parade.

Not ſatisfied with theſe precautions, the diet excluded from the ſenate all the members who were in oppoſition to the ruling faction. This act of vengeance only ſerved to reanimate the zeal of the ancient partiſans of the King, and created him new ones; for ſeveral of the nobles who diſliked the royal authority, dreaded it leſs, however, than they deteſted the tyranny of their rivals. The Count Axel Ferſen was of this number. Celebrated for his eloquence and for his attachment to the ancient conſtitution, he openly diſapproved the innovations of the diet; but, ſlightly encouraged by Guſtavus, he withdrew from Stockholm. The ſenator Hermanſon was leſs irritable, or more favourably received. His talents and his credit were neceſſary to the projects of the ſovereign: he devoted them to his ſervice.

However, Guſtavus did not communicate to the perſons who were to execute his plans of operation, except what it was requiſite for them to know, in order to be enabled to ſecond them properly. He wiſhed at firſt to be aſſured of the fidelity of the chiefs of the army: but the greater part of them appeared too much attached to the ancient form of government, for him to venture to diſcloſe to them the alteration which he meditated. Colonel Sprengporten and Captain Hellechius were the only perſons on whom he thought he might reckon. He therefore reſolved to cauſe a pretended revolt to break out in two diſtant provinces, in order that the diet might

might not perceive the preparations which he was carrying on in the capital.

Hellechius, on whom the King afterwards beſtowed the rank of general and the name of Guſtafskiœld, commanded at Chriſtianſtadt, a town of Scania. He lived amicably with the officers of the garriſon, frequently gave them entertainments, and had not much difficulty in obtaining their promiſe to act in concert with him. They openly blamed the decrees of the diet, and declared in favour of the royal authority. The inhabitants of Chriſtianſtadt thought and expreſſed the ſame ſentiments with them. The report ſoon reached Stockholm. The diet was alarmed, and commiſſioned Baron de Rudbeck, governor of the capital, to go and quell the murmurs of the Scanians.

In the abſence of Baron de Rudbeck the command of Stockholm was confided to General Peſchlin. He acquitted himſelf of his employment with a vigilance which diſconcerted for a time the friends of Guſtavus. Vain attempts were made to ſeduce him: his ſide was already taken.

Fortunately for the King, Baron de Rudbeck came to re-aſſume his command. He reported to his friends that he had been refuſed admiſſion at the gates of Chriſtianſtadt, and that Captain Hellechius had juſt publiſhed a manifeſto againſt the power which the diet arrogated to itſelf. The ruling faction reſolved upon this to diſcover whether Hellechius acted by orders from the King, determining, if this was the caſe, to ſeize upon the perſon of that Prince.

Guſtavus was too well verſed in diſſimulation, eaſily to allow himſelf to be penetrated. He replied ſometimes with a preſence of mind, ſometimes with an air of indifference, which deceived all the emiſſaries of the diet; and baron de Rudbeck, who imagined he had formed a juſt judgment of him, publicly ſaid, "That the perſonage was not in the leaſt "degree dangerous." However, the diet gave orders

ders that the garriſon of Stockholm ſhould be reinforced by the regiments of Upland and of Sudermania.

It is certain, that if theſe regiments had been allowed time to enter Stockholm the revolution could not have taken place, or oceans of blood muſt have been ſpilt. The guards were already diſſatisfied that other troops had been ſummoned; and the inhabitants, who had all taken up arms, and were devoted to the King, would have joined themſelves to the guards.

The moments became precious. Colonel Sprengporten, who had been diſpatched to bring troops from Finland, and whoſe arrival was to ſerve as the ſignal to the King, had been detained by contrary winds. He did not arrive, and time was loſing in a dangerous expectation. General Salza, Scheffer, Vergennes, held a council, and determined Guſtavus to accelerate his enterpriſe.

The execution was fixed for the day following. On the very day that this reſolution was taken the King made his appearance at the opera, in the midſt of all the nobleſs. He gave a grand ſupper to the court, and appeared in uncommonly good ſpirits. He afterwards withdrew to his apartment, and paſſed a part of the night in writing to his brothers and to ſome of his partiſans.

After having finiſhed theſe letters he went to viſit ſeveral of the corps-de-garde, as he had already done for ſeveral nights, in order to accuſtom the ſoldiers not to be ſurpriſed at ſeeing him at an unſeaſonable hour. Returning to the palace, he went quietly to bed, and aroſe at his uſual time. The Count de Levenhaupt, his maſter of the horſe, having come to receive orders, he told him privately to hold in readineſs a greater number of horſes than was cuſtomary.

The ſenate aſſembled according to cuſtom at ten o'clock in the morning. Half an hour afterwards, the ſoldiers who came to relieve guard advanced into the court of the caſtle. Scarcely had they entered it when

when the King deſcended, ordered the gates to be ſhut, and addreſſed to his guards a very eloquent oration, inviting them to deliver their country from the tyranny of a few factious nobles. He proteſted that he was not ambitious of an abſolute power, and that he only demanded an authority ſufficient to re-eſtabliſh order, and to cauſe the laws to be put into execution. That aſſurance, and the promiſe of liberally rewarding thoſe who ſhould ſecond his enterpriſe, had all the effect which he expected from it. The guards replied by ſhouts of approbation. Guſtavus made them immediately take an oath. The officers were conſtrained to follow the example of the ſoldiers.

Reckoning upon the fidelity of theſe troops, Guſtavus ordered ſentinels to be placed around the hall of the ſenate, and forbid that any perſon ſhould be allowed to go out. He himſelf repaired to the grand corps-de-garde, and after having aſſembled the officers, related to them, in the preſence of the ſoldiers, what had juſt taken place at the caſtle, and told them that he did not doubt he ſhould find them animated with as much zeal as their brave comrades. All, with the exception of one, ſwore to maintain his cauſe.

Guſtavus wiſhed to go immediately and take poſſeſſion of the arſenal. He called for his horſes. Levenhaupt, who held them in readineſs, was making preparation to conduct them to him, when the Baron de Rudbeck made his appearance at the door of the ſtable, and ordered the groom to remain. "I have "no orders to receive from you," replied Levenhaupt; "take yourſelf off, unleſs you wiſh that I "ſhould drive my horſes over your body." The governor immediately haſtened to the ſecret committee of the diet to make his complaint of Levenhaupt, and ordered the ſecretary Ellers to minute what he was going to dictate to him. Ellers, who was at that time doubtful of what had juſt taken place, looked gravely

gravely at the governor, and, inſtead of obeying him, ſhut the regiſter, ſaying, he believed he had nothing more to write.

Guſtavus repaired to the corps-de-garde of artillery, where all were eager to take the oaths to him. He cauſed the principal members of the diet to be invited to join him there, and at the ſame time ſent detachments of ſoldiers, with cannon, to each gate of the city, in order to prevent the flight of any of the chiefs from whom he had to dread oppoſition. However, General Peſchlin found means to make his eſcape.

The reſt of the garriſon of Stockholm very ſoon joined themſelves to the troops which ſurrounded Guſtavus. Several members of the diet likewiſe came to pay their obeiſance to this Prince. The Baron de Rudbeck, and ſome others of the moſt unruly, were arreſted. The Duke of Heſſenſtein, whoſe party had promiſed him the title of regent, refuſed to take the oaths. But, being hardly an object of apprehenſion, he was liberated upon his parole.

Thoſe who took the ſide of Guſtavus tied a white handkerchief round their left arm. In a ſhort time all the inhabitants of Stockholm choſe to decorate themſelves with this token of allegiance to their King, and the officers of the Swediſh army wear it to this day. It was likewiſe worn by the aſſaſſin who afterwards cauſed his death by firing a piſtol on him from behind.

The people ran in crouds in the paſſage of the King. Several times this Prince ſtopped to harangue them, and to recommend order and moderation. Theſe exhortations were not in vain.

As ſoon as Guſtavus was maſter of all the poſts of the city, and ſure of the devotedneſs of the inhabitants and of the ſoldiers, he aſſembled the members of the diet in his palace, and after having reproached them for their diſſentions and ambitious vanity, he ſaid:—"It is at laſt time to liberate the Swediſh nation

"from

"from ſervitude, and the throne from oppreſſion. "It is time to put a ſtop to the corruption which diſ- "honours the greater part of thoſe who ſit in the "diet and in the ſenate. It is well known that they "are always diſpoſed to ſacrifice to the gold of fo- "reigners the intereſt of their country. If any one "amongſt you can deny what I advance," added he, riſing up, "let him ſpeak and contradict me." No perſon preſumed to make any reply.

Guſtavus then read the plan of the conſtitution which he had himſelf formed. Every one liſtened in the moſt profound ſilence. When he had finiſhed reading he requeſted the opinion of the ſtates, and invited them to make their obſervations freely, in order to correct any thing in his plan which might be defective. But not a ſingle perſon made any objection. Thoſe who, in the bottom of their hearts, the moſt diſapproved of the monarch, were very far from venturing to make their ſentiments known.

The new conſtitution was not adopted till the third day after the revolution. Guſtavus then ordered the ſenators to be releaſed, who during three days had not been permitted to quit the hall in which they had been detained priſoners. The greateſt part of them obtained places in the new ſenate. All the officers who had followed the King's party were advanced in rank, and decorated with the military order. The principal inhabitants of Stockholm received medals of gold or ſilver, and the liberty of wearing them with a white ribbon at their button-hole. The inferior officers likewiſe were preſented with a medal ſuſpended from a blue ribbon. The ſoldiers were not forgotten: Guſtavus, who was but very ſcantily furniſhed with money, gave them all that he had it in his power to beſtow.

When the members of the faction in oppoſition to the King were recovered from their firſt alarm, they ſaw, with not leſs mortification than ſurpriſe, that this monarch had made uſe of but very feeble means

means in order to vanquiſh them. Ought it not indeed to have appeared ſtrange to them, that at the inſtant when the diet was miſtreſs of all the forces in the kingdom, and filled with enlightened men, they allowed their power to be wreſted from them by a young Prince who had only three or four hundred ſoldiers, and who was looked upon as a trifler?

One of the men to whom the revolution gave the greateſt affliction was Count Oſtermann, the Ruſſian miniſter. It had eſcaped his penetration, and it deprived him of a conſiderable part of his influence. In order to recover that influence, he inceſſantly encouraged the malecontents again to free themſelves from the yoke of the royal authority, to cauſe the regiments to march who continued faithful to them, and to convoke a new diet in ſome diſtant province.

The turbulent chiefs of the Caps were but too much diſpoſed to adopt theſe dangerous meaſures. Guſtavus apprehended it; and for that reaſon employed ſtratagem to reſtrain the factious. He cauſed a report to be ſpread, that a very conſiderable body of troops, under the command of General Sprengporten, had juſt arrived at a few miles from Stockholm, and during ſeveral days ſucceſſively he ſent away ſloops laden with proviſions for theſe ſuppoſed troops. At laſt the winds permitted Sprengporten to quit the coaſts of Finland. He conducted to Guſtavus a detachment from the garriſon of Sweaburgh; but when he arrived every thing at Stockholm was already in tranquillity.

The provinces very ſoon followed the example of the capital. The regiment of Upland, ſummoned by the diet, was ready to enter Stockholm. General Ramſay went alone to meet it, and, notwithſtanding the reſolution of ſome officers, he ſucceeded in cauſing it to take the oath of fidelity to the King. The Duke of Sudermania and the Duke of Oſtrogothia, brothers

brothers of this monarch, had been diſpatched into different parts of the kingdom, and eaſily obtained the adherence of the troops. General Peſchlin alone gave them ſome trouble; he was arreſted by the major of his own regiment, and the Duke of Oſtrogothia received orders to ſend him priſoner to the caſile of Gripſholm.

The money which Guſtavus received from France ſerved to ſtrengthen his party, and to diminiſh the influence of Ruſſia, which did not fail however to ſcatter roubles amongſt her creatures. Catharine learnt with chagrin the alteration which had juſt begun to take place in a country ſhe wiſhed to continue in a ſtate of diviſion, that ſhe might bring it into ſubjection ſooner or later. She gave Count Oſtermann orders to ſet to work to re-eſtabliſh the government which Guſtavus had deſtroyed. That miniſter laboured to this effect with boldneſs; but his efforts were fruitleſs. Some explanations which he had with Guſtavus terminated in ill humour; and at the commencement of 1776, Ruſſia having formed an armament of galleys at Cronſtadt, the alarm immediately ſpread itſelf over Stockholm.

Guſtavus demanded what could be the cauſe of that armament. The reply he received was but little ſatisfactory. The galleys were not meditating an attack upon Sweden, but the uneaſineſs of the King did not abate. At laſt, wiſhing to know what were the real deſigns of the court of Ruſſia, he reſolved himſelf to go and hold a conference with the Empreſs. He repaired to Peterſburgh, under the name of the Count de Gothland, accompanied by Count Ulric Scheffer, Count de Poſſe, de Munck, and ſome more of his courtiers. Baron de Holken alone, his ambaſſador to the court of Ruſſia, was forewarned of this journey. Guſtavus alighted at the houſe of this miniſter, and went almoſt immediately to pay a viſit to Count Panin.

The

A. D. 1777. The Empreſs was at Tzarſko-Zelo. Guſtavus repaired thither in the afternoon. He had an interview with this Princeſs, in which they diſplayed towards each other a cordiality equally diſſembled.

Entertainments were laviſhed on the Swediſh monarch. There were others likewiſe ſuppreſſed on his account. Catharine had the delicacy to forbid the celebration of the feſtival inſtituted on occaſion of the battle of Pultava, on the anniverſary of which Guſtavus was at Peterſburgh, and which might have recalled to him, in too forcible a manner, the defeat of Charles XII. and the calamities of his country. The Empreſs wiſhed to inſpire Guſtavus with an exalted idea of the magnificence and the pleaſures of her court. She frequently converſed with him, carefully ſtudied his character, and diſcovered in a ſhort time that preſumption was his principal failing.

Proud of this diſcovery, Catharine immediately propoſed to herſelf to take the advantage of it, by exciting Guſtavus to undertake ſome dangerous enterprize. His qualities, rather brilliant than ſolid, his affability, the pleaſures which he multiplied at his court, had till then rendered him dear to his country; but a moment of imprudence might render him odious to it. The following is the method which the Empreſs employed in order to haſten this moment. In converſing with Guſtavus, that Princeſs ſpoke of the obſtacles which ſovereigns have to contend with when they wiſh to bring civilization to perfection in their ſtates, and to make any alteration in the dreſs, the uſages, and the manners of the people. She obſerved, that it was not only difficult to effect theſe alterations, but very dangerous to attempt improvement in too haſty a manner. She ſaid, with truth, that men, being in general the ſlaves of cuſtom, could not behold new inſtitutions without repugnance; and ſhe adduced in favour of her opi-

nion the example of Peter I. and the reſiſtance which this Prince met with when he only attempted to perſuade the Ruſſians to ſhave themſelves.

Guſtavus replied, that if ſovereigns did not ſucceed in the alterations which they wiſhed to effect, it was without doubt rather their own fault than that of the people; and that however the latter might be attached to their cuſtoms, they would willingly make a ſacrifice of them to a monarch who underſtood how to make himſelf beloved. He remarked, that men ſet much leſs value on their uſages than on their fortune, on their life, and that, nevertheleſs, they frequently expoſed both the one and the other, from attachment to their ſovereign. "But," added he, "there is in every thing a ſeaſon, which we muſt "know how to make choice of. When we fail in "this, it is from want of attention, and then the "ſucceſs is not anſwerable to our efforts. There is "alſo a certain manner of executing things; and it "is becauſe Peter the Great poſſeſſed neither that "manner, nor the attention neceſſary for ſeizing "upon the favourable moment, that he experienced "the difficulties of which the Empreſs has been juſt "ſpeaking to me."

Catharine added new reaſons to thoſe which ſhe had already given. She prolonged the diſcuſſion till Guſtavus thought his ſelf-love intereſted to prove his aſſertions by facts: upon this ſhe defied him to prevail on the Swediſh nation to aſſume a new dreſs.

The monarch accepted the challenge; and ſome time after his return to Sweden, introduced the theatrical dreſs, which is ſtill worn at the court of Stockholm. He did not, to ſay the truth, paſs a law to oblige it to be worn; he contented himſelf with addreſſing to the governors of the provinces a letter, in which he recommended it to them to employ only mildneſs and perſuaſion. He pretended that the abſurd coſtume which he invented reſembled that of the ancient Swedes. At the ſame time he took care to

propoſe

propoſe it only to the courtiers, public officers, the military and the citizens; the inferior claſs of the people was not ſo much as invited to aſſume it.

The reſidence which Guſtavus made at Peterſburgh did not augment his eſteem for the Empreſs, and ſtrengthened in her the deſire of humbling this young and turbulent rival.

It appeared that for ſome years excurſions to Peterſburgh were become faſhionable. A ſhort time after the King of Sweden had taken his departure the Dutcheſs of Kingſton made her appearance there, ſo celebrated for her beauty, her luxury, and the ſcandal of her adventures. That woman thought herſelf worthy of living at the court of Catharine: but the Empreſs was apprehenſive of finding in her either a rival whoſe indiſcreet pretenſions would render her troubleſome, or a confidant who would very ſoon divulge her ſecrets. She gave her a cold reception, and the Dutcheſs, in diſpleaſure, took the road to Italy, where ſhe was certain of being able to find companions leſs haughty, and hungry worſhippers.

Since the election of the Khan Sahim-Gherai, the diſturbances of the Krimea had not ceaſed. The Turks, in indignation at the flight of Dewlet, abandoned him, and nominated Selim-Gherai to ſucceed him. It had then two Khans: one was ſupported by the Turks, the other by the Ruſſians. Thoſe latter, who wiſhed to give the whole Krimea to their *protégé*, in order that they might plunder it with the greater facility, furniſhed him with a guard compoſed of their own ſoldiers: the Tartars were jealous of that guard, and maſſacred a part of them.

A. D. 1778. This was without doubt ſufficient to rekindle the war. The Empreſs immediately ſent freſh troops into the Krimea. Prince Prozoroffsky, who had the command of theſe troops, attacked the Tartars in oppoſition to Sahim-Gherai, and routed

them. His competitor Selim was obliged to fly toward the mountains.

During this period Staſchieff, miniſter of Ruſſia at Conſtantinople, ſolicited the Porte to acknowledge Sahim-Gherai: but the Porte, faithful to her engagements, faithful above all to her pride, choſe only to ſupport Selim.

Mareſchal Romanzoff upon this announced to the Divan, that the Krimea had placed itſelf under the protection of Ruſſia, and that the Empreſs would rather renew the war than abandon Sahim-Gherai. Such a degree of haughtineſs was little calculated to gain the Turks. They appeared indignant, and determined to proceed to take up arms. But a foreign influence prevented them. A French ambaſſador had perſuaded them to commence the laſt war; his ſucceſſor prevented their undertaking a new one. When the Ruſſian miniſter propoſed quitting Conſtantinople, the principal part of the Ulemahs and the Riglialis who compoſed the divan oppoſed his departure.

The miniſters of other powers were at the ſame time warmly carrying on negotiations with the divan, and this council continued wavering between the divers impulſes which were given to it. Witneſſes of its tardineſs and indeciſion, the Ruſſians became in conſequence only the more active and more determined in their projects. By dint of gifts and promiſes they raiſed themſelves new partiſans in the Krimea, and concluded by enſlaving that country, whilſt nothing was talked of but its independence. In making preparations for war, they were ſeeking however to prevent it. Mareſchal Romanzoff had an interview with the celebrated Capitan-Pacha Gazi-Haſſan, but could not ſucceed in coming to any ſatisfactory terms. They ſeparated with mutual diſpleaſure.

The Empreſs reckoned upon an aid which ſhe alone

alone ſeemed to poſſeſs the power of procuring to herſelf. She had obtained from the regent of Perſia, Kherim-Khan, a promiſe to attack the Turks in Aſia, whilſt ſhe ſhould ſubdue them in Europe; but the death of this Prince, who was aſſaſſinated by one of his officers, ſaved the Ottomans from a double aggreſſion.

Catharine was more fortunate in the meaſures which ſhe adopted to bring about a peace. The diviſions which diſturbed Germany reſpecting the ſucceſſion of Bavaria, and the war which had juſt broke out between France and England, did not permit theſe powers to continue to attach a great intereſt to the quarrels of the Turks and the Ruſſians. Even thoſe which had firſt perſuaded them to take up arms counſelled them to lay them down, and wiſhed that Ruſſia might be at liberty to adopt a common cauſe with them.

However, the divan ſtill remained in indeciſion. The people of Conſtantinople deſired war. Some murmurs were even heard to break forth againſt the Capitan-Pacha, becauſe he had returned into the ſea of Marmora, without having engaged the Ruſſians.

The Ruſſian miniſter, Staſchieff, was attacked near Conſtantinople by two galiongis, who made an attempt to maſſacre him. The Capitan-Pacha ordered them to be arreſted and ſtrangled immediately. But their attempt did not the leſs prove the diſpoſitions of the multitude.

The Turks forgave Ruſſia with ſo much the more difficulty her ſucceſſes and her invaſions, that they recalled to them inceſſantly their multiplied defeats, and the humiliating peace which they had been obliged to conclude. They could not reconcile themſelves to behold the Ruſſians almoſt abſolute maſters of the Black Sea, diſplaying their flag cloſe under the walls of Conſtantinople, and extending every day their flouriſhing commerce. The inde-

pendence of the Krimea was ſufficient to afflict them: its ſubjection to the Ruſſians ſhocked them.

Some other differences had alſo ariſen between the court of Peterſburgh and the Ottoman Porte. By the laſt treaty of peace, the Ruſſians had cauſed a grant to be made of ſeveral privileges to the Greek Chriſtians, ſcattered in conſiderable numbers over Moldavia and Wallachia. Upon this, ſeveral inhabitants of the other bank of the Danube abandoned their country, to paſs into the provinces where toleration reigned. All theſe Chriſtians were much more ſtrongly attached to the power to which they were indebted for the new advantages they enjoyed, than to that which had for a long time oppreſſed them. Ruſſia wiſhed to go ſtill farther: ſhe was ſecretly labouring to render them altogether independent of the Porte; and in order to attain this ſhe began by demanding, that the princes or governors of Moldavia and of Wallachia ſhould not be depoſed under any pretext whatever.

This enfranchiſement appeared as unjuſt in the eyes of the Turks as the ceſſion of the Krimea. However, the firſt exertions of the French ambaſſador had not been wholly without effect. Thoſe which followed had ſtill greater ſucceſs. He perſuaded the divan to order the releaſe of ſeveral Ruſſian veſſels, which for more than a year had been detained in the ports of Turkey. A ſhort time afterwards, a new treaty was ſigned through his mediation.

A. D. 1779. By this treaty the Ruſſians deſiſted from ſome of their exaggerated pretenſions reſpecting the provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia, as well as the Krimea, which they promiſed to evacuate. The Porte granted to thoſe of her ſubjects who profeſſed the Greek religion the rights which they claimed. She acknowledged the independence of the Krimea and the ſovereignty of the Khan Sahim-Gherai, and extended

extended ſtill farther the privileges which the Ruſſians already had of navigating on the Ottoman ſeas.

The zeal which the French ambaſſador diſplayed to accelerate the ſignature of this treaty, was founded on the deſire which he had to ſee his court carry off from England the ſupport of Ruſſia. In this he ſucceeded. The ſtrict alliance which had ſo long ſubſiſted between London and Peterſburgh was, if not quite broken off, at leaſt greatly weakened; and the French were aſſured that they ſhould not ſee a power take up arms againſt them which was indebted to them for peace.

Catharine was ſo well ſatisfied with this peace that ſhe ſent to her miniſter at Conſtantinople, and to the French ambaſſador, very rich preſents. She alſo cauſed to be preſented to the Grand-ſignor and to the favourite more than the value of 300,000 roubles in jewels. The Grand-vizir and the principal members of the divan received like proofs of her magnificence and of that of Potemkin.

How great reaſon had the Empreſs at that time to felicitate herſelf upon a treaty which left her at liberty to give herſelf up, without oppoſition, to her views of invaſion, always increaſing, and to the care of extending the commerce of her vaſt ſtates! The inequality of the climate, the ſcantineſs of population, and the barrenneſs of a part of the ſoil, did not prevent theſe ſtates from preſenting immenſe reſources to commerce. Placed upon Europe and Aſia, the Ruſſians can eaſily carry on a traffic with the whole world. The Caſpian Sea ſerves them as a means of communication with Perſia and India. The Sea of Zabacha and the Black Sea enable them to go and diſpoſe of the productions of the north in the Mediterranean, and to bring back to the north thoſe of the Levant. Kamtſchatka opens to them on one ſide a paſſage into America, and on the other into China and Japan. Finally, the White Sea and the Baltic bring them into connection with the principal part of the nations

of Europe, to which their commerce is become indiſpenſable.

Free to navigate upon ſo many ſeas, and ruling over ſome, Catharine could not endure that any other power ſhould claim the empire of the main; and one of the cauſes which contributed to detach her from Great Britain was the jealouſy with which that nation inſpired her, by inſiſting that the ſuperiority of her flag ſhould be acknowledged over the world.

However, the commerce of Britain was too advantageous to the Empreſs to ſuffer her to renounce it. In refuſing the Engliſh her aſſiſtance ſhe laviſhed careſſes upon them. Whilſt ſhe ſaw them loſe a part of their colonies, ſhe invited them to come and ſeek in her ports the productions which they could no longer bear away from the continent of America, and ſhe rejoiced to behold their veſſels reſorting in greater numbers to Archangel.

She received the Americans at the ſame time; and, notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of the Britiſh miniſter, ſhe aſſured to them the free navigation of the Baltic, without chooſing, it is true, to acknowledge their independence.

Some years before, ſhe had concluded with the court of Verſailles a treaty, according to which a French factory ſhould have been eſtabliſhed at Archangel. But the French, whoſe commercial views carried them almoſt entirely towards the Antilles, did not draw any advantage from this treaty. Time will perhaps teach them, that the commerce of the north, leſs deſtructive than that of hot climates, offers a profit, if not ſo brilliant, at leaſt more equal and more certain.

I have not ſpoken either of the feſtivals which the Empreſs gave at the commencement of this year, and in the courſe of the preceding one, nor of the other events of leſs importance than thoſe which I have deſcribed. There is yet time to return to them.

The

The anniverſary of the acceſſion of the Empreſs to the throne, and that of the birth of the Grand-duke, were celebrated at the ſame time with an extraordinary magnificence, and ſignalized by the promotion of a great number of general officers.

Catharine likewiſe celebrated with pomp the feaſts of her divers orders of chivalry; and conſented to diſcharge the functions of ſovereign of the order of the Bath, to confer the inſignia of that order on Sir James Harris, to whom the Britiſh monarch had ſent them.

After having touched him on the ſhoulder with a ſword enriched with diamonds, and having ſaid to him, in conformity to the rules of the order, "In "the name of God, be a good and loyal knight," ſhe preſented him the ſword, adding, "To expreſs "how well I am ſatisfied with you, I make you a "preſent of the ſword with which I have conferred "on you the order of knighthood."

Some days before, the Empreſs had given a grand entertainment in commemoration of the naval engagement at Tcheſiné, and the burning of the Turkiſh fleet.

This Princeſs, who believed herſelf at that moment on the eve of ſuſtaining a new war againſt the Turks, wiſhed to re-animate, by her preſence, the zeal of her naval officers. She embarked in a yacht at Peterſhoff, and repaired on board the ſquadron which cruized between Cronſtadt and Kraſna-Gorca. Admiral Barſch, who commanded that ſquadron, received, as well as his officers, ſeveral marks of the ſatisfaction of the ſovereign.

A fire conſumed a conſiderable part of the city of Twer. The Empreſs immediately granted to the inhabitants whoſe houſes had been conſumed, an aid of 100,000 roubles.

Peterſburgh ſuffered a diſaſter to which the benefits of the Empreſs could not preſent a remedy. One of the ſtewards of the brandy warehouſes, named Loguinoff,

Loguinoff, who had prodigiouſly enriched himſelf, and had rendered but very unſatisfactory accounts, was obliged by Potemkin to give a feaſt to the inhabitants of the capital. The entertainer not only thought himſelf too happy to eſcape by this means the diſpleaſure of government, but was in hopes that it would procure him ſome dignity. The proviſions, the beer, the brandy, which he cauſed to be diſtributed, coſt him 20,000 roubles. The people flocked in crowds to the place where this enormous repaſt was given; and notwithſtanding the precautions which had been taken, diſorder very ſoon began to reign among ſuch a number of gueſts. They diſputed about the meat and drink; they proceeded to blows. Several perſons were killed; others were ſo drunk that they fell aſleep in the ſtreets and died of cold. At leaſt 800 periſhed.

Notwithſtanding her martial and political embarraſſments, Catharine was always employed in peaceable inſtitutions, and in pleaſures. In the year 1764 ſhe founded a houſe of education, under the title of convent of noble young ladies, and aſſigned to it an annual revenue of 80,000 roubles. In a ſhort time the number of pupils was near 500. It was the Empreſs's pleaſure, that thoſe of the ſcholars who were of noble birth ſhould learn foreign languages, and perform French tragedies and comedies; and this ſpectacle was, during ſome time, one of her amuſements.

But there were other pleaſures to which Catharine remained conſtantly attached. Although ſhe frequently changed her lover, her inclination to love continued always the ſame. The Servian Zoritz had fixed her during a year, and had received conſiderable preſents and the rank of major-general. Potemkin was neither jealous of the fortune nor the favours which Zoritz enjoyed: he ſupported him on the contrary, in the apprehenſion of ſeeing him ſucceeded by ſome more dangerous rival. Catharine herſelf appeared

appeared every day more ſatisfied with her favourite. But all at once ſhe ſent him an order to quit the court.

Zoritz immediately haſtened to complain to Potemkin, who took upon him to demand of the Empreſs what could be the cauſe of the diſgrace of his *protégé*. "Laſt night I loved him; to-day I love "him no longer," replied the Empreſs.—"Perhaps, "had he been better educated, I ſhould love him "ſtill; but his ignorance makes me bluſh. He can "ſpeak nothing but Ruſſian: he muſt travel through "France and England in order to learn foreign lan-"guages."

Potemkin reſpected the caprice of the ſovereign. Zoritz took his departure for France.

The ſame day Potemkin, employing himſelf in looking out for a ſucceſſor to Zoritz, and going to paſs the evening at the hermitage, perceived with aſtoniſhment, behind the arm chair of Catharine, a chamberlain whom he did not know. This was Rimſky Korzakoff. From the obſcure rank of ſerjeant of the guards, Korzakoff had been ſuddenly elevated to that of aid-de-camp to the Empreſs, and honoured with all the benefits which the generoſity of that Princeſs uſually laviſhed upon her favourites.

Korzakoff was endowed with a fine figure, and a very elegant air; but having neither wit nor underſtanding, it was not in his power any more than Zoritz's to undermine the credit of Potemkin. Beſides, he diſarmed his jealouſy by ſacrificing to his avarice. A ſingle fact will ſuffice to unfold the character of Korzakoff. As ſoon as he had obtained the place of favourite, he thought that a man like him ſhould of neceſſity purchaſe a library. He immediately ſummoned the moſt famous bookſeller in Peterſburgh, and told him he wiſhed to have ſome books, that he might place them in the palace of Waſſiltſchikoff, of which the Empreſs had juſt made

made him a preſent. The bookſeller aſked him what kind of books he preferred. "You know better "than I do," replied the favourite; "that is your "concern. Large books at the bottom, ſmall ones "a-top: this is the way they are placed in the library "of the Empreſs."

It was not ſufficient to have renewed peace with the Ottomans. The Empreſs was irritated againſt Auſtria, whoſe miniſter at Copenhagen had made vain efforts to engage the Porte to declare war with Ruſſia. The moment of vengeance ſeemed to be on the point of preſenting itſelf.

The death of Maximilian-Joſeph, Elector of Bavaria, had furniſhed to the court of Vienna an opportunity of reviving her ancient pretenſions with reſpect to that electorate. The Elector-palatine, Charles-Theodore, who ſucceeded Maximilian-Joſeph, and who wiſhed to avoid war, acknowledged the more than dubious rights of the houſe of Auſtria, and conſented to allow Joſeph II. and Maria-Thereſa to take poſſeſſion of Bavaria, the one as the Emperor of Germany, the other as Queen of Hungary.

The Duke de Deux-Ponts, who was the next male heir to the Elector Charles-Theodore, immediately exclaimed againſt a treaty which injured the rights of his houſe. The Elector of Saxony alſo pretended to a ſhare in the ſucceſſion of Maximilian-Joſeph; and finally, the Duke of Mecklenburgh claimed a reverſion granted to his family nearly three centuries back, and always eluded.

Theſe three Princes united to ſolicit the King of Pruſſia to defend their rights, or rather he himſelf ſecretly invited them to commit their cauſe into his hands. Provoked at the aggrandizement of the houſe of Auſtria, and ſkilful at ſeizing every opportunity of ſecuring the elevation of his own, he wiſhed to diſplay himſelf in the eyes of Europe as the ſupporter of the liberty, and of the conſtitution, of Germany. This monarch, who had formerly made a jeſt

jeſt of being laid under the ban of the empire as the Elector of Brandeburgh, pretended that Bavaria ſhould not have been diſpoſed of without the advice of all the Electors, and declared that he was reſolved to maintain the Germanic conſtitution.

There was at firſt a very long paper war between Frederick and Joſeph II. afterwards they proceeded to more ſerious conflicts. Four hundred thouſand men drew the ſword, and blood began to flow in the ſummer of 1778.

Upon this Catharine ordered Maria-Thereſa and Joſeph II. to be called upon to renounce the invaſion of Bavaria, and to conclude peace. She declared at the ſame time, "That ſhe was intereſted for the "tranquillity of Germany, and as ſovereign of a "ſtate which had natural relations with that part of "Europe, and as being in the ties of friendſhip with "the greater part of her Princes, above all, with him "who had beheld himſelf under the neceſſity of tak-"ing up arms in order to arreſt the proceedings of "the court of Vienna.

"That, without dwelling on the political right of "Germany, ſhe adopted for her rule only natural "equity, and the principles upon which all ſociety "is founded; that according to theſe principles ſhe "found the whole empire was unjuſtly in a ſtate "of commotion, becauſe the houſe of Auſtria wiſhed "to procure a renewal of claims extinguiſhed for "centuries back, and omitted in the treaty of peace "of Weſtphalia, a treaty which is the baſis and the "bulwark of the Germanic conſtitution; that the "infractions of the court of Vienna expoſed all the "empire to an evident peril; that the downfal of "that empire would neceſſarily cauſe a violent com-"motion in all the ſtates adjacent to Germany, a de-"rangement of the order and equilibrium of all Eu-"rope, and perhaps, in the courſe of time, even pro-"duce great danger to Ruſſia; that every wiſe and "prudent ſovereign ought to foreſee and to avert theſe

miſfor-

" misfortunes, and that the court of Ruſſia could not " adopt for this purpoſe other principles than thoſe " which the court of Vienna had adopted on ſimilar " occaſions.

" That, of conſequence, the court of Ruſſia in- " vited the Empreſs Queen and the Emperor to make " an amicable arrangement, conformably to the laws " and the conſtitution of the empire, with the King " of Pruſſia, and the other Princes intereſted in the " ſucceſſion of Bavaria, becauſe that, in the con- " trary caſe, the Empreſs of Ruſſia would be obliged " to pay ſerious attention to what ſhe owed to her " own empire, to the intereſts of the provinces which " had demanded her friendſhip and aſſiſtance; above " all, to her obligations towards her allies; and that, " in fine, the Ruſſian troops would join themſelves " to the Pruſſian."

Catharine could eaſily put this menace into execution. She had at that time three armies in Poland; one of which, 40,000 ſtrong, and under the command of Prince Nicholas Repnin, had already received orders to hold itſelf in readineſs to march.

The court of Vienna had a preſentiment of the deſigns of Catharine. Before her declarations were received, that court had diſpatched a courier to invite her to become, in concert with the court of France, the mediatreſs of the differences which had ariſen between Auſtria and Pruſſia.

Immediately a congreſs was aſſembled at Teſchen. The general deſtined to execute the vengeance of Catharine and Frederick, Repnin, appeared there as a pacific miniſter. Breteuil came in the name of France. The houſe of Auſtria obtained the part of Bavaria ſituated between the Danube, the Inn, and the Saltz, and peace was reſtored to Germany.

A. D. 1780. But whilſt the north of Europe reaſſumed her tranquillity, the ſouth ſtill experienced the effects of the violent commotion excited, three years before, reſpecting the northern countries of America.

America. England, France, Spain, Holland, inceſſantly armed new ſquadrons, and dyed with blood the ſeas of the two worlds, in order to decide if the inhabitants of Boſton and of Philadelphia ſhould be free.

War, and above all, maritime war in Europe, always gives greater elaſticity to the commerce of the north. It is from the north that the principal part of the materials neceſſary to the conſtruction and to the victualling of naval armies muſt be furniſhed, as well as the ſupplies of grain, the conſumption of which becomes then more conſiderable. The Dutch, for a long time in poſſeſſion of the commerce of the Baltic, wiſhing to prevent the veſſels which they employed there from falling into the hands of the Engliſh, made them navigate under the neutral flag of the Danes. But this flag was little reſpected by privateers, and the ſhips which bore it were frequently conducted to London or to Plymouth. Thoſe of Hamburgh, of Bremen, of Lubec, ſhared the ſame fate. The merchants of thoſe cities upon this implored the protection of Catharine; and the better to ſucceed with this Princeſs, they knew, in giving money to her miniſters, how to perſuade them to favour their cauſe.

Her own intereſt had already diſpoſed her to this. She never loſt ſight of the means of extending the commerce of Ruſſia; and in order to give it a greater degree of activity, ſhe had juſt aboliſhed the extraordinary duties upon grain, and permitted the exportation of it from Archangel as far as Riga. Beſides, her pride was wounded that the Engliſh paid no reſpect to the veſſels which loaded in her ports, and that they had even ſometimes preſumed to capture thoſe which ſailed under her flag.

Another motive completed her determination to protect the navigation of the north. Vergennes, whoſe intrigues at Conſtantinople had formerly irritated Catharine, had juſt acquired conſiderable conſequence

ſequence with her, by urging Saint Prieſt to perſuade the Turks to conſent to the ſacrifice which Ruſſia required. Vergennes had by this means ſucceeded in carrying off from the Engliſh the aſſiſtance of the Ruſſian fleet. He conceived an idea more extenſive and more worthy of a real ſtateſman: he formed the project of the armed neutrality, to which almoſt all the powers of Europe ſucceſſively acceded.

Well acquainted with the pride of the Empreſs, Vergennes knew how to intereſt her in the execution of his project. He cauſed it to be ſuggeſted to her by the miniſters of Denmark and Sweden. It was preſented to her with ſo much art, that ſhe did not heſitate to adopt it; and ſhe perſuaded herſelf that ſhe had been almoſt entirely the author of it, or at leaſt ſhe appeared to wiſh that others ſhould believe ſo.

From this time ſhe reſolved to employ force in the protection of her ſhipping; ſhe propoſed to the courts of Copenhagen and of Stockholm to arm each of them a ſquadron which ſhould join itſelf to her's, in order to defend their neutrality.

The wiſhes of Denmark had outrun this invitation. The prudent miniſter who governed that ſtate, well underſtood the value of an alliance, without which the Engliſh would have laughed at the armaments of the north. He promiſed to ſubſcribe to the treaty propoſed by the Empreſs.

The court of Sweden was not ſo ready to accede to it: ſhe was reſtrained by France itſelf, which artfully perſuaded her to oppoſe ſome difficulties, in order to excite Ruſſia to do them away. Before arming a combined fleet, Guſtavus demanded an explanation reſpecting the manner in which that armament was to protect commerce. He wiſhed to know if each neutral power would defend the veſſels of their allies, or thoſe of their own nation only. He finally demanded, in what caſe neutral powers ſhould make repriſals on thoſe which were at war, and if the aggreſſions

aggreſſions of one of theſe powers ſhould be of neceſſity ſeconded by the others.

The Empreſs replied, that a preliminary convention ſhould be held between all the neutral powers, to eſtabliſh in what manner a free navigation ought to be ſecured to the merchantmen of thoſe powers, provided theſe veſſels were not laden with prohibited goods. She added, that each power muſt be obliged to protect the veſſels of the others, and that with regard to repriſals or aggreſſions, they ſhould be ſeconded, when they were made uſe of according to the conditions eſtabliſhed by the confederated neutrality; but that, above all, this alliance ſhould be maritime, and deſtined ſolely to the protection of commerce. In conformity to theſe ideas, ſhe gave it in charge to the celebrated mathematician Epinus to commit the plan of it to writing.

Satisfied with thoſe explanations, Guſtavus gave orders to his miniſter at Peterſburgh to ſign the treaty of the armed neutrality. The court of Denmark had preceded him by two days.

Vergennes had found means to cauſe a Ruſſian veſſel to be captured by a Spaniſh privateer. Upon this, Catharine waited not for the acceſſion of Sweden and Denmark to make known her deſigns to the courts of London, Verſailles and Madrid. Her ambaſſadors conveyed them a declaration, in which ſhe complained that the rights of nations had been violated in the perſons of her ſubjects; that their commerce had been reſtrained, their navigation interrupted; and that to prevent, in future, ſimilar grievances, ſhe was making preparations to ſuſtain by force the rights which belonged to all neutral powers. The cabinet of St. James's haſtened to reply, that from the commencement of the war orders had been given, in the moſt poſitive manner, to the commanders of veſſels, to pay reſpect to the flag of Ruſſia. Notwithſtanding that aſſurance, the Engliſh continued for ſome time to capture Ruſſian veſſels, and to procure a

judgment from the courts of the Britiſh admiralty reſpecting the validity of prizes. The Empreſs challenged theſe tribunals. The conteſt was on the point of becoming ſerious, when the Engliſh put an end to it by releaſing the veſſels.

Pruſſia, Auſtria, and even Portugal, united themſelves with the other neutral powers, and that naval confederacy acted as a powerful curb to the deſpotiſm of the nation which pretends to arrogate to herſelf the ſovereignty of the ſeas.

The Britiſh miniſter at Peterſburgh laboured with warmth to break the league of the neutrality, or at leaſt to prevent Ruſſia from protecting the veſſels of other nations. There is no kind of engine which he did not make uſe of with Potemkin: he laviſhed preſents on his nieces, and gave to himſelf 50,000l. ſterling, in order that he might perſuade the Empreſs to alter her reſolution. But the aſcendant of Potemkin had ſtill leſs influence over her than the counſels of pride. Beſides, the ſkill of Sir James Harris was baffled by a ſtratagem ſufficiently ſingular.

As ſoon as the miniſter had diſcovered that an attempt was making to perſuade the Empreſs to propoſe the armed neutrality, he drew up a long memorial to oppoſe this project, and tranſmitted it to Potemkin, who promiſed to recommend it to the ſovereign. Whether it was that the Engliſh miniſter thought he might take it upon him to boaſt of what he had juſt done, or whether it was mentioned by Potemkin, the partiſans of the neutrality very ſoon got information of it. Immediately the miniſter of France, Verac, in concert with Panin, had recourſe to a certain Miſs Guibald, a very bold and artful girl, who lived with the nieces of Potemkin, and was on very familiar terms with the Prince. That girl ſecretly picked the memorial from the pocket of Potemkin. Notes were inſtantly taken of it, and another memorial drawn up, in which, without appearing to have

have had any knowledge of the firſt, it was completely refuted. The paper of Sir James Harris was as ſkilfully reſtored to its place as it had been drawn from it, and the other was preſented to the Empreſs.

When Potemkin afterwards preſented to the Empreſs the memorial of the Britiſh miniſter, ſhe ſaw that it contained nothing which had not been replied to beforehand; this therefore only added to the deſire ſhe had to league the powers of the north againſt England.

Sir James Harris was ſoon informed of the method which had been employed to make uſe of his memorial againſt himſelf, and was ſo affected by it that he fell ſick.

Potemkin enjoyed the higheſt degree of favour. Every day ſome new gift of the ſovereign augmented his immenſe riches, and ſome title of honour was added to the long liſt of his dignities. The court, the army, the navy, all were in ſubjection to him. He placed miniſters, generals, favourites, or diſplaced them at his pleaſure; and caprice alone directed his benevolence or his cenſure.

With all the exterior of a vulgar, and frequently a brutal frankneſs, Potemkin was very artful. He governed the Empreſs by dictating his wiſhes to her with haughtineſs, but appeared at the ſame time to breathe only for her ſervice. He treated with inſolence the moſt ancient generals and the grandees of the ſtate, whom he thought he might inſult with impunity, and kept on good terms with all thoſe whoſe ſpirit and courage he ſtood in awe of.

Mareſchal Romanzoff was almoſt the only general who would not abaſe himſelf before Potemkin. Accordingly, this laſt dreaded his inflexibility as much as he envied him the glory of being the conqueror of the Turks. The hatred which he bore to Mareſchal Romanzoff extended even to the Counteſs de Bruce, his ſiſter, one of the moſt intimate confidants of Ca-

tharine. The ingrate forgot that the Counteſs de Bruce had been favourable to his firſt connection with that Princeſs. Living familiarly with the Counteſs de Bruce, and teſtifying the utmoſt friendſhip, he watched her diſcourſe, her every ſtep, and confidently promiſed himſelf to ruin her, if he could meet with an opportunity: all at once chance furniſhed him with it.

Korzakoff was at that time beloved of the Empreſs. The benefits, the honours with which ſhe overwhelmed him, ought to have inſpired him, if not with love, at leaſt with gratitude; but he poſſeſſed only thoughtleſſneſs and vanity. The Counteſs de Bruce, who ſaw him every day about the Empreſs, conceived an inclination for him: ſhe could not however give herſelf up at firſt to this propenſity. The conſtraint in which the lovers of Catharine lived, allowed them but little opportunity for infidelities. Potemkin aſſiſted the Counteſs de Bruce to overcome every obſtacle: he took upon himſelf the charge of being her confidant; he furniſhed her with the means of having ſecret interviews with Korzakoff; and although he had ſome eſteem for the favourite, he reſolved to ſacrifice him, in the hope of involving in his ruin the ſiſter of Romanzoff.

The project of Potemkin ſucceeded. The Empreſs was not ſlow of diſcovering that ſhe was deceived by her favourite and by her friend. She immediately ordered the one to travel out of her empire, and the other to repair to Moſcow. She reſolved henceforth that ſhe would not again have a female friend, but ſhe could not ſo eaſily form the reſolution to diſpenſe with a favourite. The ſame day Lanſkoï, a chevalier-garde, of the moſt beautiful and moſt intereſting figure, was upon duty at the door of the Empreſs, when General Tolſtoï was ſtruck with his graceful mien, and cauſed his ſovereign to remark it. From this moment the choice of Catharine was decided; and it will be ſeen in the ſequel of this work, that of all her lovers

lovers Lanſkoï was the one whom ſhe moſt loved, and who was the moſt worthy of being beloved.

Although Potemkin had not any ſhare in the elevation of Lanſkoï, he did not the leſs exact a tribute which he was accuſtomed to regard as lawful, and the new favourite thought himſelf too happy to purchaſe ſecretly his good will by a preſent of 200,000 roubles.

The covetouſneſs of Potemkin was ſo exceſſive, that in order to extort money he was not aſhamed to deſcend to the moſt contemptible baſeneſs. Will it be believed that this man, ſo enormouſly rich, made uſe of a carte-blanche of the Empreſs to fabricate an order which enjoined the Prince Wœſemſky, grand-treaſurer of the empire, to pay him down 100,000 roubles? Wœſemſky gave the ſum, and afterwards ſhewed the order to the Empreſs, who, not leſs humiliated than ſurpriſed at the vile audacity of Potemkin, durſt not even ſpeak of it to him.

But the intrigues and ſtratagems of the courtier were not the ſole occupations of Potemkin. This ambitious favourite flattered himſelf that he would cauſe the Empreſs to be crowned in Conſtantinople, and deſired it ſtill more ardently than ſhe did, becauſe he wiſhed afterwards to reign there under the name of that Princeſs, and to render himſelf without doubt independent. He reſolved to begin by taking poſſeſſion of the Krimea: but in order to arrive at this, it was neceſſary to be in accord with the Emperor of Germany. He communicated to Catharine the deſign which he had of leaguing himſelf with this Prince. She did not heſitate to approve of it. When he afterwards propoſed it in council, Panin, who was ſtrongly attached to the alliance of Pruſſia, ſaid that there would be great danger in detaching Ruſſia from that power. Notwithſtanding this the plan of Potemkin was adopted. Panin was ſo afflicted at it that he fell ill, and withdrew from the adminiſtration of affairs.

At this period Bezborodko was admitted into the council. Bezborodko had been at firſt ſecretary of Mareſchal Romanzoff, with Zawadoffsky. As well as Zawadoffsky, he had become ſecretary of the cloſet to the Empreſs, but he had not been like him elevated to the poſt of favourite. He was nominated miniſter of the interior. Oſtermann, who, ſince his return from Sweden, occupied the place of vice-chancellor, performed all the duties with which Panin had been long entruſted.

Catharine deſired to have an interview with Joſeph II. The projects which ſhe had juſt adopted required that ſhe ſhould have a conference with that Prince. She begged him then to come and join her in Poland, and immediately took her departure for Mohiloff.

Perhaps it will not be uſeleſs to obſerve, that during her frequent excurſions the Empreſs did not confide to the Grand-duke either the command of the capital, nor the adminiſtration of a ſingle affair. Born generaliſſimo of the Ruſſian armies, he never led a ſingle regiment to battle; and, grand-admiral of the Baltic, he was not permitted once to viſit the fleet at Cronſtadt. Are theſe then the proofs of that maternal affection of which Catharine ſo frequently vaunted?

Panin, to whom the Empreſs uſually delegated the dangerous honour of repreſenting her, had for ſome time retired into the country. There, more overwhelmed with languor and diſcontent than with diſeaſe, and grown out of date rather than old, he was vegetating on the brink of the grave. Field-mareſchal Alexander Michaëlowitz Gallitzin was entruſted upon this occaſion with the command of Peterſburgh.

However, the Empreſs was already at Mohiloff, where Joſeph II. had preceded her. A part of the grandees of Poland repaired thither. The pomp which ſurrounded Catharine, and the luxury of the Poliſh nobles, formed a whimſical contraſt with the ſimplicity

ſimplicity of the dreſs and manners of the Emperor of Germany. That Prince had taken the name of Count de Falkenſtein. He entreated the Empreſs to diſpenſe with all vain etiquette, and all troubleſome ceremony: Catharine joyfully conſented to it.

They had ſeveral ſecret converſations, in which they promiſed to attack the Ottomans in concert, to divide a part of their ſpoils, and to re-eſtabliſh the ancient Greek republics. In order to determine the empire to enter into her views, Catharine conſented to favour the exchange of Bavaria for the Auſtrian Netherlands, with exception of the countries of Namur and Luxemburgh, and ſhe engaged to ſupport it againſt the oppoſition of the King of Pruſſia and the other Princes of the empire. A treaty, ſigned ſome time afterwards at Tzarſko-Zelo, confirmed theſe different promiſes. Catharine invited the Emperor to pay a viſit to Ruſſia; and this Prince, always fond of travelling and information, took the road to Moſcow, whilſt the Empreſs returned directly to Peterſburgh.

Although Catharine was not ignorant of the averſion which the Emperor had for luxury, ſhe gave him entertainments of an extreme magnificence. But feaſts made very little impreſſion on Joſeph II.: what occupied him the moſt was the care of viſiting uſeful eſtabliſhments, and the monuments of the arts. He had ſeen at Moſcow, the Kremlin, the Khitaigorod, the hoſpitals for monks, the library and the archives of the hiſtory of the north, placed in ſuch fine order by the learned Muller. He had ſtopped at Toula to examine the manufactory of ſteel, on which Catharine has ſpared no expenſe, and which perhaps is not inferior, from the beauty of its productions, to the manufactures of England.

He likewiſe viſited all that Peterſburgh and the port of Cronſtadt preſented as objects of curioſity. He examined in detail the arſenals, the dock-yards, the manufactures, and every where received ſome

flattering mark of the attention of the Empreſs. When he entered the academy of ſciences, a volume of geographical charts was preſented to him, among which was found already engraved that of his journey from Vienna to Peterſburgh. At the academy of the arts, he ſaw a collection of coins, on which was his portrait, with an inſcription analagous to his inclination for travelling, and to his character.

At laſt Joſeph II. quitted Ruſſia, equally aſtoniſhed at the mixture of refinement and barbarity which the Ruſſian nation had preſented to his view, and with the grandeur and the weakneſſes of the Empreſs. He could not conceive how a woman, whoſe genius ſeemed to be formed to bring the whole world into ſubjection, ſhould be, in the midſt of her court, the ſlave of two favourites.

A ſhort time after the departure of Joſeph II. the hereditary Prince of Pruſſia arrived at Peterſburgh. His reſidence there had nothing remarkable in it. They gave him, indeed, banquets innumerable; but entertainments were not an extraordinary thing at the court of Ruſſia.

Perceiving that ſo many Princes quitted their ſtates to go and viſit foreign countries, the Empreſs reſolved to ſend the Grand duke on his travels. Accuſtomed to the reſpect and to the moderation of this Prince, ſhe no longer dreaded his abſence; and ſhe flattered herſelf that, in contemplating the heir of her throne, Europe would take a ſtill greater concern in herſelf. The Grand-duke and Dutcheſs traverſed Poland and Auſtria, and repaired to Italy, from whence they returned to Peterſburgh by
A. D. 1781. France and Holland. During the fourteen months that their travels laſted, the Empreſs was not ignorant of any thing which befel them. Almoſt every day a courier was diſpatched to her, to inform her where they were, and what they were doing.

They had undoubtedly as earneſt a deſire to know what

what was going on at Peterſburgh: but the Empreſs did not chuſe that they ſhould receive any information. Brigadier aid-de-camp Bibikoff, who preſumed to brave the will of his ſovereign, was not ſlow of being diſcovered. His letters, addreſſed to Prince Alexander Kourakin, who accompanied the Grand-duke, were intercepted at Riga. They contained minute details, rather too highly ſeaſoned. The various perſonages of the court were there diſtinguiſhed by names ſarcaſtically characteriſtic, and their defects artfully expoſed. Bibikoff was inſtantly condemned to go and repent of his temerity at Aſtrakhan, where he died ſoon after.

BOOK X.

Catharine II. tenders her Mediation toward a Peace between Britain and Holland—Bobrinſky—Protection granted to the Jeſuits—Invaſion of the Krimea—Death of Panin and of Gregory Orloff—Connection between Ruſſia and Perſia, China and Japan—Catharine wiſhes to ſupport the Rights of Joſeph II. to the Navigation of the Scheldt—Death of Lanſkoï—Yermoloff Favourite—League of the Electors—Treaty of Commerce with France—Toleration Dinner—Momonoff ſucceeds Yermoloff—Catharine purchaſes the Libraries of Voltaire and of d'Alembert.

THE armed neutrality already covered the ocean with its flags. The Ruſſian ſquadrons proſecuted their excurſions even all over the Mediterranean. Commerce was effectually protected in all ſeas. The Dutch, who had heſitated to join the naval confederacy, were ſoon made to repent it. The court of London declared war againſt them. The Empreſs however abandoned them not. She knew what

what a reſource they had proved when ſhe was obliged to negotiate loans, and what ſupplies ſhe might ſtill derive from them. She tendered her mediation both to them and to Great Britain. The Dutch accepted it joyfully; England dared not directly to reject it. But the ambitious policy of the cabinet of St. James's, for a long time paſt jealous of the commerce of the Dutch, found means, without giving offence to the Empreſs, to render almoſt uſeleſs her pacific intentions: peace with Holland was the laſt concluded.

The Ruſſians became at length reconciled to the yoke of Catharine: but many of them deteſted it; and without entering into fruitleſs cabals, they madly exerted themſelves to injure the Empreſs by hurting the empire. To that fatal intention we muſt at leaſt aſcribe the conflagrations which deſolated the cities of Moſcow and Peterſburgh. Moſcow beheld her famous Khitaigorod reduced to aſhes, and loſt three millions of roubles. Peterſburgh was for three days ſucceſſively the ſpectator of the burning of her beautiful magazines of Waſſili-Oſtroff, of 200 houſes, and of many ſhips. Both of theſe diſaſters involved the loſs of a great number of lives.

Another calamity, which appears to be the effect not of malignity but of ignorance, was the loſs of two Ruſſian ſhips of the line; the one of which went to pieces on the ſhallows level with the water off the iſles of Hières, and the other on the rocks of the Krimea. Whatever pains had been taken by Peter I. and his ſucceſſors to form good ſeamen, Ruſſia poſſeſſes to this day but very few officers capable of commanding a ſhip of war. But for the Dutch, the Danes, and eſpecially the Engliſh, her ſquadrons durſt hardly venture to navigate out of the Baltic.

A. D. 1782. For a long time paſt, Gregory and Alexis Orloff had retired from court. All of a ſudden they re-appeared, and found themſelves almoſt ſtrangers there. They had both married, and were juſt returned from travelling through France and Italy.

Italy. Gregory, unable to bear the ſight of an all-powerful rival, ſoon abſented himſelf once more.

Bobrinſky about this time returned to Peterſburgh. That beloved ſon, whom the Empreſs had by Gregory Orloff, ſeemed deſtined to attain the firſt dignities of the empire. But the vices which he contracted during his reſidence at the academy of cadets, and on his travels, rendered unprofitable both the tenderneſs of his mother and the attention ſhe had beſtowed on his education.

When Bobrinſky had finiſhed his ſtudies at Leipzig and Lauſanne, Catharine was deſirous of committing the entire charge of him to none but a man whom his underſtanding, his learning and his wiſdom ſhould render worthy of ſuch a truſt. In order to find ſuch a man, ſhe applied to Betzkoï, director of the imperial corps of cadets, and the moſt aſſiduous of flatterers. Betzkoï, who thought of nothing but the advancement of his own family, and who imagined that the natural ſon of Catharine would neceſſarily procure a great fortune to the perſon who might be employed as governor to him, aſſured the Empreſs that lieutenant-colonel Ribas, his ſon-in-law, was the only perſon qualified to fill this ſtation. The Empreſs believed it. Bobrinſky, at that time gentle, modeſt, docile, was put under the tuition of Ribas, and thereby ſoon acquired that depravity of manners, and that inſolence, which could not fail to be communicated to him by the leſſons and the example of his profligate inſtructor.

After ſome time, Catharine wiſhed Bobrinſky to travel through France and England; and had him accompanied by Bouſchouyeff, who, unable to correct his morals, and unwilling to connive at his irregularities, left him at Paris, living with a common proſtitute, and returned alone to Peterſburgh. Bobrinſky was ſuddenly recalled.

Afflicted at the ill conduct of this ſon, the Empreſs ſuffered it long like an indulgent mother. But, though

though ſhe never ſent for him to court, unleſs ſecretly, ſhe was ſenſible that, ſo long as he remained in the imperial reſidence, ſhe would frequently be put to the bluſh on his account, ſhe determined to baniſh him to Revel.

During her excurſion to Mohiloff, the Empreſs had obſerved that the people of White Ruſſia who, for the moſt part, profeſſed the Catholic religion, were very much attached not only to that religion, but to the order of Jeſuits. Reflecting afterwards that there could be little danger in permitting theſe eccleſiaſtics to live in a corner of her vaſt eſtates, whereas, on the contrary, it was advantageous for her to flatter the prejudices of the inhabitants of her new provinces, ſhe named as Catholic archbiſhop of Mohiloff the Lithuanian Seſtrenkewitſch, an ancient officer of huſſars in the ſervice of Pruſſia, and gave him as coadjutor a Jeſuit called Benilawſki. She at the ſame time permitted the eſtabliſhment of a ſeminary of Jeſuits, the direction of which was confided to father Gabriel Denkiewitz, appointed vicar-general of his order.

A. D. 1783. Benilawſki was preſently diſpatched to Rome, in quality of miniſter from the court of Ruſſia. On demanding of Pius VI. the re-eſtabliſhment of the ſociety of Jeſuits, he delivered him, in name of the Empreſs, a letter which, out of deference to the Greek Chriſtians, ſhe diſavowed in the Peterſburgh Gazette, but which was nevertheleſs actually written with her own hand. The following are ſome extracts from it.

"I know that your Holineſs is under conſiderable "embarraſſments; but fear is little ſuitable to your "character. Your dignity cannot harmonize with "politics, ſo long as politics are at variance with re-"ligion. The motives which have induced me to "grant protection to the Jeſuits, are founded in rea-"ſon and juſtice, as well as on the hope of their be-"coming uſeful to my eſtates. This aſſemblage of "peaceable

" peaceable and inoffenſive men ſhall live in my em-
" pire, becauſe, of all Catholic ſocieties, they are the
" beſt qualified to inſtruct my ſubjects, and to inſpire
" them with ſentiments of humanity and the genuine
" principles of the Chriſtian religion.

" I am reſolved to ſupport theſe prieſts againſt
" every power whatever, and, in ſo doing, I only
" perform my duty, as I am their ſovereign, and
" look upon them as faithful, uſeful and innocent
" ſubjects. I am ſo much the more deſirous to ſee
" four of them inveſted with the power of confirming
" at Moſcow and Peterſburgh, that the two Catholic
" churches of thoſe cities are confided to their care.
" Who can tell whether Providence is not going to
" make theſe pious men the inſtruments of effecting
" the union, ſo long deſired, between the Greek and
" Roman churches? Let your Holineſs baniſh all
" apprehenſion, for I am determined to maintain, to
" the full extent of my power, the rights which you
" have received from Jeſus Chriſt."

The ambaſſadors of France and Spain, aſtoniſhed to behold at Rome a miniſter furniſhed with credentials from the court of Ruſſia, employed all their ſkill to diſcover what could be the object of theſe negotiations. Pius VI. himſelf diſcloſed it to them, and demanded what anſwer he ſhould return. Each of them conſulted his own court on the ſubject, neither of which choſe openly to interfere. The Pope tranſmitted to his ambaſſadors a brief, which declared null every thing done contrary to that by which Clement XIV. had ſuppreſſed the Jeſuits But at the ſame time he ſent to Peterſburgh the nuncio Archetti, who conſecrated the archbiſhop of Mohiloff and his coadjutor, and conſented, in name of the Pope, to all that Catharine requeſted. As the reward of Archetti's complaiſance, that Princeſs aſked for him, and obtained, a cardinal's hat. Perhaps the Empreſs laid the greater ſtreſs on this negotiation, that ſhe flattered herſelf all the Jeſuits in Europe and America

rica would flock to White Ruſſia, bringing with them their treaſures and their induſtry. But whatever might have been her expectations, the ſpoils of Paraguay did not find their way to Mohiloff. The Jeſuits were too cunning to put themſelves and their property into the hands of a Princeſs, with whoſe deſpotiſm and inſatiable ambition they were perfectly well acquainted.

The Empreſs at laſt completed the diviſion of her provinces, and they all enjoyed the benefit of the regulations which ſhe began to introduce, in 1776, into the governments of Twer and of Smolenſko. Every year of her reign was diſtinguiſhed by conqueſts or by new inſtitutions. The year 1782 had been ſo by the inauguration of the celebrated ſtatue of Peter I. a production in which the genius of Stephen Falconet ſo happily ſeconded the intentions of Catharine.

The artiſt conceived the deſign of raiſing his ſtatue on a rude unpoliſhed rock, emblematic pedeſtal, which ſhould call back to the minds of poſterity, the ignorance, and the other obſtacles, which the legiſlator of Ruſſia had to ſurmount. An idea ſo new and ſo ſublime could not fail to meet with approbation; and immediately invention was at work to find a rock, the ſize and form of which ſhould correſpond to the boldneſs of the conception. Fortune, which ever looks down on mediocrity, and favours genius, kindly ſtepped in to aſſiſt Falconet. In the middle of a moraſs of Karelia, and at no great diſtance from a bay formed by the Gulf of Finland, was found a rock completely detached, which roſe above the ground 21 feet, and was 42 in length by 34 in breadth. Without delay they fell a-digging all round it, and had the ſatisfaction to find it was not adherent to any other rock. Nay, it was obſerved that no other ſtone whatever could be found in the moraſs, where nature had depoſited it as if by a miracle.

There appeared an abſolute impoſſibility of moving a maſs

a maſs ſo enormous, and the ableſt mechanicians of Peterſburgh could ſuggeſt only inefficient modes of conveyance, when a ſimple blackſmith propoſed to have it placed on very thick grooved frames, filled with cannon balls, and dragged along over theſe balls by capſtans. This method ſucceeded perfectly; and though there be eleven verſtes of moraſs from the ſpot where it was found to Peterſburgh, though it was neceſſary to ſurmount heights, to paſs through miry roads, to croſs rivers, and to embark it on the Neva, it happily reached the place of its deſtination.

What will appear extraordinary, a Greek adventurer of the name of Laſcaris, laid claim to the invention of the Ruſſian blackſmith, as well as to the reward of 7000 roubles promiſed to the inventor. The court, informed of the trick attempted by Laſcaris, left him quietly to enjoy the fruit of his impudence: and the flatterer Betzkoï, who protected him, had the addreſs to ſcreen him from the Empreſs's reſentment.

One ſide of the rock had been ſtruck with lightning; and on applying the chiſel to pare off the damaged parts, it was found, that inſtead of conſiſting of one homogeneous ſubſtance, the whole maſs was only a compoſition of various ſorts of precious ſtones, ſuch as rock-cryſtal, agate, granite, topaz, cornelian, amethyſt; and preſently the fineſt ladies in Peterſburgh were decorated with bracelets, ear-rings and necklaces, hewn out of this aſtoniſhing rock.

Peter I. is repreſented in a Roman dreſs and crowned with laurels. The horſe he rides is in the act of ſpringing, with the fore-feet in the air. With the hinder feet he treads on a ſerpent of braſs, the ſymbol of envy, and this ſerpent, biting the flowing tail of the horſe, ſecures the equilibrium of the whole.

Soon after, Catharine inſtituted the order of St. Wolodimir, as a reward to ſuch of her ſubjects as ſerved the ſtate beneficially in ſome civil employment. She had already created the military order of St.

St. George, the broad ribbon of which is given only to generals who have gained a battle. It muſt be acknowledged, the hope of obtaining this recompenſe has perhaps purchaſed many victories to Ruſſia. Ah! who knew better than Catharine what influence the decorations of vanity exerciſe over the mind of man?

Ruſſia beheld the advantages procured by her laſt conqueſts increaſing with rapidity. Her commerce on the Black Sea was continually making new progreſs. The Ruſſian veſſels paſſed through the channel of the Dardanelles, and purſued their traffic to Aleppo, to Smyrna, or to the ports of Italy. The delicious wines of Greece were imported into White Ruſſia, and thence flowed all over Poland.

Catharine had recently laid the foundations of the city of Kherſon, on the banks of the Dnieper, about ten leagues from Oczakoff, and Potemkin puſhed forward the work with incredible activity. He was frequently ſeen leaving Peterſburgh, flying to the banks of the Dnieper, and re-appearing on thoſe of the Neva, in leſs time than it would have taken an ordinary man to travel to Moſcow. Kherſon already contained 40,000 inhabitants, and from its dock-yards iſſued not only veſſels fit for commerce, but ſhips of war, deſtined to make the Ottoman empire to tremble.

This advantage rekindled the ambition of the Empreſs and of Potemkin. They deſired with equal ardor the conqueſt of a country without which they could not flatter themſelves in the hope of realizing their deſigns on the Ottoman empire, and the poſſeſſion of which was perhaps ſufficient to indemnify them for the non-execution of thoſe deſigns. Catharine began by detaching the Krimea from Turkey; and anon reſolved to invade it. The fertility of this country is ſtill diſputable: but the reſources it ſupplies for armies, and the advantages it preſents for commerce, cannot admit of a doubt. The importance of

of the Krimea in the eyes of Catharine obliges me here to inſert a brief deſcription of it.

The Krimea is a peninſula, to which may be applied what Strabo ſays of Spain, when he compared it to an ox-hide ſtretched out. The Krimea is about 75 leagues in circumference, and ſituated to the ſouth of Peterſburgh, between 51° and 54° eaſt longitude, and about 46° north latitude. The Black Sea waſhes its coaſts to the ſouth and to the weſt; the ſea of Azoph and the ſea of Zabacha ſurround it to the eaſt and to the north. The iſthmus which joins it to the continent is only a little more than a league and a half broad. From this iſthmus, on which is built the fortreſs of Perekop, up to the declivity of Karaſou-Baſar, the country is only one vaſt plain, and riſes imperceptibly up to the ſummit of the declivity, which forms the ſouthern coaſt. The plain which extends from Perekop to the river Salguir is about 25 leagues in length. It contains a great number of marſhes and lakes, which furniſh ſalt to the adjacent provinces of Ruſſia, to the Krimea itſelf, to Natolia and Beſſarabia.

You travel over this whole plain of Perekop without meeting a ſingle ſtream. The inhabitants are under the neceſſity of conſtructing, cloſe by every houſe, reſervoirs for preſerving the rain-water. The earth is there deſtitute of every ſpecies of tree: not a buſh is to be ſeen, not a bramble. The plants cultivated in it do not thrive. This nakedneſs of ſoil, however, is not to be aſcribed to want of fertility, but to the numerous flocks and herds which inceſſantly roam over this part of the Krimea, and devour or deſtroy the vegetables which it produces the inſtant they begin to ſhoot.

The propenſity which the Tartars have for a wandering life, and their averſion to agriculture, leave this country a prey to deſolation. But were it poſſible to fix thoſe tribes and divide the lands among

them, there would be ſtill enough for paſture, and the remainder could produce abundantly all the neceſſaries of life. Were a ſingle Tartar to apply himſelf to agriculture, it would amply ſupply the want of a hundred of his compatriots.

The Krimea may be divided into two parts, the flat country and the mountainous. The former, which extends from Perekop to Koſloff, and from the river Bulganak to Karaſou-Baſar, to Kaffa and to Jeni-Kalé, is covered over with a great number of ſmall villages, the inhabitants of which live on the produce of their cattle and of their ſalt. The mountains are to the ſouth, along the ſhore of the Black-ſea, and extend weſtward in a ſtraight line, from Kaffa up to the vicinity of Balbeck.

The two moſt conſiderable rivers of the Krimea are the Salguir and the Karaſou, which diſcharge themſelves into the ſea of Zabacha. The former has its ſource near Achmetſched, and the latter at Karaſou-Baſar, from whence, after having waſhed a part of the adjacent plain, it falls into the Salguir. All the other rivers and ſprings iſſuing from the chain of mountains which commences at Kaffa, flow toward the north and north-eaſt, except that which, beyond Achmetſched, has its ſource in mount Aktau. The other rivers fall all of them into the Black Sea. Such are the Amna, the Katſcha, the Balbeck, the Kaſoulsky.

The mountains are covered with wood proper for building, and are ſtored with wild animals. The ſoil in the valleys is fertile, and, in order to be productive, needs only the hand of the huſbandman. Gardens are already cultivated there which produce cherries, apricots, peaches, plumbs, almonds, walnuts, pomegranates, figs, quinces, apples, melons and piſtachio nuts. The ſlips of the vine thrive very well on the riſing grounds. The mountains likewiſe contain mines, ſuppoſed to be very rich; but the mountaineers

taineers ſet no value on thoſe advantages: the produce of their flocks and a little bread are ſufficient for their ſubſiſtence.

The iſle of Taman, ſituated at the entrance of the ſtrait which joins the ſea of Azoph to the Black Sea, is rich and very populous.

The Kuban, a vaſt and barren deſert, extending from the frontiers of the Krimea as far as to the foot of Caucaſus, is, as well as little Tartary, but very thinly inhabited.

Such are the countries which Catharine, from the peace of Kainardgi, meant to appropriate to herſelf.

Theſe countries have frequently changed their maſters. Celebrated from the days of the Argonauts, they tempted the ambition of the Greeks, who planted colonies there, built the ancient city of Kherſon, and gave to the peninſula the name of the Tauric-Kherſoneſus. This peninſula was then inhabited by Scythians, whoſe frequent aggreſſions obliged the Greek colonies to implore the aſſiſtance of Mithridates againſt them. That Prince drove the Scythians out of the Tauric-Kherſoneſus, and founded the kingdom of Boſphorus, which comprehended the eaſtern part of the peninſula, and all the country ſince diſtinguiſhed by the name of Kuban.

From the time of Dioclefian, the Sarmatians took poſſeſſion of the Tauric-Kherſoneſus. The Alains ſucceeded the Sarmatians, and were replaced by the Goths, then by the Greek Kings; afterwards this country was ſucceſſively invaded by the Huns, by the Hungarians, by the Koſars, and even, partly, by the Polowitzi.

Toward the cloſe of the 12th century, the Genoeſe conquered all the ports of the Black Sea and the coaſts of the Tauric-Kherſoneſus. Some years after the Mongouls and other Tartars drove the Polowitzi from the territory of which they had made themſelves maſters, and gave to the city of Solgat the name of

Krim, from which the whole peninſula ſpeedily aſſumed that of Krimea.

The Genoeſe ſtill maintained, during a conſiderable period, poſſeſſion of the ports of the Krimea. They kept Kaffa itſelf, down to 1475, the era at which the Turks took it from them, and ſubjected the Tartars of that peninſula. Finally, in 1774, the Ruſſians liberated the Krimea from the Turkiſh yoke, with the deſign to impoſe on it one ſtill heavier.

Catharine had raiſed Sahim-Gherai to the place of Khan, merely in the view of making him the inſtrument of her ambition; ſhe loaded him with careſſes and benefits, only the more eaſily to ſacrifice him. That Prince, of a character gentle, feeble, and replete with candour, was very far from ſuſpecting the deſigns of the Ruſſians. He was fond of the novelties and of the arts of Europe: care was taken to flatter his taſte; he was furniſhed with the incentives to effeminacy and the refinements of luxury. He ſoon learnt to deſpiſe the manners of his own country. He quitted his ancient mode of eating, got a Ruſſian cook, and had his meals ſerved up on plate. Inſtead of mounſing on horſeback like the reſt of his compatriots, he travelled and took his airings in a magnificent berlin. Forgetting his independence and degrading his dignity, he ſolicited rank in the Ruſſian army: the Empreſs appointed him lieutenant-colonel of the Preobraginſky guards, the uniform of which ſhe ſent him with the order of St. Anne. Waſſilitſky and Conſtantinoff, Ruſſian agents, decorated with the title of miniſters plenipotentiary, became by turns the counſellors of this over-confident Prince, and were the perſons who contributed moſt to his deſtruction. The Tartars loudly complained of his manner of living, and of his attachment to Ruſſia; but as he governed them with gentleneſs and equity, they aſcribed his faults to the Chriſtians rather than to himſelf.

The

The Ruſſians, however, ſtood in need of a pretext for introducing their troops into the Krimea. They put in practice every art to foment ſome revolt, which might induce the Khan to implore their aſſiſtance, and throw himſelf entirely into their hands. Money, preſents, counſels ſecretly diffuſed by their emiſſaries, ſoon ſtirred up enemies to him, even in his own family. Two of his brothers, one of whom, named Batti-Gherai, was governor of the Kuban, attempted to ſurpriſe him in the city of Kaffa, where he reſided, and obliged him to flee for refuge to Taganrok. Immediately a Ruſſian army marched to ſupport him. Potemkin himſelf flew to his aſſiſtance, and his name was ſufficient to overawe Batti-Gherai, who ſent him word that he voluntarily laid down the power he had aſſumed.

The Khan Sahim-Gherai upon this re-entered the Krimea, and having aſſembled the greateſt part of the Tartar chiefs, delivered up to them thirteen of the rebel ringleaders, who were inſtantly put to death. He then ſaid:—"Here are my two brothers and my-"ſelf: which of us do you wiſh ſhould govern you? "Name him without reſerve: I promiſe to ſubſcribe "to your choice." All the Tartars ſwore they would have no one but Sahim-Gherai.

This accommodation was not perhaps quite conſonant to the intentions of the court of Peterſburgh; but let the Tartars have taken whatever reſolution they would, Catharine's diſpoſitions were already made: the Krimea was at any rate to be invaded.

The Empreſs at firſt reinforced her armies in Poland and in the Ukraine, and made every preparation which could have been warranted by an actual declaration of war. She next gave it in charge to her miniſter at Conſtantinople to inſiſt on advantages much more extenſive than what had been ſtipulated in treaties, and to demand a promiſe of the divan, that, whatever might in future be the fate of the Krimea, the Porte ſhould not intermeddle. She

went farther, ſhe perſuaded the imprudent Sahim-Gherai to demand the ceſſion of Oczakoff.

The divan was rouſed to indignation at all theſe pretenſions: but, feeble and diſunited, affected a reſolution to go to war, yet continued to murmur inſtead of arming. A baſhaw however was diſpatched to take poſſeſſion of the iſle of Taman. Sahim-Gherai, at the inſtigation of the Ruſſians, ſummoned the baſhaw to retire. Inſtead of obeying, the irritated baſhaw ordered the head of the Khan's meſſenger to be cut off. The Ruſſians, under pretence of intending to avenge that Prince, demanded of him a paſſage for their troops to go and attack the Turks; and ſcarcely had they entered his territory when, inſtead of marching to Taman, they fell back, and ſpread over the whole peninſula, of which they eaſily acquired poſſeſſion. General Balmain ſurprized Kaffa, where the Khan was, and obliged the Imans, the Myrzas, and the other Tartarian chiefs, to take an oath of ſubmiſſion to the Empreſs.

While this was going on, General Souwaroff ſubjected the Tartars of the Kuban and the Budziak. Potemkin, who had penetrated beyond the Kuban, received the homage of the Sultan Batti-Gherai, and of the roving hordes which traverſe thoſe vaſt countries. The Ruſſians continued for ſome time to flatter the Khan, and promiſed him a penſion of 800,000 roubles. But that Prince and his country remained notwithſtanding under the yoke of Ruſſia.

Although this invaſion, executed in violation of all the rights of nations, and ſheltered under the ſacred names of vindictive juſtice, and of protecting friendſhip, had not excited the Ottoman indolence to have recourſe to arms, Catharine nevertheleſs publiſhed an inſulting manifeſto, to juſtify in the eyes of Europe the plunder committed on the unfortunate Sahim-Gherai, and to accuſe the Turks of having broken the treaty of Kaïnardgi, which ſhe herſelf alone had juſt infringed with an audacity ſo perfidious.

This

This piece is too curious not to merit the inſertion of a few extracts from it in this place.

"Our laſt war againſt the Ottoman empire," ſays the Empreſs, "having been accompanied by the moſt "ſignal ſucceſſes, we have certainly acquired the right "to unite the Krimea to our empire. But we did "not heſitate to ſacrifice that conqueſt, and many "others, to the ardent deſire of re-eſtabliſhing the "public tranquillity, and of ſecuring a good under-"ſtanding and friendſhip between our court and the "Ottoman Porte. This was the motive which de-"termined us to ſtipulate the liberty and indepen-"dence of the Tartars, whom our arms had ſubdued, "hoping thus to remove for ever all cauſe of diſſen-"tion and coldneſs between Ruſſia and the Ottoman "Porte.

"However great the ſacrifices we have made, and "the efforts we have employed to realize our hopes, "we ſoon beheld, with extreme regret, thoſe hopes "diminiſhed. The reſtleſſneſs natural to the Tartars, "fomented by inſinuations, the ſource of which we "are well acquainted with, is the cauſe of their eaſily "falling into a ſnare laid by the hands which had "ſown among them trouble and diviſion, in ſuch a "manner that they have been making efforts to "weaken and to pull down the edifice which our be-"neficent exertions had reared for their happineſs, by "procuring for them liberty and independence, un-"der the authority of a chief elected by themſelves.

"The love of peace enabled us to find in our own "conduct a ſufficient recompenſe for the great ex-"penditure we had made. But we have ſoon been "obliged to reſort to different meaſures, by the re-"volt which laſt year took place in the Krimea, and "the encouragement it received from the ſame quar-"ter as the firſt. We have, in conſequence, been "under the neceſſity of recurring to conſiderable ar-"maments, and have ordered our troops to march

" into the Krimea and Kuban, where their preſence " was become indiſpenſable to the preſervation of " tranquillity and good order in the countries adja- " cent.——The neceſſity to which we are ſubjected " of continuing always armed, not only involves us " in great expenſe, but expoſes our troops to inevi- " table and continual fatigues.——

" The loſs of men is incalculable; we ſhall not " therefore undertake to eſtimate it. But the loſs in " money, according to the moſt moderate calculation, " muſt be reckoned at more than 12,000,000 of rou- " bles.——Animated by a ſincere deſire of confirming " and maintaining the laſt peace concluded with the " Porte, by preventing the continual diſputes which " the affairs of the Krimea produce, we believe it to be " a duty which we owe both to ourſelf and to the ſe- " curity of our empire, that we take, once for all, the " firm reſolution of putting an end to the troubles of " the Krimea. We, accordingly, unite to our empire " the peninſula of the Krimea, the iſle of Taman and " the whole of the Kuban, as a reaſonable indemni- " fication for the loſſes we have ſuſtained, and the " expenſes we have incurred in maintaining peace " and felicity."

In the cloſe of her manifeſto, the Empreſs promiſes to allow the Tartars the free exerciſe of their religious worſhip, and invites them to imitate the ſubmiſſion, the zeal and the fidelity of the nations which had long enjoyed the happineſs of living under her government. But moſt of the Tartars, little affected by the promiſes and exhortations of Catharine, reſolved to ſhake off the yoke which her generals had juſt impoſed. Potemkin, informed of their deſign, gave orders to Prince Prozoroffſky to ſeize the ring-leaders, and inſtantly put them to death. Prozoroffſky had the noble firmneſs to reply, that he was not the proper perſon to commit an aſſaſſination. On this Potemkin iſſued his orders to General Paul Potemkin,

temkin, his own couſin, who cauſed 30,000 Tartars of both ſexes and of every age to be butchered in cold blood.

The Porte, little practiced in the art of reaſoning, wiſhed nevertheleſs to anſwer Catharine's manifeſto. The pen of a Chriſtian was employed for this purpoſe, who, in expoſing the injuſtice of that Princeſs's pretenſions and the perfidiouſneſs of her conduct, extolled the probity of the followers of Mahomet in a manner much more convincing than the moſt eloquent of their Imans could have done. But of what avail are writings of this ſort? The cauſe of ſovereigns is pleaded effectually only by the ſword; and for a long time the Turks feared to employ it, or uſed it too unſkilfully againſt the Ruſſians. They durſt not even refuſe to ſign a treaty of alliance and commerce which the Empreſs ordered to be preſented to them by Bulgakoff, her miniſter at Conſtantinople, a treaty which formally contradicted the reply which they had publiſhed to her manifeſto.

Notwithſtanding all this, decidedly reſolved on a ſpeedy declaration of war againſt the Turks, and apprehenſive that Guſtavus III. might avail himſelf of the remoteneſs of the Ruſſian armies to attack her, Catharine formed the deſign of concluding a ſecret compact with that Prince. She had already ſeveral times made overtures to this effect, both through his miniſter at Peterſburgh and her own at Stockholm: but the attempt had hitherto proved ineffectual. She reſolved to have a ſecond interview with the Swediſh monarch.

The meeting took place at Friderikſham, a ſmall city very well fortified on the Gulph of Finland, and the laſt then poſſeſſed by the Ruſſians on the ſide of Sweden. Guſtavus wiſhed at firſt to decline this rendezvous, under pretence that he had diſlocated his arm by a fall from his horſe. Catharine ſent him word, that if he was unable to travel into Finland, ſhe would pay him a viſit at Stockholm. The Swediſh

Swediſh monarch, who was ſenſible that ſuch a viſit to his capital would be ruinous to him, immediately haſtened to Friderikſham; but all the time he reſided there, always took care to have his arm ſupported in a ſcarf. The Empreſs arrived at Friderikſham in a yacht. She was attended by Count Ivan Tſchernicheff, her miniſter Bezborodko, the maſter of the horſe Nariſchkin, the favourite Lanſkoï, and by ſeveral ladies of the court, among the reſt was the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff, who for ſome time paſt ſeemed to have regained the friendſhip of Catharine.

Guſtavus had in his retinue the Count de Kreutz, his prime miniſter, General Armfeld, Munck, and ſeveral other officers.

The Empreſs had given orders to hire two contiguous houſes, which ſhe took care to have furniſhed in a very elegant ſtyle, with a gallery of communication between them. She occupied the one herſelf; the other was for the accommodation of the King of Sweden: ſo that during the four days theſe two ſovereigns reſided at Friderikſham, they had it in their power to converſe with perfect freedom at all hours.

The peace had been ſigned one month before: there no longer exiſted a reaſon why the neutrality of the north ſhould continue under arms. The Empreſs however wiſhed it ſhould be ſo: Guſtavus gave his conſent. She afterwards propoſed to that Prince to remain neutral during the war with the Turks, and aſſured him that, on the termination of this war, ſhe would aſſiſt him in making the conqueſt of Norway. Flattered with this hope, Guſtavus promiſed every thing the Empreſs wiſhed. Upon this, Catharine affecting, with ſingular grace and addreſs, a determination to defray the expenſe of his journey, made him a preſent of 200,000 roubles, which he had not the reſolution to refuſe. They ſeparated very much ſatisfied with each other, and with an imagination fired by their ſeveral projects of conqueſt.

Before ſhe left Friderikſham, the Empreſs gave her

her portrait to the Count de Kreutz, and laviſhed her magnificence on the Swediſh officers. Guſtavus likewiſe made many preſents to the Ruſſian miniſters and courtiers. He decorated the favourite Lanſkoï with the grand croſs of the order of the Polar Star, and on his return to Sweden ſent the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff a diploma of member of the academy at Stockholm.

The Porte was ſo much the leſs diſpoſed to engage in war, that the preparations of the Ruſſians ſeemed infallibly to enſure them ſucceſs. Seventy thouſand men, under the command of Potemkin, were aſſembled on the frontiers of the Krimea. Repnin was at the head of forty thouſand, ready to ſupport Potemkin. Mareſchal Romanzoff, with a third army, had his head-quarters at Kiœff. The ſquadrons of the Black Sea were equipped, and ten ſhips of the line with ſeveral frigates only waited the ſignal to paſs from the Baltic to the Mediterranean.

A. D. 1784. The court of London, provoked that Ruſſia had appeared at the head of the armed neutrality, employed every effort, but in vain, to induce the divan to have recourſe to arms. France and Auſtria prevented it. Inſtead of fighting, negotiations were ſet on foot. By a new treaty, ſigned at Conſtantinople, between the Ruſſian plenipotentiary Bulgakoff, and the miniſters of the Grand-ſignor, the Empreſs retained the ſovereignty of the Krimea, of the iſland of Taman, and of great part of the Kuban; and the Turks admitted the right which ſhe inconteſtably claimed to the empire of the Black Sea, and to the paſſage of the Dardanelles. Catharine thus acquired, without ſtriking a blow, a vaſt extent of territory, and a million and a half of new ſubjects. She reſtored their ancient names to the Krimea and the Kuban. The former of theſe countries ſhe called the Tauride, and the other Caucaſus.

The example of Sahim-Gherai ought to have ſerved as a warning to other princes not to reſort to the cruel

cruel protection of Ruſſia. But the preſents of Potemkin blinded ſome of them. Heraclius, ſovereign of the Kertalinia and of Kachett, who had formerly borne arms under the renowned Thamas-Kouli-Khan, and fought in the laſt war of the Ruſſians againſt the Turks, did homage to Catharine for his eſtates.

Salomon, ſultan of Mingrelia, was likewiſe perſecuted by the careſſing intrigues and the perfidious kindneſs of the Empreſs and of the favourite. Lofty and brave, he aimed, at firſt, at reſting his independence on his own cimeter alone; but a globe of gold, a crown, and a profuſion of gaudy promiſes, reduced him to ſervitude. He died ſoon after. Sultan David, his ſon, could imitate his weakneſs only.

Potemkin did not invade the country of the Zaporavians; but, always uniting craft to force, he removed 60,000 of his koſacs, and tranſplanted them into the territories of the Nogaïs, and on the coaſts of the ſea of Azoph and of the Black Sea, where he eſtabliſhed the colonies which to this day ſupply mariners to the ſquadrons of theſe ſeas, and particularly to the fleet of row-boats of Nicolaëff.

In extending the empire of his ſovereign, Potemkin was by no means negligent of his own intereſt. Poſſeſſed of immenſe landed eſtates in different provinces of Ruſſia, he acquired, beſides, a great part of the rich domains which the Princes Lubomirſky and Sapieha had in Podolia and Lithuania. His enemies imagined he was meditating a retreat into Poland: but, whatever might have been his intention, never did his favour ſeem to reſt on a more ſure foundation; never had he been attached to Ruſſia by ſo many titles and employments. The Empreſs decorated him with the ſurname of Tauritcheſky, and gave him the government of the Tauride, with the rank of lord high-admiral of the Black Sea.

In proportion as the number of thoſe who had ſerved her was diminiſhed, Catharine ought undoubtedly to have been more profoundly ſenſible of their value.

value. She had juſt loſt two of the moſt diſtinguiſhed leaders in the conſpiracy which placed her on the throne. Panin and Gregory Orloff died at nearly the ſame time, the one at Peterſburgh, the other at Moſcow.

Panin died of envy and languor, fatal maladies, which diſgraced miniſters ſeldom ſurvive. From the inſtant Potemkin contradicted him in council, and turned him out of the direction of affairs, he fell into a ſtate of habitual depreſſion, and found no refuge but in death.

A deſtiny ſtill more tremendous was reſerved for Gregory Orloff. Though he continued to be under an accumulation of benefits from the Empreſs, and was the huſband of a young and beautiful woman, the ſight of new favourites was inſupportable to him. He paſſed by far the greateſt part of the laſt years of his life in travelling. In 1782 he ſtopped at Lauſanne, where he ſaw his wife breathe her laſt. This loſs plunged him into a deep melancholy. He immediately returned to court, but only to exhibit the mournful ſpectacle of mental derangement. Sometimes he gave vent to exceſſive gaiety, which expoſed him to the deriſion of the courtiers: ſometimes the reproaches he thundered out againſt the Empreſs, made all who heard him to ſhudder, and ſunk herſelf in ſorrow and diſquietude. At laſt, it was found neceſſary to oblige him to retire to Moſcow. There his remorſe awoke with redoubled fury. The bloody ſhade of Peter III. purſued him wherever he went; he ſaw it inceſſantly calling for vengeance, and periſhed in deſpair.

During the early period of his favour Gregory Orloff had received from the Empreſs a medallion ſet with brilliants, her own portrait, which he wore at his button-hole. After the death of Gregory, Wolodimer Orloff came to Peterſburgh, to preſent this portrait to the ſovereign, who returned it to him, with orders to carry it to his brother Alexis, whom

ſhe

ſhe permitted to wear it. But was not this portrait, as the caſe ſtood, a fatal preſent? Could it fail to call to remembrance enormities too long left unpuniſhed? Was it poſſible then for that Alexis to eſcape remorſe, who ſtill ſurvives the commiſſion of ſo many crimes?

The vicinity of the Caſpian Sea invites the Ruſſians to a commercial intercourſe with Perſia, and, through Perſia, they can eaſily extend it to India. They have accordingly long availed themſelves of this advantage. The Czar Alexis Michaëlowitz, who might be ſaid to have prepared the reign of his ſon Peter I. as Philippa had prepared that of Alexander, ordered his Dutch carpenters to build ſome ſmall veſſels, with which he protected the commerce carried on by his ſubjects with the inhabitants of the provinces of Guilan and of Mazanderan.

Peter I. whoſe genius favoured every thing that was great and uſeful, farther extended thoſe relations, and eſtabliſhed a factory at Schamachia, an opulent and trading city, which ſome allege to have been the ancient reſidence of Cyrus. Perſia was at that time a prey to a ſwarm of petty rebellious tyrants, who, taking advantage of the quarrels of the uſurper Mahmoud and of the feeble Schah-Huſſein, plundered and deſtroyed thoſe beautiful countries. The Leſguis Tartars, who are the ancient Albaneſe, deſcended from Caucaſus, took poſſeſſion of Samachia, and maſſacred the Ruſſian merchants with the other inhabitants.

Provoked at this outrage, Peter demanded reparation: they either would not, or were unable to ſatisfy him. From that time he reſolved to avenge himſelf, and to profit by the troubles of Perſia to lay hold of the whole weſtern coaſt of the Caſpian Sea. On that ſea he embarked, advanced as far as the city of Andreoff, diſembarked, and proceeded to lay ſiege to Derbent, the capital of the Dagheſtan. Derbent, a long and fortified city, one of the gates whereof was iron,

iron, from which it derives the name, did not make more reſiſtance then, than it has done in more modern times, when Valerian Zouboff attacked it. The armies of Peter I. triumphed not only at Derbent, but before the wealthy city of Bakhou, and three provinces remained ſubject to the Ruſſians, till the moment that Biren reſtored them to Thamas-Kouli-Khan.

The interruption of the commerce of the Ruſſians with Perſia was of conſiderable duration. It was not till the year 1744 that the Engliſh revived it. They obtained from the Empreſs Elizabeth liberty to navigate on the Caſpian Sea. They derived through that channel a great quantity of beautiful ſilk, of cotton, and of other valuable commodities which Perſia produces. They eſtabliſhed a factory at Meſchek; they travelled in caravans to trade as far as Grand-Tartary, to Samarkand and Bokhara.

The Britiſh flag, diſplayed on the Caſpian Sea, was a mortification to Thamas-Kouli-Khan. Unable to lower it, that ingenious tyrant undertook to deprive the Ruſſians of its ſupport. He gained over the captains Elton and Woodrow, who commanded the Britiſh ſhips, and they entered into his ſervice.

Elton, raiſed to the rank of Admiral to Thamas-Kouli-Khan, had ſhips of war conſtructed, with which he obliged the Ruſſians to ſalute the Perſian flag, and to acknowledge its ſuperiority. The Empreſs Elizabeth, informed of this, immediately revoked the permiſſion ſhe had granted to the Engliſh company, and endeavoured to avenge herſelf of Thamas-Kouli-Khan, by exciting enemies againſt him among his own ſoldiery. This conqueror, while making preparations to invade Ruſſia, was ſoon after aſſaſſinated in his ſleep, in the plain of Mogan.

From that time, the Perſians, involved in freſh troubles, ſcarcely paid any farther attention to the navigation of the Caſpian Sea, and all their ſhips were deſtroyed by the Ruſſians.

By

By the treaty of commerce renewed with the court of London in 1766, Catharine reſtored to the Engliſh the privileges withdrawn from them by Elizabeth. But, whether from want of confidence, or from the embarraſſments ſecretly thrown in their way, they have not been able to turn that trade to ſuch good account as their firſt company did.

Ruſſia is therefore almoſt the only nation which derives very conſiderable benefit from the trade of the Caſpian Sea. With a hundred veſſels of from forty to fourſcore tons burthen, they go in queſt of the ſilk and cotton of Guilan, the carpets and beautiful ſtuffs of the other provinces, and carry in exchange to the Perſians, iron, ſteel, colours and furs of various kinds.

Independently of this traffic, the Ruſſians carry on a very profitable fiſhery in the Caſpian Sea. There they catch the ſchmaï, a fiſh reſembling the herring, and the loſſas, far more delicate than the roach of the ocean. They fiſh eſpecially for ſeals, which they take in great quantities. The ſkins are ſold to the Engliſh and Dutch, and the fat is employed in the manufacture of ſoap. The rivers of Perſia ſupply the Ruſſians with great abundance of thoſe fiſhes from which the kaviar is extracted, an object of vaſt commercial importance, and without which ſcarcely a repaſt is enjoyed all over the north.

The ſquadron which Catharine kept up on the Caſpian Sea, was built of the oak of Kavan, and conſiſted of three frigates, five corvettes and a gun-boat. Theſe veſſels inceſſantly cruized along the coaſts of Perſia, and burnt every ſhip they met, and even timber for ſhip-building. Their commanders had beſides poſitive orders to ſow diviſion among the Khans, and always to ſupport the more feeble againſt the ſtronger. This mode of proceeding had been highly ſerviceable to the Empreſs. It had promoted her views on Poland and on the Krimea too ſucceſsfully to be diſpenſed with in favour of the Perſians.

In

In 1781, this Princeſs reſolved to execute the project conceived by Peter I. againſt Perſia. She meant to extend her dominion along the weſtern ſhore of the Caſpian Sea. The diſſentions which continued to deſolate thoſe beautiful regions ſeemed favourable to her ambition. But ſhe met with obſtacles ſhe did not expect.

The moſt powerful of the tyrants of Perſia, at that time, was the Khan Aga-Mahmed. Deſcended from one of the firſt families of the Koraſſan, Aga-Mahmed was ſtill in the cradle, when his father and brothers were butchered by order of Thamas-Kouli Khan. The conqueror ſatisfied himſelf with employing againſt this infant precautions which effectually incapacitated him to perpetuate his race: but Aga-Mahmed nevertheleſs became, like the eunuch Narſes, a warrior and a ſtateſman.

After the death of Thamas-Kouli-Khan, the mother of Aga-Mahmed married again, and had ſeveral other children, who proved their brother's greateſt enemies. One of them, Mourtouza-Kouli-Khan, imagining he could derive powerful ſuccours from Ruſſia, expreſſed a ſervile devotedneſs to that power, which ſupported while it deſpiſed him. But in defiance of Mourtouza, in defiance of Aboulfat, ſon of the laſt regent Kerim-Khan, finally, in defiance of all his rivals, Aga-Mahmed had the ability to make himſelf maſter of Guilan, of Mazanderan, of Schirvan, and of ſeveral other provinces.

The Empreſs gave orders to Count Woïnowitſch, commander of her ſquadron on the Caſpian Sea, to employ every poſſible exertion to form ſome ſettlements on the coaſt of Perſia. Woïnowitſch ſet out with a body of troops, and a proper ſupply of ammunition, and repaired to Aſterabath, the beſt port of Mazanderan, which is the ancient country of the Mardi. Aga-Mahmed then reſided at Ferabath. Woïnowitſch applied to him for permiſſion to eſtabliſh a factory on the coaſt. The Khan, who did not per-

haps think himſelf in a condition to repel the Ruſſians by force of arms, or who preferred ſtratagem to fighting, affected compliance with the requeſt of Woïnowitſch.

The Ruſſians on this loſt no time in conſtructing a fortreſs, on which they mounted eighteen pieces of cannon. Aga-Mahmed received information of it, and, always a maſter in the art of diſſimulation, haſtened to take his revenge. He came to view the fortreſs, admired the conſtruction, extolled the activity of the Ruſſians, and invited himſelf and retinue to dine on board the frigate of Woïnowitſch.

After having paſſed that day in extreme gaiety, and expreſſed much friendſhip for the Ruſſians, the Khan engaged them to come and dine, in their turn, at a country palace he had in the mountains. Thither they went the day after; but the moment they arrived Aga-Mahmed ordered them to be put in irons. He, at the ſame time, threatened Woïnowitſch with the loſs of his head, and the threat extended to all his officers, unleſs the fortreſs was forthwith razed to the ground.

Woïnowitſch, who clearly perceived that reſiſtance would be uſeleſs, ſent orders to the commandant of the fort to have it demoliſhed. The captain Nikita Baſchkakoff, who carried theſe orders to the commanding officer, was led between two Perſian cavaliers, and flogged the whole length of the road. The cannons were re-ſhipped and the wall levelled. Aga-Mahmed then ordered the Ruſſian officers into his preſence: and, not contented with pouring out on them a torrent of abuſe and contempt, he gave up the younger part of them to his ſlaves. Thoſe barbarians proceeded to commit outrages upon their perſons which modeſty permits not to deſcribe, and ſo much the more atrocious that they were inflicted by orders from a eunuch. The Ruſſians were afterwards ſent down to the ſhore.

The court of Peterſburgh avenged this inſult only by

by continuing to foment the diſſenſions of Perſia. A rival was brought on the field to Aga-Mahmed, who ſoon became the moſt formidable of his enemies, and ſtripped him of the province of Guilan. This conqueror, Ghedahed-Khan by name, taking advantage of the arms and ammunition ſecretly conveyed to him by the Ruſſians, ſeemed to be on the point of diveſting Aga-Mahmed of all his power. But this laſt ſucceeded in corrupting the Ruſſian agent Tomanoffsky and the conſul Skilitch, who both reſided at Zinzili. They betrayed Ghedahed-Khan, and put him into the hands of Aga-Mahmed, who ordered his head to be ſtruck off, and re-acquired calm poſſeſſion of Guilan.

Ruſſia at the ſame time openly profeſſed to take no part whatever in theſe quarrels. Not long after the death of Ghedahed-Khan, Potemkin diſpatched one of his officers with a complimentary meſſage to Aga-Mahmed, who was then at Riatſch, the capital of Guilan. He farther recommended to him to ſtudy the Khan's character, and to ſound his intentions with reſpect to Ruſſia. The officer repaired to Riatſch, and eaſily obtained an audience of Aga-Mahmed; but on converſing with him, he perceived him to aſſume a gloomy and penſive air, which excited a ſuſpicion of ſome ſiniſter deſign. On this he artfully remarked to him, that, though in the ſervice of Ruſſia, he was by birth an Engliſhman, and that his nation was powerfully attached to the Perſians, with whom they carried on a very extenſive commerce in the Gulf of Baſſora. The Khan immediately reſumed a ſmiling aſpect, ſpoke to the envoy in a very gentle tone of voice, and diſmiſſed him with valuable preſents.

Theſe reciprocal expreſſions of a feigned benevolence were ſucceeded by a prompt aggreſſion. Mourtouza-Kouli-Khan, ſupported by the Ruſſians, attempted a freſh invaſion of Guilan, but was repulſed by the Khan Soliman, who commanded there in ab-

ſence of Aga-Mahmed, and this laſt ſpeedily overran all Perſia and Georgia. His ambition did not ſtop here. Heir of the projects of the redoubted Scha-Nadir, he intended to ſeize the province of Aſtrakhan, and exclude the Ruſſians from the Caſpian Sea. But could he have done this without the cooperation of the Turks? and do the Turks ever know what it is to act firmly in concert with an ally, in the view of galling their enemies?

With an intention to diſcover the deſigns of the court of Peterſburgh, Aga-Mahmed ſent an ambaſſador thither, whom, in contempt of the law of nations, and to the diſgrace of Catharine, Potemkin relegated to the city of Krementſchouk, on the Dnieper, and he was ſtill there in 1790, in a ſtate of the moſt abject miſery, but high-ſpirited, and threatening Ruſſia with the vengeance of his maſter.

The commerce of the Ruſſians with China was not leſs beneficial than that of the Caſpian Sea. For about 130 years paſt the Siberians and the Boukhares had formed caravans which, croſſing Chineſe Tartary, purſued their traffic as far as Pekin. Their exports conſiſted chiefly of furs, and they received in exchange gold, ſilver, jewellery, ſtuffs, tea, and all the commodities invented by the Chineſe, and which their induſtry, in many reſpects whimſical, has carried to ſuch high perfection.

The arrogance and ill behaviour of the Ruſſians ſhut them out of China. They were no longer allowed to trade except on the frontiers of that empire; their commerce was frequently interrupted and renewed; at laſt, ſome time before the death of the Empreſs Elizabeth, freſh quarrels ſubjected it to a farther ſuſpenſion.

Catharine perceived the neceſſity of reviving this commerce. She made a propoſal to this effect to the Emperor of China. That Prince acceded to it; and, in 1770, the ſmall city of Kiachka became the rendezvous of the Ruſſian and Chineſe merchants.

The

The Empreſs ſent an archimandrite from Moſcow, with ſeveral young Ruſſians, to Pekin, for the purpoſe of ſtudying the Chineſe language. She at the ſame time gave orders to build, at convenient diſtances, cities and villages up to the frontiers of China, and gave encouragement to people to ſettle in them, but almoſt all of them fell victims to the rapacity of Ruſſian governors.

Nevertheleſs, the aſylum which the Chineſe had granted to the Tourgouths who abandoned the banks of the Volga, and the breach of faith diſplayed by the Ruſſians in chaſtiſing thoſe of their compatriots who made encroachments on the territory of the Chineſe, ſtill diſturbed the harmony of the two courts, and became for ſome time the ſubject of a correſpondence, which ſerved only to irritate them againſt each other. At length, Catharine diſpatched an envoy to Pekin; and the colao Soun-ta-zhin and a Ruſſian miniſter having met at Kiachka, they concluded a new agreement, which reſtored a good underſtanding and commercial intercourſe between the two nations.

Catharine likewiſe encouraged the maritime expeditions of Kamtſchatka. After the example of the Engliſh who ſail in queſt of peltry to the north-weſt coaſt of America, ſeveral Ruſſian ſhips repaired to China, and opened a channel of lucrative commerce.

There was ſtill another country with which Catharine wiſhed to make a commercial arrangement. The northern coaſts of Ruſſia, and particularly her ſettlements in ſeveral iſlands of the Archipelago of the north, brought her into contact with Japan. Chance too was propitious to the Empreſs's deſign.

Some Japaneſe had ſuffered ſhipwreck in thoſe unfrequented ſeas, and ſaved themſelves on the coaſts of Ruſſia. An inhabitant of Irkoutſk, named Laxmann, carried one of them to Peterſburgh. Catharine gave him a moſt gracious reception, and put him under the care of maſters, who, by inſtructing him in the Ruſſian and Tartar languages, acquired the Ja-

paneſe ſufficiently to enable her to form a commercial intercourſe. This enterpriſe has not yet been crowned with great ſucceſs; but there is no room to doubt that Ruſſia will ſooner or later have a ſhare of the great profits which Holland now derives from her trade with Japan.

Though Catharine extended her vaſt dominion in all directions, though ſhe appropriated to herſelf in peace as in war, all the eſtates which ſhe could with impunity invade, ſhe beheld not with leſs jealouſy the increaſing power of her rivals. She had long been, in a particular manner, hurt at both the glory of Frederick II. and at the preponderancy he had acquired in Europe. From the firſt partition of Poland, Frederick daily encroached on the rights of the city of Dantzig, and cramped her commerce in ſuch a manner that ſhe was under a kind of neceſſity of either acknowledging his ſovereignty, or of renouncing her trade. Catharine was ſo much the more vexed to ſee Dantzig fall into the hands of the Pruſſians, that the court of Ruſſia had itſelf long conceived a deſign of laying hold of that city, and had been diverted from it merely by the ſecret repreſentations made on the ſubject by the government of France to the chancellor Woronzoff. The magiſtrates of Dantzig were artfully allured by the miniſter Stackelberg to implore Catharine's protection. She immediately wrote to the King of Pruſſia, with an offer of her mediation. This interference retarded for ſome time the invaſion of Dantzig.

Differences of a very oppoſite nature diſturbed another corner of Europe. Joſeph II, wiſhed to reſtore the free navigation of the Scheldt. The Dutch oppoſed it, and employed every effort to engage Frederick to ſupport their ſelfiſh pretenſions by force of arms. Catharine on this declared her reſolution to ſupport the rights of the Emperor of Germany. The Dutch, whoſe cannon had already inſulted the Auſtrian flag, were thereby alarmed at the proſpect of having

having the Baltic ſhut againſt them, and reſorted to negotiation inſtead of going to blows.

While Catharine was ſecuring peace to her empire from abroad, and contributing to the eſtabliſhment of it among other powers, caballing revived in the boſom of her own court. There was not a method which the malecontents left unattempted to arm the Grand-duke againſt his mother, and to irritate the Empreſs againſt her ſon. The Grand-duke uſually paſſed the autumn at Gatſchina, a country retreat about eighteen verſtes diſtant from Tzarſko-Zelo. A report was ſuddenly circulated that he was going to build a city there, and to give liberty to all who ſhould ſettle in it. The Prince was not a little ſurprized to ſee the peaſantry flocking from all parts of the empire, elated with the proſpect of enjoying his benignity. But he had the ſkill to give them a prudent diſmiſſion, and diſſipated a commencement of revolt, of which hope had undoubtedly been entertained that he would be obliged to avail himſelf.

The turn for intrigue and the zeal of Bezborodko rendered him neceſſary to the Empreſs. In ſucceeding Panin as miniſter, he had inherited his opinions. Allied to the Woronzoff family, he was ſecretly oppoſed to Potemkin, who diſdained all his enemies, put them to open defiance, and ſometimes, with tolerable ſucceſs, turned them into ridicule.

Lanſkoï lived on good terms with Potemkin, and became every day dearer to the Empreſs. The education of this favourite had been neglected. Catharine exerted herſelf to remedy this defect. She enriched his mind with knowledge the moſt uſeful, and admired in him the fruits of her own labour. But this ſatisfaction came to a period. Lanſkoï excited Potemkin's jealouſy. Perhaps he failed in paying proper reſpect to that deſpot. He was ſeized with a violent diſtemper, and expired, in the flower of life, in the Empreſs's arms, who laviſhed on him, to the

very laſt moment, every expreſſion of the moſt paſſionate love.

When he ceaſed to breathe, ſhe abandoned herſelf to all the bitterneſs of grief. For ſeveral days ſhe rejected nouriſhment of every kind, and remained three months at her palace at Tzarſko-Zelo without ſtirring abroad. She afterwards reared a very beautiful mauſoleum to Lanſkoï; and more than two years after, her attendants having accidentally conducted her within ſight of that monument, ſhe was ſeen ſuddenly to diſſolve into a flood of tears.

Potemkin undertook to cure Catharine of this exceſs of ſorrow. He was almoſt the only perſon who could penetrate into the ſolitude in which ſhe had buried herſelf. He acquired ſtill more of the aſcendant he had over her; and whether from gratitude, whether from weakneſs, ſhe reſolved, it is ſaid, to unite herſelf to him by indiſſoluble bands, and gave him her hand in ſecret.

Marriage could no more fix the inclinations of Potemkin than thoſe of Catharine. He ſoon thought of liberating himſelf from the duties which that tie impoſed, and of delegating them to a favourite younger and more complaiſant than himſelf.

Every courtier who looked for preferment, wiſhed to ſee the place, left vacant by the death of Lanſkoï, filled up by a perſonage who would ſhare with them the favours annexed to it. The Princeſs d'Aſchkoff employed all her art to procure it for her ſon: her intrigues appeared, for a moment, about to be crowned with ſucceſs. The young Prince d'Aſchkoff was tall, well made, and of a figure adapted to make ſome impreſſion on the heart of the Empreſs. Potemkin, who perceived the engines put in motion to bring it about, took care not to give it an avowed oppoſition, leſt contradiction ſhould whet Catharine's appetite, and determine her choice. Affecting, on the contrary, an inclination to favour young d'Aſchkoff,

A.D. LANSKOI.





Published Feb.y 12.th 1800. by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

koff, he tendered civilities to his family, with whom he had hitherto lived on very indifferent terms. He had the ſkill of catching and mimicking with facility the ridiculous traits of the perſons with whom he was intimate, and did not neglect to point out to Catharine thoſe of the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff and her ſon. The Empreſs was highly diverted at it. Potemkin next day ſent her, one after another, two officers of the guards, Yermoloff and Mononoff, on ſome trifling commiſſion, to give her an opportunity of ſeeing them. Catharine decided in favour of the former.

There happened to be a ball at court. Young d'Aſchkoff diſplayed uncommon magnificence on the occaſion. The courtiers imagined his triumph was at hand, and already treated him with the deference which attaches to the perſon of the favourite. Potemkin redoubled his attentions to the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff. She was ſo well pleaſed with them that, the day after, ſhe wrote him a billet, requeſting he would admit into the number of his aids-de-camp the young Count de Bouttourlin, her nephew. Potemkin maliciouſly replied, that every place of aid-de-camp was filled, and that the laſt had juſt been given away to Lieutenant Yermoloff. Both the name and the perſon who bore it were ſtrange to Princeſs d'Aſchkoff. That very day ſhe learnt to know them, by ſeeing Yermoloff at the hermitage with the Empreſs.

Potemkin had fruſtrated the expectation of Princeſs d'Aſchkoff and her ſon, in the way of amuſement. He employed means daſtardly and cruel to rid himſelf of another rival. Prince Peter Mikaëlowitz Gallitzin, commandant of the troops in garriſon at Moſcow, and diſtinguiſhed by his courage, his parts and his figure, aſpired to the poſt of favourite. This, undoubtedly, was not ſufficient to excite Potemkin's jealouſy: but Gallitzin diſcovered an ambition to rule, and frequently preſumed to expoſe the faults of him who held the reins of government. Potemkin

was

was informed of it, and reſolved to put out of the way a cenſor whom he conſidered as a competitor. He ſoon found an opportunity.

At the time Prince Gallitzin was only colonel, he had been ſo haſty as to ſtrike an officer named Labroff, for ſome neglect of duty. Labroff afterwards retired quietly to his eſtates. General Schepeloff, the huſband of one of Potemkin's nieces, ſent for him to Moſcow, while the court was there, and aſſured him of his uncle's moſt grateful acknowledgments, if he would take a ſignal vengeance on Gallitzin. Labroff inſtantly repaired to Gallitzin's houſe, caned him, and walked away.

A few days after, the Turkiſh ambaſſador was to make his public entry into Moſcow, and, to render the ſpectacle more brilliant, not only was the garriſon ordered out under arms, but a regiment of cavalry was ſent for, of which the Grand-duke was colonel. Potemkin once more employed Schepeloff to inſinuate to the Grand-duke, that he would be to blame if he ſuffered his regiment to take orders from Gallitzin; and the Prince, in fact, declared that he would not permit a corps, diſtinguiſhed by his own name, to be under the command of a diſhonoured officer.

Gallitzin, informed of Schepeloff's practices, ſent him a challenge. The combat began with piſtols, and then they proceeded to decide it ſword in hand. Schepeloff, more robuſt, more agile than Gallitzin, ſprung in upon him, ſeized him forcibly in his arms, and ſtabbed him in ſeveral places. The Prince preſently died of his wounds. His death was conſidered as aſſaſſination.

Frederick II. who looked upon the alliance of Auſtria and Ruſſia as pregnant with danger to Pruſſia, and indeed to all Germany, invited the electors and the other princes of the empire to enter into a league in defence of the Germanic conſtitution. The King of Great Britain, as Elector of Hanover, was one of the

the firſt who entered into the confederation. This proceeding was deeply reſented by the Empreſs and Potemkin.

A. D. 1785. The court of London, deſirous of renewing the treaty of commerce with Ruſſia, ſent, in quality of miniſter plenipotentiary to Peterſburgh, Allan Fitz-Herbert, who joined to the diſadvantage of exiſting circumſtances, the imprudence of attaching himſelf to the party of the Woronzoffs and of Bezborodko. The commerce which unites Britain and Ruſſia is mutually beneficial to the two powers, and Catharine aſſuredly had no wiſh to renounce it: but ſhe was not ſorry to have it in her power to exhibit a proof of her diſpleaſure at the court of London, by delaying the renewal of the treaty.

It may be perhaps neceſſary here to preſent a ſuccinct detail of the particulars whereof the trade between England aud Ruſſia conſiſts. This commerce began in the port of Archangel, which the Engliſh diſcovered, toward the middle of the ſixteenth century, in attempting to find a paſſage to the Indies by the ſeas of the north and of the eaſt. From Archangel they forced their way up the northern Dwina, penetrated over land to Moſcow, and there formed connections which had widely extended when Peter I. made the conqueſt of Livonia, and opened to them the ports of Peterſburgh, Revel, Riga and Narva. From that period downward the commerce of Ruſſia is become one of the moſt lucrative that Britain carries on, and of the higheſt importance to her marine.

The Engliſh carry to Ruſſia the produce of their ſoil, of their manufactures, and of their colonies in both Indies, as well as the wines and brandies of France and Spain, which they purchaſe in the ports of thoſe two ſtates, on which they not only make a very conſiderable profit, but gain beſides the whole benefit of the freight of their ſhipping.

The

The Ruſſians ſupply them, in exchange, with grain, peltry, iron, hemp, pitch, ſhip-timber, and the beautiful maſts without which Europe would be unable to arm thoſe fleets which cover, and ſo frequently ſtain with blood, the face of the ocean. The Engliſh have, beſides, eſtabliſhed at Moſcow, at Thula, at Kaſan, at Aſtrakhan, and in ſome other cities of Ruſſia, factories which carry on a trade in the Caſpian Sea, and in Tartary. In theſe places ſeveral beneficial branches of manufacture flouriſh, becauſe labour is much cheaper there than in England, and their agents conduct the ſeveral proceſſes of ſail and cordage-making, of anchor-forging, both of caſt and hammered iron, as well as of copper. Though entirely paſſive as to Ruſſia, this commerce brings her annually a balance of a million of roubles in time of peace, and of a million and a half in time of war. But of what unſpeakable advantage is it to England! What inexhauſtible reſources does it furniſh her for keeping up her marine, and for inceſſantly extending her connections to every part of the globe!

The French ambaſſador at Conſtantinople had contrived to make the court of Peterſburgh act, almoſt involuntarily, in concert with that of Verſailles. That miniſter had juſt been recalled. Vergennes, who perceived the neceſſity of being on friendly terms with Catharine, had the Count de Segur appointed miniſter plenipotentiary from France to Peterſburgh. This young negotiator was worthy of a miſſion ſo important. He united to the graces of a poliſhed mind, knowledge the moſt extenſive, politeneſs to dignity, and the art of perſuaſion to frankneſs. He could not fail to pleaſe Catharine and to captivate Potemkin, whoſe ſtately bluntneſs always knew how to eſtimate real merit.

Since the time of La Chetardie and l'Hopital no French miniſter had ſucceeded at Peterſburgh. Breteuil, by his ſervile complaiſance, had favoured the intrigues

intrigues of Catharine, who ſoon learnt to hold him in contempt. The inſolence of Beauſſet fatigued that Princeſs, the inſignificant mediocrity of Juigné diſguſted her, and Verac could never acquire the ſmalleſt portion of her confidence, becauſe he ſtammered in ſpeaking to her, on his firſt introduction. Segur repaired the miſchief done by his awkward predeceſſors.

The Empreſs wiſhed to inſpect the celebrated canal of Wiſchenei, which joins the Volga to lake Ilmen, this laſt to lake Ladoga, and conſequently the Caſpian Sea to the Baltic. Potemkin, Yermoloff, Bezborodko, ſeveral others of her court, the Britiſh and French miniſters, and the Imperial ambaſſador, attended her on this excurſion.

One day that the miniſter of France had gone to chat with Potemkin, he found him more than uſually ſoured againſt the court of London. Dextrouſly availing himſelf of the opportunity, Segur made Potemkin ſenſible of the benefit which would reſult to Ruſſia from having a direct commerce with France, inſtead of leaving to the Engliſh all the profits they derive from both of thoſe powers. Potemkin deſired him to prepare a memorial on the ſubject, and give it him in writing, and promiſed to ſpeak to no one of it except to the Empreſs. The miniſter immediately returned to his galley. Finding no perſon there but Count Louis Cobenzel, and Fitz-Herbert, playing together at trictrac, he borrowed the ſtandiſh of this laſt. It was with the pen, then, of the Britiſh miniſter, that he traced the plan of a treaty of commerce between France and Ruſſia. This plan, inſtantly preſented to Potemkin, was communicated to the Empreſs, and obtained her concurrence: it was afterwards faithfully reconveyed to the French miniſter, with directions to deliver it, in the uſual form, to the vice-chancellor Oſtermann.

When this paper was preſented to Oſtermann, who did not know that the contents of it had already been

been approved by the Empreſs and Potemkin, and who was, beſides, entirely devoted to the Engliſh, he told the French miniſter that he durſt not flatter him with the hopes of ſucceſs. The miniſter ſaid not a word. The plan being laid before the council, was immediately adopted; and this paved the way for the commercial treaty between France and England.

Before this treaty was ſigned, Oſtermann and Bezborodko inſiſted that France ſhould give her concurrence to the armed neutrality. This was communicated to the ambaſſador, who conſented to it, provided the court of Peterſburgh would engage to conclude no treaty with any other power but on the ſame condition. This clauſe, levelled at the intereſt and the pride of England, retarded for a long time the renewal of the treaty which Fitz-Herbert ſolicited.

On his departure from France, Segur had expreſſed a hope of being able to form a commercial treaty with Ruſſia. The thing was declared by every body to be impoſſible. When he announced to his court that this treaty was ſet on foot, Vergennes diſpatched a courier to aſſure him it was merely a bait thrown in his way by Ruſſia, and that he was certainly going to betray the dignity of the King. When the courier reached Peterſburgh the treaty was concluded.

Before ſhe returned to Peterſburgh, Catharine repaired to Moſcow, and was leſs unfavourably received than on her preceding viſits to that city. Time had almoſt effaced the memory of her uſurpation. Among thoſe who appeared at court was Goudowitz, whom the extreme ſimplicity of his dreſs rendered eaſily diſtinguiſhable amidſt a crowd of courtiers bedizened with croſſes, jewels, ribbons of chivalry. His preſence alone ſtill brought Peter III. to remembrance.

Romanowna Woronzoff had long been recalled from exile, and was married to Admiral Palenſky. The Empreſs did not invite her to court, but ſent for her daughter, whom ſhe admitted into the number of her maids of honour. Was it from remorſe? Did

it

it proceed from an exceſs of indulgence? Or was it merely that ſhe wiſhed to ſhew a piece of complaiſance to the family of the Woronzoffs?

The Empreſs did not reſt ſatisfied with having appointed a Catholic archbiſhop, and ſettled a ſeminary of Jeſuits at Mohiloff, and of ſupporting Iſlamiſm in the Krimea, ſhe almoſt every year diſplayed to her people a ſolemn example of the protection ſhe granted to freedom of religious worſhip. On the day of the benediction of the waters, her confeſſor received orders to aſſemble the eccleſiaſtics of all perſuaſions, and to do the honours of the table, at a grand feſtival, which Catharine denominated *the dinner of toleration*. There were accordingly this year ſeen collected round the ſame table, the patriarch of Gurgiſtan, the Ruſſian biſhop of Polocſk, Greek archimandrites, a Catholic biſhop, a prior of the ſame religion, an Armenian prieſt, Franciſcans, Jeſuits, Lutheran preachers, Calviniſts, and Anglican vicars.

From the commencement of her reign, Catharine exerted herſelf to diffuſe inſtruction among her ſubjects. She had already founded houſes of education in various cities. She wiſhed to extend ſimilar inſtitutions all over the country. A board of public inſtruction was immediately formed, at the head of which was placed her ancient favourite Zawadoffsky, who, without having reſumed the title of lover to the Empreſs, was nevertheleſs reſtored to favour, and had been appointed ſecretary of the cloſet and preſident of the loan-bank. After him came the learned Epinus, and Paſtoukoff, private ſecretary to the Empreſs. The other members named in the commiſſion were merely inſignificant ciphers of men, whom the protection of Zawadoffsky had got inſerted.

The board was divided reſpecting the mode of inſtituting the Normal ſchools which the empreſs had much at heart. Epinus, who was afraid that ignorance and ſelf-conceit might prevent the execution of this deſign, recommended the adoption of the Auſtrian

Auſtrian inſtitutions, and, after violent oppoſition, his opinion prevailed. He was undoubtedly acquainted with the defects of the Auſtrian method; but he thought it better to eſtabliſh imperfect ſeminaries, and ſuch as were ſuſceptible of improvement by time, than to have none of any kind.

Catharine, upon this, propoſed to Joſeph II. ſeveral queſtions reſpecting the Normal-ſchools of Auſtria. That Prince ſent her Jankowitſch, whom he deemed a proper perſon to give her all the information ſhe needed. Jankowitſch, an ancient village ſchoolmaſter, and deſtitute of talents, had ſcarcely arrived at Peterſburgh when he found himſelf decorated with the title of counſellor of ſtate, appointed director of the Normal-ſchools, and made a commiſſioner of the board of public inſtruction. He became at the ſame time the flatterer of Zawadoffsky and the antagoniſt of Epinus.

Such was the importance which the Empreſs attached to her board of public inſtruction, that ſhe was inceſſantly addreſſing notes to it, with a communication of her ideas as to the means of perfecting the Normal-ſchools. She did more, ſhe graced the leſſons of thoſe ſchools with her preſence.

A learned German, Bachmeſter a Hanoverian, member of the academy of Peterſburgh, agreed to teach geography and hiſtory in the Ruſſian language. This was fortunate; for, perhaps, not a ſingle Ruſſian would have been capable of it. Catharine happened one day to attend, with ſeveral of her court, a lecture delivered by the profeſſor on the population of Siberia. After having liſtened to him with attention, ſhe highly commended his knowledge and his zeal. She afterwards propoſed an objection, to which he replied in a triumphant ſtyle. Zawadoffsky and others of the audience, little accuſtomed to behold a mere ſcholar advance an opinion contrary to that of the ſovereign, expreſſed indignation at ſuch a diſplay of temerity.

But

But the Empreſs ſtopped them ſhort, by acknowledging ſhe had been under a miſtake, and thanked the profeſſor for having ſo ably rectified it. Obſerving, at the ſame time, Zawadoffsky's ill-humour, ſhe took advantage of the moment when he attended her to the carriage, to order him to repeat her thanks to profeſſor Bachmeiſter. This did not hinder the preſident of the board of inſtruction to puniſh, ſome time afterward, the frankneſs of this eſtimable man, by depriving him of his place, and even of the apartments which had been aſſigned to him.

In devoting her attention to public inſtruction, Catharine did not neglect the private tuition of her grandchildren: ſhe herſelf directed it, and devoted to it, every day, a portion of her time. The education of the young Princeſſes was confided to the widow of Lieutenant-general Lieven, a woman of ſuperior underſtanding and of diſtinguiſhed merit. The young Princes were placed under the care of men eſteemed worthy of a truſt ſo important. The Empreſs compoſed for thoſe Princes various eſſays on hiſtory and morals, which have been collected under the title of "Library of the Grand-dukes Alexander "and Conſtantine." She frequently aſſiſted at their leſſons, converſed with the gentlemen who inſtructed them, and called for the rough draughts of their exerciſes, to which ſhe uſually affixed notes, addreſſed ſometimes to the pupils, ſometimes to the maſters. One day that ſhe viſited, while they were abroad, their ſtudying parlour, ſhe perceived that the leſſon of the morning had been on the ſubject of the government of Switzerland, and that the tutor had expreſſed himſelf as a man who had ſenſe to ſet a proper value on the advantages enjoyed by a free people. She wrote with her own hand, at the bottom of the ſheet: —"M. Laharpe, continue your leſſons in this ſtyle; "your ſentiments afford me much pleaſure."

Theſe details will perhaps appear unintereſting; but, juſt as I frankly expoſe the blemiſhes of Catha-

rine's character, I feel myſelf obliged not to overlook her eſtimable qualities. Alas! why have I not more to commemorate!

A. D. 1786. Yermoloff had riſen to the higheſt degree of favour. His imprudence tumbled him headlong from it. This favourite, tall, fair, and of a figure which announced total want of feeling, was replete with jealouſy. He ſoon ſhewed himſelf ungrateful to Potemkin, to whom he owed his fortune. He eagerly ſeized every opportunity of injuring him, and, merely in the view of thwarting him, defended the unfortunate Khan Sahim-Gherai, the payment of whoſe penſion had been moſt ſcandalouſly neglected. The Empreſs, who became every day weaker, where her lovers were concerned, diſcovered a degree of coldneſs toward Potemkin, and alſo to the French ambaſſador, whoſe credit too gave umbrage to Yermoloff.

Bezborodko, Alexander Woronzoff, and ſome other courtiers, contributed, by underhand inſtigations, to ſour the temper of this favourite. Yermoloff had an uncle, named Lewaſchoff, whom Potemkin diſmiſſed with ignominy from the ſervice, in conſequence of a quarrel at play, in which this Lewaſchoff had been on the wrong ſide. Yermoloff complained of it to the Empreſs. Potemkin had to ſtand the brunt of that Princeſs's reproaches, and felt himſelf ſo keenly hurt, that he haughtily ſaid to her:—"Madam, make your choice, and diſmiſs Yermoloff "or me; for ſo long as you keep that white negro, "my foot ſhall not enter your doors." That very day Yermoloff received orders to ſet out on his travels. Momonoff replaced him. Theſe intrigues were known only at court: elſewhere the glory of Catharine was blazoned.

In the courſe of his travels through the interior of Ruſſia, the intelligent Pallas had collected many objects of natural hiſtory, and had formed, by this means, a valuable cabinet. Catharine made a purchaſe

chaſe of it. She had likewiſe purchaſed, ſome years before, the libraries of d'Alembert and of Voltaire.

Different travellers had frequently, by her orders, traverſed both the Archipelago of the north and the moſt remote Ruſſian provinces. She likewiſe diſpatched ſeveral enlightened men, ſome toward the Caucaſus, others to the frontiers of China. But did ſhe not engage in thoſe enterprizes rather from a vain deſire of trumpetting her fame over Europe, than from a real love of the ſciences? Had ſhe poſſeſſed the noble ambition of turning to account the labours of ingenious men, would ſhe not have permitted the publication of all the diſcoveries of the learned, both in the interior, and beyond the limits of her immenſe dominions! Their departure was always emphatically announced; their return never ſhed but a clandeſtine light. Some rays of that light, however, made their eſcape: the envious policy of the court of Ruſſia has not been able to eclipſe them to every eye.

In 1783, Billings, an Engliſhman, went over to Ruſſia, with a great number of his compatriots, whom the Ruſſian miniſter Simolin had juſt engaged at London for the Imperial marine. Being preſented, as well as the reſt of his comrades, to Count Ivan Tcherniſcheff, Billings told him that he had been, in quality of aſſiſtant aſtronomer, employed under Captain Cook, in his laſt voyage round the world. Words always impoſe on the ignorant. Tcherniſcheff, who did not know that the employment of aſtronomer-aſſiſtant conſiſted only in committing to paper the degrees, minutes and ſeconds which the obſerver dictates to him, a taſk which any one may execute who underſtands common ciphering, eagerly imparted this diſcovery to Catharine. This Princeſs immediately reſolved to undertake a maritime expedition, which, perhaps, might have procured her the glory of ſucceeding where the celebrated Cook had failed.

Billings was accordingly requeſted to ſet out for the northern Archipelago, and he was ſufficiently intoxicated by vanity to undertake an enterprize far beyond his talents, and from which his compatriots to no purpoſe endeavoured to diſſuade him. Immenſe preparations were made, and at a vaſt expenſe. The illuſtrious profeſſor Pallas was placed at the head of a board conſtituted to draw up a ſcheme of the expedition, together with Billings. But, to their great aſtoniſhment, the members of this board ſoon diſcovered that Cook's aſſiſtant aſtronomer knew nothing of the ſcience; they declared ſo to the miniſter Tcherniſcheff, who, offended at their honeſty, inſolently replied, that Billings knew more of the matter than they did.

The board of admiralty fortunately joined to Billings three very well-informed officers; the firſt was Lieutenant Hall, by birth an Engliſhman; the ſecond Bezing, a Dane; and the third Zaritſckeff, a native of Ruſſia. There was likewiſe aſſociated with them, to ſuperintend the inſtruments, a very ingenious Engliſh mechanic, named Edwards. The reſt of the ſhip's company conſiſted of the moſt intelligent handicraftſmen, of the moſt experienced pilots, and of the ableſt ſeamen in the Ruſſian navy. At laſt, Billings, furniſhed with inſtructions compiled by Pallas, repaired to the banks of the Kowima, where he had a veſſel built, to double the Tſchoukotſkoï-Noſs, but could not make it good.

The year after he traverſed the iſlands of the eaſtern ocean, taking his departure from Okhotſk and the bay of Awatſcha up to the coaſts of Japan. He even traced charts of them; but the diſcoveries he made are of no great importance. He collected, however, a great number of rarities, and brought to Peterſburgh a native of Ounalaſchka and a woman whom the inhabitants of that iſland had kidnapped from the ſhores of America, and who was aſſerted to have

have come from a part of the continent very diſtant from the coaſt. On his return to Peterſburgh, Billings applied himſelf, with the aid of Pallas, to digeſting the journal of his voyage. But there is too much reaſon to fear that this work, like that which I have mentioned, ſhall remain loſt to the public.

A more certain monument of Catharine's glory is the canal which ſhe began to cut in the province of Twer, to join the Twertza to the Miſa. The former of theſe rivers falls into the Volga, and the latter has a communication, by great lakes, with the Neva. If ever this canal ſhould be completed, it will eſtabliſh an internal navigation through all the immenſe regions ſituated between the Caſpian and the Baltic Seas.

The Empreſs, deſirous of increaſing the population of Kherſon, and of her newly acquired provinces of the Tauride and the Caucaſus, publiſhed a manifeſto inviting foreigners to come and ſettle in thoſe countries. I ſhall preſent a few extracts from this new bait thrown out to the credulity of Europe.

"The protection we are accuſtomed to grant to "foreigners who come to trade, or exerciſe their "induſtry, in our empire, is generally known. Every "one may enjoy, in our eſtates, the unreſtrained "exerciſe of the religion of his fathers, complete per-"ſonal ſecurity, the protection of law and govern-"ment. All the abſolute neceſſaries of life, and "every deſirable comfort, as well as the means of "acquiring wealth, are there ſupplied both from the "fertility of the ſoil and from objects favourable "to commerce. The country of the Caucaſus, ſub-"jected to our ſceptre, opens all theſe reſources in "greater abundance than the other provinces of our "empire. Foreigners wiſhing to ſettle there, whe-"ther in the cities or in rural ſituations, will find in "them a peaceful aſylum and unſpeakable accom-"modations.—They will be, during the period of ſix "years, exempted from every demand on the part of

" the crown. If, on the expiration of that term, they " ſhould deſire to leave our territories, they ſhall be " at full liberty to do ſo, on paying ſimply the amount " of three years taxes."

By another manifeſto which appeared ſome months after the one preceding, the Empreſs declared to all the inhabitants of Ruſſia and of Tartary, that they were no longer, in addreſſing her, to denominate themſelves her *ſlaves*, but only her *ſubjects*. This Princeſs was not ignorant of the means of rendering herſelf popular, and ſhe frequently employed them with wonderful art. One of thoſe which ſhe moſt ſucceſsfully practiſed, was her attention to children. Whether from inclination or from policy, ſhe always had a great number in her apartments. They there enjoyed the ſame liberties that her own grandchildren did. They gave the Empreſs no other appellation but that of grand-mama, and ſhe returned their careſſes with the utmoſt complacency.

Alas! was this then the woman whoſe murderous lips dictated the aſſaſſination of her ill-fated huſband? Could it be that mother ſo cold, and ſo prone to diſtruſt her own ſon? Could it be that ambitious Princeſs who ſeemed to breathe only for the purpoſe of uſurping crowns and of invading ſtates? Could it be, finally, that lofty-minded ſovereign who ſometimes talked to her miniſters and generals in ſuch a tone of haughtineſs, and demanded of them, with a voice of diſpleaſure, whether ſhe had honoured them with ſtaffs of command or the ribbons of knighthood, that they might render themſelves unworthy of her confidence?—Yes, undoubtedly, it was the ſame perſon. That man muſt be little acquainted with the human heart who does not know that it frequently aſſociates ſentiments and inclinations diametrically oppoſite.



G. A. POTEMKIN TAVRITSCHESKY.

at the Age of 51 Years.

Published Feb.ry 12th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

BOOK XI.

Catharine II. travels to the Krimea—Aſſaſſination of Sahim-Gherai—The Turks declare War againſt Ruſſia—Guſtavus III. attacks the Ruſſians—Naval Battle of Hogland—Benzelſtierna attempts to burn the Ruſſian Fleet at Copenhagen—Capture of Oczakoff—Peace of Varela—Capture of Iſmaïl—Diſgrace of Momonoff—Zouboff becomes Favourite—Fawkener at Peterſburgh—Peace of Yaſſi—Death of Potemkin.

A. D. 1787. FOR a long time Catharine had reſolved to pay a viſit to the Krimea, and to conduct her grandſon Conſtantine up to the frontiers of the empire of the eaſt, which ſhe deſtined for him. Every thing was in readineſs for this journey, when the young Prince was attacked with a ſpecies of meaſles, which obliged him to remain at Peterſburgh.

Catharine alſo wiſhed to have herſelf crowned at Kherſon, as ſovereign of the Tauride: but the news of the hoſtilities which had recently broken out between the Tartars and the Ruſſians, made her renounce this pompous deſign, and a portion of the magnificence which ſhe intended to diſplay upon the theatre of her conqueſts.

The rumour of the Empreſs's excurſion did not make upon the Georgians, the Leſghis, and the other inhabitants of thoſe countries ſo vaſt and ſo little known, the effect which was expected. Inſtead of appearing flattered or dazzled at her approach, thoſe people regarded it as the ſignal of imminent danger; and having renewed their oath of union, they mutually engaged to make every reſiſtance in their power to the oppreſſion of the Ruſſians.

The Empreſs took her departure, accompanied by her maids of honour, her favourite Momonoff, her

grand maſter of the horſe Nariſchkin, Ivan Tcherniſcheff, the two Schouwaloffs, and by divers other courtiers, as well as the ambaſſador of Auſtria and the miniſters of France and England. The ſledges travelled by night as well as by day. A conſiderable number of horſes had been aſſembled at each ſtation; great fires were kindled at the diſtance of thirty fathoms from each other, and an immenſe crowd of the curious lined the road.

On the ſixth day the Empreſs arrived at Smolenſko. Fifteen days afterwards, ſhe made her entry into Kiœff, where the Princes Sapieha and Lubomirſky, the Potockis, the Branitſkys, and moſt of the other Poles devoted to Ruſſia, had repaired to receive the Sovereign.

Potemkin had preceded that Princeſs. He rejoined her at Kiœff, as likewiſe did the Prince of Naſſau-Siegen, who, ſome time before, had entered into the ſervice of the Ruſſians. Mareſchal Romanzoff was alſo there. Already wounded by the haughtineſs of Potemkin, he had, during his ſtay at Kiœff, freſh reaſon to complain of it, and his diſſatisfaction was very apparent. But whatever value the Empreſs might attach to the brilliant ſervices of the conqueror of the Ottomans, the favour of Potemkin underwent no diminution.

Thoſe rocks which obſtructed the navigation of the Dnieper had been cleared away, and fifty magnificent galleys were prepared to receive the Empreſs. That Princeſs went, at the commencement of ſpring, to Krementſchouk, and embarked there with her numerous retinue.

The next day the fleet came to an anchor oppoſite to Kanieff. The King of Poland, who had come thither under his ancient name of Count Poniatowſky, and had received 100,000 roubles for the expenſe of his journey, repaired immediately on board the galley of the Empreſs. Theſe two ſovereigns had not ſeen each other for the ſpace of three and twenty years.

When

When they met, Catharine appeared in ſome degree confuſed. But Staniſlaus retained all his preſence of mind, and ſpoke with conſiderable confidence. In a ſhort time, they remained alone in the apartment of the Empreſs, and had a conference, which laſted rather more than half an hour, and in which the King requeſted the Empreſs to cauſe Prince Joſeph Poniatowſky his nephew to be declared the heir of the throne of Poland, to augment the revenues of his crown, and to grant to his ſubjects a free navigation on the Dnieper. Although the Empreſs was reſolved to grant nothing which this feeble monarch wiſhed, ſhe gave him room to believe that he would obtain every thing; after which they paſſed into another galley, where they dined together. Catharine decorated her ancient lover with the ribbon of the order of St. Andrew.

Potemkin, who had never ſeen the Poliſh monarch, appeared enchanted with him. It is even probable, that to this favourable impreſſion Staniſlaus has been indebted, for the preſervation of his throne a few years longer. Whatever might be the caſe, he withdrew at night apparently very well ſatisfied with the reception he had met with, and ordered a very beautiful fire-work to be diſplayed on the banks of the Dnieper. Afterwards the fleet continued its route.

At Krementſchouk, the Empreſs had been lodged in a palace built expreſsly for her, ſuperbly ornamented, and cloſe by which a beautiful garden had been laid out. She had found in this city an army of 12,000 men in new habiliments, who gave her a repreſentation of war by manœuvring in four columns, with a ſquare battalion of koſacs.

The journey by water was ſtill more agreeable. The banks of the Dnieper were covered with artificial villages, with peaſants elegantly dreſſed, and with numerous flocks, which reſorted by croſs-roads to the ſpots where the fleet approached the ſhore, and reproduced

produced themſelves inceſſantly in the eyes of the travellers. The beauty of the ſeaſon added ſtill more to the magic of the ſpectacle which was preſented to the Empreſs, and every thing combined to render delightful a country almoſt deſert.

Joſeph II. had preceded the arrival of Catharine at Kherſon. He haſtened to meet her, and joined her at Kaïdak. Immediately ſhe diſembarked and repaired by land to Kherſon, whither the Emperor returned with her. There Catharine lodged at the admiralty, where a throne had been erected which coſt 14,000 roubles. Thus, in order to gratify for a few moments the vanity of the Sovereign, the empire had long to bewail thoſe pompous prodigies of a ruinous oſtentation!

Kherſon appeared already an opulent city. It had ſeveral rich magazines, a port filled with veſſels, and dock-yards well ſupplied. A veſſel of ſixty-ſix guns and a frigate of forty, were launched in preſence of the Empreſs. In traverſing the encloſure of the city, that Princeſs read upon the gate towards the eaſt, a Greek inſcription, which ſignifies—THIS IS THE ROAD WHICH LEADS TO BYZANTIUM.

There were at that time at Kherſon a conſiderable number of foreigners. You beheld among them Greeks, Tartars, Frenchmen, Belgians, Spaniards, Engliſhmen, Poles. Some of them had been attracted thither from curioſity merely, others from the deſire of rendering homage to the Empreſs. Potemkin preſented Miranda to her, who had been introduced to himſelf by a foreign miniſter, and who, obliged to fly his country, ſought an aſylum amongſt the Ruſſians, and is ſince become general in the French ſervice.

Miranda aſſumed, in Ruſſia, the title of Count, and wore the uniform of a Spaniſh colonel, though he had a title neither to the one nor the other. He arrived at Kherſon with a Frenchman named Le-

croix,

croix, an intriguing and artful man, but inclined to debauchery, and who paſſed for a ſecret emiſſary of Calonne.

Among the women who reſorted to the court of Catharine, was diſtinguiſhed a Greek lady already celebrated, whoſe charms had made an impreſſion on the heart of Potemkin, and ſeemed to entitle her to bear it away from the crowd of beauties who contended for his favours.

A long time before her departure from Peterſburgh, the Empreſs had diſpatched Major Sergius to Conſtantinople, to give notice to the divan that ſhe was going to viſit the Krimea. The divan appeared uneaſy at it, and almoſt regarded this journey as an aggreſſion. Preparations were made to oppoſe it; and, whilſt the Empreſs was at Kherſon, four Turkiſh ſhips of the line and ſixteen frigates anchored in the mouth of the Boriſthenes. Theſe veſſels undoubtedly neither could nor would have attempted any thing; but their aſpect chagrined Catharine. She contemplated them with indignation, and could not withdraw her eyes from them: "Do you ſee," ſaid ſhe to her courtiers, "it appears that the Turks have loſt all recollection "of Tcheſmé."

Joſeph II. received at Kherſon the firſt news of the revolt of Brabant. Some perſons exhorted him to repair immediately to Bruſſels, and to make uſe of great moderation in order to calm an irritated people.

This Prince gave no explanation reſpecting the manner in which he intended to conduct himſelf, nor did he take the route which led to his ſtates. He on the contrary followed the Empreſs, who departed in order to viſit the interior of the Krimea.

The Empreſs was received in the Krimea by the principal mirzas, whoſe troops made different evolutions in her preſence. All at once a thouſand Tartars ſurrounded the carriages and ſerved them as an eſcort. Joſeph II. who had not been forewarned of this intention, manifeſted ſome uneaſineſs; but the Empreſs

preſs preſerved her tranquillity. Theſe Tartars had been pre-appointed by Potemkin. They undoubtedly had not any evil deſign: but ſuppoſing this had been the caſe, could they have ventured to put it into execution? Did not they know that Potemkin had, not far from thence, an army of 153,000 men?

The Empreſs made a pompous entry into Batſchiſeraj, and lodged, as did likewiſe her retinue, in the palace of the Khan. At night ſhe was entertained with the ſpectacle of a mountain which had been illuminated, and which appeared all in a flame. Wherever ſhe went, every one was eager to attract her regards, and ſhe endeavoured to gain all hearts. She aſſigned funds to build two moſques: ſhe diſtributed conſiderable preſents among the mirzas. The mirzas teſtified the moſt ardent devotedneſs to her; and ſix weeks afterwards they wiſhed to ſecond the Turks.

On her return, the Empreſs was conducted to Pultawa. In a ſhort time two armies made their appearance. They approached, they engaged, and gave Catharine an exact repreſentation of the celebrated battle in which Peter I. defeated Charles XII.

This ſpectacle was worthy of Potemkin, and of the two ſovereigns before whom he diſplayed it. Catharine ſaid upon this occaſion to one of her courtiers, who called upon her to remark a miſtake made by the Swedes, "Behold then upon what the fate of "empires depends! but for that miſtake we ſhould "not have been here."

Joſeph II. upon whom the name merely of a warrior made a lively impreſſion, could not refrain from deploring the misfortune of the Swediſh monarch. Notwithſtanding this he was extremely gratified with the whole conduct of Potemkin and of the Empreſs. That Princeſs had found the method of captivating him ſo completely, that he wiſhed to aſſiſt her in procuring the coronation of her grandſon at Conſtantinople.

Joſeph

Joſeph II. could not however help expreſſing his aſtoniſhment at beholding all the complaiſance of the Empreſs towards Momonoff. The favourite ſometimes ſtrangely abuſed his aſcendant over that Princeſs, and his vanity ſeemed to be flattered that he could produce illuſtrious witneſſes of his puerile triumph.

At Moſcow, Joſeph II. ſeparated from Catharine, and rapidly traverſing Poland, returned into his ſtates, whilſt that Princeſs re-entered Peterſburgh.

The unfortunate Sahim-Gherai was no longer in the Krimea when the Empreſs went thither. After having ſtripped him of his power, Potemkin kept him for ſome time under his eye in Kherſon, where that imprudent Tartar wore the uniform of commandant of the Preobraginſky guards, and decorated himſelf with the ribbon of a Ruſſian order. He was afterwards baniſhed to Kalouga; the payment of his penſion was ſtopped; he was left in the moſt deſtitute condition, and was obliged to abandon his native land, to throw himſelf into the arms of the Turks, whom he might have regarded as his moſt inveterate enemies, if the Ruſſians had not really been ſo.

He withdrew at firſt into Moldavia, where a capigi-bachi and the hoſpodar counſelled him a long time in vain to repair to Conſtantinople. Colonel de Witt, then commandant of the fortreſs of Kaminietz, and ſervilely devoted to Potemkin, joined his ſolicitations to thoſe of the capigi-bachi. But Sahim-Gherai reſiſted. He had a preſentiment, undoubtedly, of the melancholy fate which awaited him. At laſt, his perſon was ſeized, and he was tranſported to the iſle of Rhodes. There Sahim-Gherai thought of ſaving himſelf in the houſe of the French conſul, from whom the Turks haſtened to redemand him. The conſul, thinking that they would not preſume to violate his aſylum, had the noble courage to refuſe to render up the man who had placed himſelf under his protection: but they threatened to ſet fire to his houſe, and,

ſeizing

ſeizing the inſtant when he had gone out, they carried off the arms of France from over his door, which they faſtened to a neighbouring houſe, and ſtrangled the unfortunate Khan. It was thus that the Turks avenged themſelves for the defection of this Prince, and that the Ruſſians recompenſed him, for having ceded his ſtates to them.

Some time before the departure of the Empreſs for the Krimea, the miniſter Bakounin, charged with the department of foreign affairs, and enjoying at firſt the higheſt degree of favour, received orders to travel. Bezborodko wiſhed to place Arcadius Markoff at Peterſburgh. Nothing more was neceſſary to procure the baniſhment of Bakounin. But whether it was that he could not overcome the chagrin of loſing his place, or that ſome other cauſe accelerated the termination of his days, Bakounin did not carry away any ſecrets of ſtate into a foreign country: he fell ill, and died very ſhortly after.

Markoff was then recalled from Stockholm, and ſucceeded Bakounin, whilſt Andrew Razoumoffsky, whoſe talents and boldneſs were valuable to Catharine, paſſed from Denmark into Sweden.

Markoff, the ſon of a Ruſſian peaſant, and at firſt ſecretary to Prince Gallitzin, miniſter plenipotentiary at the Hague, had accompanied Prince Repnin to the congreſs of Teſchen, and was afterwards ſent to Rome and to Paris, from whence the Empreſs made him paſs into Sweden. Active and cunning, he ſuited Bezborodko extremely well, of whoſe inclination for libertiniſm he likewiſe partook. An intimacy therefore was formed between them, of which the latter had very ſoon reaſon to repent.

However, Potemkin wiſhed at any price to engage the Turks to commence hoſtilities. Independently of the hope of farther diſmembering the Ottoman empire, a ſecret motive made him wiſh for war, and rendered it neceſſary to him. Loaded with titles, with honours, with dignities, with the croſſes of knighthood,

hood, he wiſhed to add to them the grand ribbon of the order of St. George. In order to obtain this, it was requiſite to command an army, to gain a victory, and to occaſion the maſſacre of a multitude of ſoldiers. But what were the lives of ſeveral thouſands of men in the eyes of Potemkin, in compariſon of a ribbon which flattered his pride?

Bulgakoff, miniſter of Ruſſia at Conſtantinople, was come to Kherſon to render an account to the Empreſs of his ſecret operations, and of the diſpoſitions of the divan. This miniſter had a channel of intelligence of what was going forward in Egypt, through the medium of Baron de Tholus, conſul-general of the Ruſſians at Alexandria. Another conſul, whom Ruſſia maintained at Smyrna, and who was named Peter Ferrieri, abandoned himſelf to all the intrigues of which an audacious Italian could be capable. A third attempted to make an inſurrection in Moldavia. The Ruſſian veſſels abuſed all the privileges which the Porte had granted them, and the court of Peterſburgh continually encouraged this violation of treaties.

The Porte, diſpleaſed with this conduct, and provoked at a diſcovery which had been made of a correſpondence between the Bey Ibrahim, one of the governors of Cairo, and the Ruſſian miniſter, charged the Capitan-Pacha to go and re-eſtabliſh order in Egypt. A few days afterwards, the Grand-vizir and the Reis-effendi demanded a conference with the miniſter Bulgakoff, and tranſmitted to him a ſuccinct memorial, to which they requeſted his reply immediately. This memorial contained the following particulars.

"That experience having proved the Ruſſian conſul in Moldavia to be a diſorderly and turbulent man, who made uſe of every means to diſturb the peace of the two empires, the Grand-ſignor inſiſted that this man ſhould quit his ſtates without delay:

That

"That the troubles which had desolated Georgia "for two years past, being evidently the effect of the "protection which the Empress had granted to Prince "Heraclius, contrary to the spirit of treaties, it was "just that the Russian troops should evacuate Tefliis, "and withdraw to a sufficient distance from that "kingdom, in order to the restoration of tranquillity "in it:

"That the Russian vessels which passed before "Constantinople having always prohibited goods on "board, his Highness insisted that all those vessels "should be visited without exception:

"That the sublime Porte, being informed with "certainty that Prince Alexander Mauro-Cordato, "who fled from Yassi at the beginning of February, "had found an asylum in Russia, demanded that this "Prince should be given up:

"That it was necessary the Russians should furnish "to the inhabitants of Oczakoff a greater quantity of "salt than they had hitherto done:

"That, finally, the Grand-signor demanded the "privilege of establishing, in the Russian states, agents "to protect the commerce of his subjects."

In order to reply to this memorial, Bulgakoff requested time to consult his court. It was granted him: but in a short time the divan assembled anew, and decided that it was useless to wait for a reply from Petersburgh. War was proclaimed in Constantinople, and Bulgakoff shut up in the castle of the Seven Towers.

The internuncio of the court of Vienna and the ambassador of France mutually exerted their influence with the divan to procure the release of Bulgakoff. Their attempts were ineffectual. The minister of England had at that time a greater degree of credit, and he warmly seconded the resentment of his court, which had seen with jealous eyes Russia form a commercial treaty with France.

The

The Turks made preparations for war with the utmoſt activity. They marched 80,000 men to cover Oczakoff. A formidable army advanced towards the banks of the Danube, and the Grand-vizir was making ready to unfurl the ſtandard of Mahomet at the head of the Ottoman troops.

A ſquadron of ſixteen ſhips, eight frigates, and ſeveral row-boats, entered the Black Sea, under the command of the Capitan-Pacha Gazi Haſſan.

This old admiral returned from Egypt, where he had brought the rebel Beys, Ibrahim and Mourad, into ſubjection, and received a tribute of more than 12,000,000 of piaſtres. But this ſucceſs had not rendered him inſolent: he ſtill recollected with grief the diſaſters of Tſcheſmé. Before he took his departure for the Krimea, he aſſembled the principal officers of his ſquadron, and addreſſed them as follows.

"You know from whence I come, and what I have "done. A new field of honour ſummons me, as well "as you, to ſacrifice our laſt breath for the honour "of our religion, and in the ſervice of the Sultan and "of the invincible Nation, which, in the preſent cir-"cumſtances, demands the laſt drop of our blood. It "is to fulfil this ſacred duty that I at preſent ſeparate "myſelf from thoſe of my family who are moſt dear "to me. I have given liberty to all my ſlaves of both "ſexes: I have paid all that I owed them, and re-"warded them according to their deſerts. I have bid "a final adieu to my wife: I go at laſt into the "heat of battle, in the firm reſolution to conquer or "to die. If I return, it will be a ſingular favour of the "Almighty. I do not deſire to ſee my days pro-"longed, but that I may have it in my power to ter-"minate them glorioufly. This is my unalterable "determination.

"You, who have always been my faithful com-"panions, I have convoked, to exhort you to follow "my example at this deciſive conjuncture. If there "be any one among you who does not feel that he

"has courage to die in the field of honour, he may de-
"clare it freely: he ſhall find grace in my ſight, and
"ſhall immediately receive his diſcharge. Thoſe, on
"the contrary, whoſe hearts fail them in executing my
"orders in action, muſt not pretend to excuſe them-
"ſelves by attributing their flight to contrary winds
"or to the diſobedience of their crews; for I ſwear
"by Mahomet, and by the life of the Sultan, that I
"will cauſe them to be beheaded, as well as their
"whole crew. But he who ſhall diſplay courage in
"acquitting himſelf of his duty, ſhall be liberally re-
"warded. Let all thoſe who wiſh to follow me on
"theſe conditions ariſe then, and ſwear to obey me
"faithfully."

At theſe words all the captains, having riſen up, ſwore to conquer or to die with their noble admiral. "Yes," cried he upon this, "I acknowledge you for "my gallant and faithful companions! Go, return to "your ſeveral ſhips; order your crews to aſſemble, "communicate my purpoſe to them, receive their "oath of fidelity, and hold yourſelves in readineſs to "ſet ſail to-morrow."

The Turks ſuſpected the fidelity of the Greeks: they diſarmed them all: at the ſame time they publiſhed a manifeſto to invite the Tartars to put themſelves under the government of the Grand-ſignor. This people regretted their ancient yoke, and deteſted the new one. In vain did the Empreſs laviſh preſents upon them; in vain did ſhe command the Koran to be printed, and moſques to be erected; they only ſaw a Chriſtian in her, and at the bottom of their hearts preferred a Muſſulman Prince. The mirzas then aſſembled, and elected for their Khan Szach-Par-Gherai, who very ſhortly ſaw under his command an army of 40,000 men.

The news of the war was received at Peterſburgh with tranſports of joy. The Empreſs had long foreſeen it, and waited for it with impatience. All her preparations

preparations were made. She had already a conſiderable number of troops in the Kuban; others marched toward the Krimea. Her armies covered the coaſt from Kaminietz as far as Balta. Potemkin, commander in chief of all theſe forces, had under his orders Souwaroff, Repnin, Kamenſkoï, Kakoffsky, and a multitude of other generals. Mareſchal Romanzoff, who did not chooſe to contribute to the glory of Potemkin, excuſed himſelf on account of his great age, and refuſed a command which the remains of a forced reſpect had been conſtrained to offer him. One of his ſons went to join the army.

A fleet of eight ſhips of the line, twelve frigates, and near two hundred chebecs or gun-boats, was armed in the Black Sea; and two powerful ſquadrons, under the command of Admiral Kruſe and Admiral Greig, were to leave Cronſtadt, the one to cruize in the Baltic, the other to repair to the Mediterranean.

The alliance of Joſeph II. aſſured farther to the Empreſs a powerful aſſiſtance. This Prince deſired not leſs than ſhe did to go to war with the Turks. Eighty thouſand Auſtrians marched towards Moldavia. Every thing ſeemed to announce the overthrow of the Ottoman empire.

Catharine, however, diſguiſing both her ſentiments and her injuſtice, publiſhed a manifeſto, in which ſhe reproached the Turks with the infraction of treaties, which ſhe alone had violated; and after a long enumeration of the pretended crimes of the Porte, ſhe added:

"That, provoked by a conduct ſo offenſive, ſhe "was very reluctantly obliged to have recourſe to "arms, as the only means of maintaining thoſe "rights which ſhe had acquired at the price of ſo "much bloodſhed, and to avenge her dignity, wound-"ed by the violence exerciſed towards her miniſter "at Conſtantinople: that, entirely innocent of all "the calamities which war inevitably gives birth to,

"she had a title to reckon, not only upon divine "Providence, and upon the assistance of her allies, "but likewise upon the good wishes of the whole "Christian world, for the success of a cause so just "as that which she was obliged to defend.

This manifesto was very soon followed by a second, which announced, "That the Porte had expressed "the arrogance of insisting upon a categorical re- "ply to its absurd demands; and that the Empress, "obliged to repel the aggression of the enemy of the "Christian name, armed herself with confidence un- "der the protection of that just God, who had so "long and so powerfully protected Russia."

In support of these writings, by which Catharine wished to conjure heaven and earth against the Ottomans, means were employed better adapted to the superstition of the Russians: the prophecies of Jeremiah and of Nicon were published with emphasis, which predicted the approaching ruin of Constantinople. This was at the same time an indirect method of opposing a kind of false prophet, named the Bey Mansour, who, by assuring them that an angel appeared to him in the midst of the woods, had succeeded in assembling an army, and had stirred up against the Russians all the Tartars of the Caucasus.

The Empress earnestly solicited the minister of France to engage his court to unite with her for the purpose of dismembering the Ottoman empire. As the price of this service, she offered to cede to France the possession of Egypt, the conquest of which she imagined to be indubitable. But the minister was far from putting any confidence in that bait. He knew, that supposing Turkey to have been divided, Egypt would most probably have been less suited to the French than the isle of Candia: he knew, that although it was of advantage for France to have a treaty of commerce with the Russians, she had a still greater interest in preventing the ruin of the Turks, with whom she carried on a commerce more cer-

tain,

tain, more lucrative, and nearer to her: he knew, in fine, that the feeble government of Conſtantinople could never threaten, as that of Peterſburgh had done, to derange the equilibrium of Europe. Beſides, Could Catharine reckon upon the ſubmiſſion of Egypt? Her conſul-general Tholus had, it is true, ſeveral correſpondencies there; he had gained over the Beys Ibrahim and Mourat; but the temptations he threw in the way of another Bey, named Iſmaël, had not the ſame ſucceſs. Iſmaël cauſed him to be arreſted, and ſent him to the Pacha of Cairo, who kept him priſoner.

In inviting Chriſtian Princes to take up arms againſt the Turks, Catharine aſſuredly did not imagine that they would ſecond all her ambitious projects, or that they would even remain tranquil ſpectators of her triumphs. She was not ignorant that England encouraged the Porte to fight, and furniſhed her with aſſiſtance, and that Pruſſia did not ſubmit very patiently to the aggrandizement either of Ruſſia or of Auſtria But what the Empreſs did not foreſee was the ſtep which Guſtavus took, to declare all at once war againſt her.

From the time that Oſtermann quitted Stockholm, his ſucceſſors had faithfully imitated his conduct; but not one of them had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by ſo great a degree of audacity as Andrew Razomouffsky. Zealous to regain the favour of his ſovereign, this miniſter laboured inceſſantly to ſow diviſion among the Swediſh nobles, of whom the principal part were diſſatisfied with their King, and had but too great an inclination to liſten to the perfidious counſels of Ruſſia.

Guſtavus ſubmitted to theſe manœuvres impatiently; he likewiſe beheld with indignation the court of Ruſſia receiving with honour General Sprengporten, who, after having aſſiſted him in re-aſſuming authority over the ſenate of Stockholm, thinking himſelf not ſufficiently recompenſed, had quitted his

country, to paſs into the ſervice of the Ruſſians, and did his endeavour to excite revolt in Swediſh Finland.

Guſtavus reſolved to take vengeance. Before the Turks had declared war againſt Ruſſia, Heideſtam, his miniſter at Conſtantinople, had already received orders to conclude a treaty of alliance offenſive with them. The Turks recollected with reſpect the victories of Charles XII. They thought that a King of Sweden might make a powerful diverſion in their favour. They promiſed to Guſtavus conſiderable ſubſidies, a part of which were paid down immediately. Beſides, Pruſſia lent him money, and England promiſed him the aſſiſtance of a ſquadron. This Prince immediately made preparations for taking up arms.

A. D. 1788. A witneſs of the preparations which were carrying on at Stockholm, Andrew Razoumoffſky haughtily demanded the reaſon of them. Guſtavus replied to him with ſtill greater haughtineſs, that he did not conceive himſelf under the neceſſity of accounting for his actions to any foreign power. It was at that time a ſufficiently ſtrange ſpectacle, an ambaſſador diſputing in the capital of Sweden the rights of the Swediſh monarch, and preſuming to ſet bounds to his power. Guſtavus, in juſt indignation, ſent orders to Razoumoffsky to quit Stockholm. But the Ruſſian found means, under divers pretexts, to defer his departure for a conſiderable time.

Notwithſtanding this, the preparations for war were carried on with ardour. The fleet armed at Carlſcrona; the troops which were to be embarked, rendezvouſed around the capital; others marched into Finland. A report was artfully ſpread, that it was neceſſary to ſtand upon the defenſive, becauſe the court of Peterſburgh had menaced an attack upon Sweden, if Guſtavus did not furniſh her with aſſiſtance againſt the Turks. The Swediſh ſoldiers burnt with the deſire of coming to action with a nation which their anceſtors had ſo frequently conquered.

At

At laſt, they were embarked, and the fleet which conveyed them arrived in Finland, where Guſtavus had preceded it.

Scarcely had the army reached the frontiers, when a ſmall detachment of Ruſſian chaſſeurs made as though they would diſlodge ſome Swedes who guarded a bridge. There were even ſeveral guns fired on both ſides, which Guſtavus did not fail to take as a declaration of war. His orders were already given, and his ſquadron took poſſeſſion of two Ruſſian frigates, cruiſing above Sweaburgh, to exerciſe the cadets of the marine of Peterſburgh.

Guſtavus reſolved to march againſt Friderikſham. But as they had not yet been able to diſembark the heavy artillery which the ſquadron of Carlſcrona carried, he formed the deſign of attacking that city on two different ſides, and to take it by ſtorm.

The conſternation at Peterſburgh was univerſal. All the Ruſſian armies had marched againſt the Turks. At firſt, the Empreſs could only ſend a few invalid ſoldiers and ſome detachments of her guards to the ſuccour of Friderikſham. It was not doubted that Guſtavus would take poſſeſſion of that city, and likewiſe come to lay ſiege to the capital. Catharine was very much alarmed, but ſhe uniformly preſerved the appearance of the utmoſt tranquillity. The French ambaſſador entering the palace at that time, ſhe aſked him what news there was? "That you intend taking "your departure for Moſcow, Madam," ſaid he to her. "You did not give any credit to this report?" replied ſhe immediately. "I have ordered a great "number of poſt-horſes; but it is to convey troops "and artillery."

She in effect aſſembled ſome troops which were ſcattered through the garriſons neareſt at hand, and made them march into Finland, to join the detachments already there. The command of this incomplete army was confided to Mouſchin-Pouſkin, an inexperienced general, whoſe reputation was but little

calculated to quell the apprehenſions of the inhabitants of Peterſburgh.

A ſhort time afterwards ſhe wrote to the Prince de Ligne, who, out of flattery to this Princeſs, had given her the name of *unperturbable*, and who was at that period along with Potemkin.—"It is in the midſt of "the noiſe of cannon which cauſes the windows of "my habitation to ſhake, that your unperturbable "writes to you." She at the ſame time diſpatched to Potemkin a plan of the diſpoſitions which ſhe had made againſt the King of Sweden, and put at the bottom, "Have I done well, my maſter?"

The Grand-duke had earneſtly ſolicited the conſent of his mother to go and fight againſt the Turks: but the Empreſs, apprehending that this reſolution might conceal ſome dangerous deſign, had found means artfully to elude it. Taking advantage of a declaration of the Grand-dutcheſs, who, although pregnant, had reſolved to follow her huſband, ſhe informed the Prince, that the deſire which he manifeſted to go into the field was ſufficient to demonſtrate his courage and intrepidity, and that the duties of a ſon, a huſband and a father, obliged him to defer his departure till the Grand-dutcheſs was delivered.

All the preparations of the Grand-duke were made. The pretended tenderneſs of his mother could not alter his determination. He inſiſted again that ſhe ſhould give him permiſſion to depart, and the letter he wrote to her concluded thus:—"The intention "which I have expreſſed of going to fight the Otto-"mans is well known: what will Europe ſay when it "is ſeen that I do not put it in execution?" Catharine's only reply was the following words:—"Europe "will ſay that the Grand-duke of Ruſſia is a reſpect-"ful ſon."

However, when the army of Finland was aſſembled, the Empreſs allowed the Grand-duke to repair thither, but without giving him any command. The

heir

heir of the empire, beholding himſelf in that army, deprived of all authority and ſurrounded with ſpies, could not remain long there. He returned to Peterſburgh, and fell ill with vexation: his mother did not appear in the leaſt degree affected by it.

That Princeſs haſtened to publiſh a declaration, in which, complaining of the conduct of the King of Sweden, and of the neceſſity which ſhe found herſelf under of taking up arms againſt him, ſhe artfully concealed the feebleneſs of her troops in Finland, and ſaid, on the contrary, that the garriſons had been reinforced from precaution, a long time before the aggreſſion of the Swedes.

She at the ſame time gave orders to the Baron de Nolken, miniſter of Sweden, to quit Ruſſia.

The Swediſh fleet, conſiſting of ſixteen ſhips of the line, five heavy frigates, and ſeveral corvettes, proceeded up as far as Cronſtadt, and inceſſantly bid defiance to the Ruſſian ſquadron. This ſquadron was at firſt deſtined to go to the Mediterranean. The armament of the Swedes was the cauſe of the change of its deſtination: and undoubtedly Guſtavus III. was guilty of a great error, for if he had not commenced hoſtilities till after the departure of that ſquadron, he would have remained maſter of the Baltic, and had a conſiderable advantage over Catharine. Admiral Greig had received orders to ſet ſail, but a ſingular incident prevented his compliance.

The Empreſs had given the command of a veſſel to the pirate Paul Jones, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his intrepidity in the American war. The Engliſh officers employed in the Ruſſian fleet had not been previouſly informed of this; and whether it was that ſome agent of their nation ſecretly incited them, or that they were really offended at ſerving with a man whom they regarded as a traitor, they repaired to the preſident of the Board of Admiralty, and declared that they could not remain in a ſquadron to which Paul Jones belonged. The Empreſs,

preſs, informed of this meaſure, and perceiving that ſeven out of eight of her ſhips ran the riſk of being totally deprived of officers, concealed her vexation, and withdrew Paul Jones from ſerving in the fleet. That ſhe might not appear to yield to circumſtances, ſhe reſolved to give him an employment in the Black Sea, and ordered him to go and join Potemkin. Paul Jones departed immediately, diſtinguiſhed himſelf at the battle of Liman, and was rewarded for it with the ribbon of Saint Anne. But, having accuſed the Prince of Naſſau Siegen of not underſtanding how to profit by his advantages, he involved himſelf in a quarrel with that admiral, and returned to Peterſburgh; where, in a very ſhort time, means were found to get rid of him. A young girl was ſent into the inn in which this ſailor was lodged, who, in offering him ſome trifles for ſale, caſt a few tender glances upon him. He thought himſelf in duty bound to reply to them. The girl ſcreamed out. The officers of the police, who were juſt at hand, entered, and Paul Jones was obliged to quit Ruſſia.

The Ruſſian fleet, under the command of Admiral Greig, ſet ſail, and the naval battle of Hogland took place ſhortly after.

Although among the Ruſſian veſſels there were only eight which fought valiantly, victory remained with them. They loſt a veſſel of ſeventy-four guns; but they captured one of the ſame force, commanded by the brave Vice-admiral Wachtmeiſter, and they burnt one of ſixty-four, under the command of Captain Chriſtierning, an officer of conſiderable merit. The Swedes took refuge in Sweaburg, where the Ruſſians kept them blocked up during the reſt of the campaign.

It cannot be denied that ſome of the Swediſh veſſels did not do their duty; but their commanders were not puniſhed in the ſame manner with the Ruſſian officers who had been deficient in courage. Admiral Greig cauſed to be arreſted and carried into Cronſtadt

Cronſtadt Captains Kotouzoff, Walderoun and Baranoff, and a council of war condemed the two firſt to ſuffer death, and the third to ſerve as a common ſailor for the reſt of his life.

Guſtavus upon this propoſed to the Empreſs an accommodation, on conditions calculated to wound the pride of that Princeſs. He demanded that Andrew Razoumoffsky ſhould be puniſhed in an exemplary manner, for the intrigues and the machinations which he had been guilty of carrying on at Stockholm: that the portion of Finland and of Karelia, ceded to Ruſſia by the treaties of Neuſtadt and Abo, ſhould be reſtored to Sweden: that the court of Peterſburgh ſhould make peace with the Porte, under the mediation of Sweden, which ſhould propoſe to re-eſtabliſh the independance of the Krimea, conformable to the treaty of Kaïnardgi, and, in caſe of a refuſal, fix the limits ſuch as they were in 1768. He likewiſe inſiſted that Ruſſia ſhould lay down arms immediately, and conſent that Sweden ſhould remain armed till after the concluſion of the treaty.

"What language!" cried Catharine, upon hearing this. "If the King of Sweden were already at "Moſcow, I ſhould know how to teach him what a "woman like me is capable of, upon the ruins of a "vaſt empire."

Inſtead of replying to the propoſitions of Guſtavus, that Princeſs recalled General Mikhelſon, who was fighting againſt the Turks, gave him the command of her army in Finland, and reinforced that army with 20,000 men.

The firſt attempts of Mikhelſon were not crowned with ſucceſs. He wiſhed to diſlodge a corps of Swedes advantageouſly poſted in Sawolax, and thought that for this purpoſe he ſhould attack them in front, whilſt the deſerter Sprengporten adviſed him to turn them. Mikhelſon, liſtening with impatience to the advice of Sprengporten, ſaid to him brutally, "Are you afraid?"

Spreng-

Sprengporten preſerved the utmoſt coolneſs, and replied only by theſe words, "Let us march."

The Swedes permitted the Ruſſians to approach them, and when they were within reach of their artillery, they diſcharged a volley of caſe ſhot, which killed 500 of them: the reſt retreated in diſorder. Mikhelſon upon this perceiving his error, profited by the counſel of Sprengporten, and took poſſeſſion of the Swediſh poſt.

Sprengporten, dangerouſly wounded in the firſt attack, remained maimed for the reſt of his life. But of what conſequence was the fate of a traitor? What ſhould not be forgotten is the magnanimous conduct of his ſon, who, uniting to filial love the no leſs ſacred love of his country, followed his father into the midſt of battle, but would not draw his ſword againſt Sweden.

But the Empreſs reckoned upon the defection of other officers of Guſtavus, and they very ſoon proved that ſhe did not deceive herſelf.

The Swediſh monarch was already in the neighbourhood of Friderikſham. He had cauſed a part of his troops to embark in galleys, giving orders to General Siegoroth who commanded them, to go and land on the other ſide of the city, to commence the attack as ſoon as the troops ſhould be landed, and to fire a cannon, which ſhould ſerve as a ſignal for acting on two ſides at once.

Siegoroth was kept back by contrary winds, and had great difficulty in landing. Notwithſtanding this he made his point good, and gave the ſignal agreed upon. Immediately Guſtavus made an attempt to advance his troops. But, although it was well known that the fortreſs was half diſmantled and deficient in artillery, ſome of his principal officers, at the head of whom was Colonel Heſtéko, repreſented to him that it was very difficult to make the attack on the ſide on which he was; that their duty did not permit them

to

to allow him to expoſe himſelf to an inevitable danger, and that he ſhould likewiſe ſet ſome value on the lives of his faithful ſubjects.

It was not undoubtedly in this manner that the conquerors of Narva ſpoke; but Guſtavus III. bore not the leaſt reſemblance to Charles XII. Notwithſtanding, aſtoniſhed at the language of his officers, he replied, that he would be obeyed. Upon this ſeveral of them joined together, and declared that they could not undertake an offenſive war without the conſent of the nation; that they would ſhed their blood in defence of their country, but that they could never reſolve to make an attack upon a neighbour who had given them no provocation.

In deſpair at this reſiſtance, the King addreſſed himſelf to the ſoldiers. Immediately the regiment under the command of Colonel Heſtéko laid down their arms, and the greater part of the army followed their example. Guſtavus ordered Lieutenant-colonel Roſenſtein to go and deſire General Siegoroth to cauſe his troops to re-embark, and withdrew to Kimenegorod. The next day he made all the officers embark who had refuſed to march, and ſent them to Stockholm, where they were received with all the marks of the diſapprobation of the public, and were immediately put under arreſt.

This was not ſufficient. It was before Friderikſham that he ought to have made an example of the offenders. But Guſtavus was deficient in reſolution. If he had inſtantly puniſhed the perfidious Heſtéko, and at the ſame time commanded his ſoldiers to march, in a few days afterwards he might have entered as a conqueror into Peterſburgh.

It was not to be doubted that the nobles, who longed to reſtore the ancient form of government, ſhould have a deſire to profit by this occaſion to re-eſtabliſh it, and ſhould therefore act in concert with Ruſſia. But ſeveral other officers, whom they had the addreſs

dreſs to gain, were not in the ſecret; the ſoldiers, above all, could not poſſibly be ſo.

The defection of the Swedes was of more value to Catharine than one victory. Not content with this advantage, that Princeſs claimed, conformably to treaties, the aſſiſtance which Denmark owed her againſt Sweden. Although wiſely the enemy of war, the court of Copenhagen ſhewed herſelf faithful to her engagements. She immediately ordered a ſquadron to arm; and the Prince Royal, accompanied by Prince Charles of Heſſe, embarked for the purpoſe of going to Norway, and placing himſelf at the head of his troops.

The Norwegians, a ſimple and generous nation, who preſerve in the midſt of their rocks the purity of ancient manners, and the valour which rendered them ſo celebrated under Margaret of Waldemar; the Norwegians, whoſe majeſtic ſtature, flaxen hair, and reverend beard, recal the memory of their anceſtors, of thoſe heroes who have ſo frequently conquered England, and merited the honour of being ſung in the ſtrains of Oſſian; the Norwegians did not hear in vain the ſignal for battle. At the voice of the Prince of Denmark, they croſſed that paſſage which the death of Charles XII. dyed with blood, entered into the weſtern provinces of Sweden, obliged a part of the regiment of Weſtrogothia at Quiſtrum to capitulate, took poſſeſſion of Oudewalla and of all the other places which came in their way, and proceeded to lay ſiege to Gottenburgh.

Gottenburgh is, next to Stockholm, the moſt conſiderable city of Sweden: the loſs of it would have been almoſt irreparable to Guſtavus. This Prince was already returned to his capital, when he learnt that ſiege was laying to Gottenburgh. He immediately ſent the regiment of Yemland and his own guards to reinforce the garriſon of that place, and he himſelf repaired to Dalecarlia. There he aſſembled the

the peaſants, brought to their recollection what they had done for Guſtavus Vaſa, and conjured them to march with him for the defence of their country.

Three thouſand Dalecarlians haſtened to follow him. The inhabitants of the neighbouring provinces imitated them, and Guſtavus very ſoon ſaw himſelf at the head of a numerous army: but, fearing that Gottenburgh might have ſurrendered before this ſuccour arrived, he departed with one of his aids-de-camp and a domeſtic, diſguiſed himſelf that he might not be recognized by the enemy, and penetrated as far as the gates of the city. He had at firſt ſome difficulty to obtain entrance. The ſoldiers would not be perſuaded that it was their King. But at laſt the gates were opened to him.

Notwithſtanding his preſence, notwithſtanding the army which followed him, Gottenburgh ſeemed to be in the utmoſt danger of falling. An unexpected interpoſition was the means of ſaving it.

Sir Gilbert Elliot, miniſter of England in Denmark, no ſooner learnt that Gottenburgh was threatened, than he quitted Copenhagen, rapidly paſſed through Sweden, and repaired to the camp of the Daniſh Prince. He charged this Prince to raiſe the ſiege of Gottenburgh, and declared, that if he did not without delay evacuate the Swediſh territory, England would order all the Daniſh veſſels which were in her ports to be ſeized, and would ſend a ſquadron to bombard the caſtle of Kronenburgh.

The Prince of Denmark, reſtrained by theſe menaces, was already making preparations to withdraw, when the Pruſſian miniſter arrived to ſecond that of England. The truce was ſpeedily concluded, and the army of the Daniſh Prince peaceably returned to Norway. Undoubtedly it was to the boldneſs and activity of Elliot that Guſtavus owed the preſervation of Gottenburgh. The threats which the miniſter uttered had not been preſcribed to him, but they

they had the desired effect: his court did not fail to approve of them.

Meanwhile the Russian armies which fought against the Turks and the Tartars, frequently carried away the advantage. The first engagement took place near Oczakoff, and became fatal to the Ottomans.

The Pacha of Oczakoff put 6000 men on board of boats, who, with the design of surprising the fortress of Killburn, landed on the little promontory which is in front. Unfortunately for the Turks, general Souwaroff was in the fortress. He permitted them to disembark without opposition, and even encouraged them, by sending out some aukward marksmen, with orders to retire immediately, as if they had been frightened. The Turks fell into the snare: whilst their boats returned to Oczakoff for a reinforcement, Souwaroff marched out at the head of two battalions, with bayonets fixed, and all the Turks who were upon the beach were either massacred or drowned. Souwaroff received upon this occasion a dangerous wound in the neck.

Rear-admiral Woïnowitch, who commanded, in the Black Sea, three ships of the line and eight frigates, refused to come to action with the Turkish fleet, five times stronger than his own; and, notwithstanding the entreaties of the English officer Priestman, who served under him, and who eagerly longed to engage, he retired under the cannon of Sewastopol. That timid prudence occasioned his disgrace. Potemkin dismissed him with ignominy.

The Russian squadron then was put under the command of Ouschakoff, and appeared to be more worthily managed. It fell in with that of the Capitan-Pacha, sixteen ships of the line strong, and obliged them to take to flight.

A short time afterwards, the Prince of Nassau-Siegen, who commanded the fleet of gun-boats of Nicolaëff, likewise attacked the Turkish squadron, which

which had entered into the Liman, burnt three of their veſſels, and took ſeveral others. Naſſau diſplayed conſiderable valour in that action; but he was indebted, principally, for his victory, to the courage and to the talents of two French officers, Varage and Verbois, of the Engliſhman Fanſhaw, and of the Dutchman Winter; he owed it, above all, to a conſiderable battery which General Souwaroff had opened upon the point of Kilburn, and which obliged the Turkiſh ſquadron to run aground under the cannon of Oczakoff.

Upon this occaſion a proof was given of that courage which national pride can inſpire, even in ſlaves. When the veſſel of the Capitan-Pacha took fire, a Turkiſh ſailor ran through the flames to ſave the admiral's flag, and whilſt he was looſening it, a Ruſſian, not leſs intrepid, darted into one of the ſhip's boats, ſprung up the ſide of the veſſel on the point of blowing up, bore away the flag, and took the Turk priſoner.

The generals Talizyn and Tékély defeated the Tartars of the Kuban in ſeveral rencounters. Tamara had already rendered himſelf maſter of Georgia, and was preſſing on the Leſghis.

During this period the Ruſſian government was making immenſe preparations for the reinforcement of the armies. The war department was entirely directed by Potemkin, or rather the whole empire was ſubſervient to his orders; of conſequence nothing which could enſure the ſucceſs of this magnificent favourite was ſpared.

Some Ruſſians, who profeſſed an attachment to their country, but who were moſt probably only diſſatisfied with, and jealous of, Potemkin, entertained at that time the moſt diſmal apprehenſions reſpecting the unlimited power with which he was inveſted. They thought, that in the diſtribution of the kingdoms and the principalities which he was going to conquer, he would take good care not to forget himſelf.

Time did not juſtify their opinion: but it was nevertheleſs well founded; for Potemkin, in effect, conceived the tranſient deſign of forming a monarchy of all the countries of the Wallachians and Moldavians, and of cauſing himſelf to be declared their chief.

The Ruſſian army, which occupied the banks of the Bogh, upon the confines of Poland, of Turkey, and of Little Tartary, was compoſed of 150,000 men, and had a formidable artillery. Another army, under the command of General Soltikoff, was deſtined to ſupport, on the ſide of Moldavia, the Auſtrians, commanded by the Prince of Saxe-Cobourg.

However, the theatre of war preſented at that time the moſt horrible ſpectacle. Famine, the plague, and carnage, had already laid waſte the territory of the Tartars, and the frontiers of Ruſſia, and of the Ottoman empire; and, with the exception of forage, all that was neceſſary for the ſubſiſtence of the armies was obliged to be tranſported from a great diſtance.

A corps of Ruſſians, joined to a part of the army of Cobourg, took poſſeſſion of Khoczim. Repnin, Soltikoff, Souwaroff, Kamenſkoï, frequently beat the Turks, who avenged themſelves upon the Auſtrians.

Potemkin had been for ſome time laying ſiege to Oczakoff. Tremendous fortifications, an abundant ſupply of ammunition, a numerous garriſon, and the rigour of the ſeaſon, ſhould, according to appearance, have rendered that place impregnable. The beſiegers ſuffered ſo much from the cold that they had been obliged to dig ſubterranean huts for themſelves; they were ſtraitened for proviſions, and every night a conſiderable number of them periſhed. But the ſevere weather, which they ſupported with ſo much difficulty, aſſiſted them to take the city. It was remarked, that an attack might be made on the ſide of the Liman, where it was leſs carefully fortified, and where the ice had rendered acceſs eaſy. All at once Potemkin gave orders for the aſſault:

and

and, whilſt he remained in his camp with his miſtreſſes, his lieutenants, at the head of a party of troops, penetrated into the city, and ſpread carnage around. It muſt not, however, be imagined that Potemkin was backward through fear: he had been ſeen, for ſeveral days before, walking about with the utmoſt coolneſs, cloſe under the cannon of the ramparts, becauſe he learnt that ſome had the preſumption to ſuſpect his courage. He abſented himſelf from the aſſault upon Oczakoff only becauſe he thought he ſhould not have it in his power to diſtinguiſh himſelf there in an extraordinary manner.

The Prince of Anhalt-Bernburgh in no reſpect imitated the example of Potemkin. He entered firſt into the city at the head of the grenadiers and rangers. A well-diſputed battle was fought both on the ramparts and in the ſtreets. The Turkiſh ſoldiers defended themſelves with an obſtinate valour, and almoſt all periſhed with their arms in their hands. The reſt of them were put to the ſword, and a conſiderable number of the inhabitants ſhared the ſame fate.

The Ruſſians gave up the city to pillage. They entered into every houſe, put the maſters of them to death, took away the moſt valuable effects, and abandoned themſelves to all the fury of plunder and debauchery. For three days ſucceſſively Potemkin allowed this bloody execution to be carried on. It deprived of life more than 25,000 Turks. The ſiege of Oczakoff coſt the Ruſſians more than 20,000 men, of whom nearly 4000 periſhed in making the aſſault.

A. D. 1789. Theſe victories were nearly as fatal to the conquerors as to the conquered. But Catharine was not the leſs eager to carry on the war. She ordered new troops to be raiſed throughout her dominions: ſhe wiſhed to reinforce at the ſame time her armies in the Krimea and upon the banks of the Danube, to eſtabliſh others in Poland, and to march a conſiderable body againſt the Swedes. But

men became ſcarce in the Ruſſian empire. A conſiderable number of exiles were recalled from the deſerts of Siberia to make up the recruits.

During this time Guſtavus III. occupied himſelf with his projects of vengeance. He could not forgive the Empreſs for the diſſenſions which ſhe was inceſſantly fomenting in Sweden, nor the Daniſh government for the aſſiſtance which had been lent to Ruſſia. A lieutenant-colonel, named Benzelſtierna, determined to ſecond the hatred of his maſter.

The Ruſſian ſquadron had entered into the road of Copenhagen, where it was detained by the ice during the whole winter. The ambaſſador of Sweden, Sprengporten, was an open and generous old man, whom Guſtavus reſpected, but in whom he did not place great confidence. Without recalling that ambaſſador, this Prince had given to a man named Albedyl the management of affairs, recommending it to him to obſerve carefully the proceedings of the Ruſſians and of the Danes.

Benzelſtierna ſoon joined Albedyl. Under pretence of undertaking ſome operation of commerce, he formed a connection with the Iriſh captain O'Bryen, purchaſed his veſſel, for which he paid him, in advance, 12,000 rix-dollars, and allowed him to keep the command, engaging, by a note of hand, to give him an equal ſum if his enterpriſe was ſucceſsful. He afterwards cauſed the veſſel to be loaded with caſks pitched both out and in-ſide, and filled with brandy, and gave him orders to take advantage of the firſt north-eaſt wind to quit the port, at the ſame time ſetting fire to his veſſel. Had this execrable project ſucceeded, not only the whole Ruſſian ſquadron, but the Daniſh fleet likewiſe, muſt have been conſumed.

O'Bryen ventured to mention what he had undertaken to one of his friends, named Tief. This latter was filled with horror at ſuch a confidence, and haſtened to diſcloſe it. The Daniſh government immediately ſent to examine the ſhip, and cauſed O'Bryen to

to be arreſted. Benzelſtierna had eſcaped to the houſe of Albedyl, who conveyed him to the ſanctuary of a miniſter of his acquaintance, from whence he got off at firſt under favour of a footman's livery. A ſhort time after this raſcal was taken, ſhut up in the citadel of Copenhagen, tried, and condemned to loſe his life: but this puniſhment was afterwards changed into perpetual impriſonment, which laſted till 1797, the epocha at which Ruſſia gave permiſſion for him to be releaſed.

The Daniſh ſailors, ſtirred up by the Ruſſians, aſſembled in great numbers before the door of Albedyl. They intended to maſſacre him, and to ſet fire to his houſe. But, having foreſeen this riot, Albedyl had already ſaved himſelf by flying to Scania. A detachment of ſoldiers diſperſed the mutineers.

The attempt of Benzelſtierna was not calculated to reconcile the court of Ruſſia to that of Stockholm. The operations of the war in a ſhort time recommenced. The ſquadrons of the two nations fell in with each other off Bornholm, but the wind did not permit them to come to action. Soon after they met again near Gothland; and, although the Ruſſian admiral Tſchitſchagoff, and the Swediſh admiral Lilienhorn, wiſhed at that time to avoid an engagement, the rear of their fleets, which then had the lead, engaged each other, and fought valiantly during three or four hours.

The Ruſſian veſſel, under the command of the Engliſhman Preſton, had 160 men killed or wounded. Three guns burſt upon the upper deck, and blew up ſeveral of the crew; but the intrepid Preſton remained calm, gave the neceſſary orders, and continued the fight.

Another Engliſh captain, named Tiſiger, who commanded a veſſel of 66 guns, nobly ſuſtained the combat againſt Vice-admiral Modée, one of the moſt gallant of the Swedes.

The next day, Lilienhorn, who might with his diviſion have broken through that of the Ruſſian vice-admiral Mouſſin-Pouſchkin, neglected that advantage, which, without doubt would have prevented the diſaſters that the Swediſh fleet ſoon after encountered.

Captain Tchitchoukoff, commodore of a ſmall ſquadron, took poſſeſſion of the important poſt of Porkala; and from that time the Ruſſians kept poſſeſſion of it till towards the approach of winter.

The Swedes had a fleet of galleys and gun-boats. The Empreſs oppoſed to them one of equal force, the command of which ſhe gave to the Prince of Naſſau-Siegen, who, having had ſome difference with Potemkin, could no longer ſerve upon the Black Sea.

The Ruſſian galleys ſurpriſed the Swediſh galleys near Rogenſalm; and Naſſau, conſtantly aſſiſted by the counſels of Varage, of Winter, and of a Milaneſe named the chevalier de Litta, for the ſecond time cauſed the Ruſſian flag to triumph. Winter, to whom the ſucceſs of this day was principally owing, was hit by a cannon ball, and died of his wound.

During the engagement of the galleys, the Ruſſians had attacked the Swediſh army, which was ſtill in the neighbourhood of Friderikſham. They had no leſs advantages by land than by ſea. They obliged the troops of Guſtavus to evacuate Ruſſian Finland.

A. D. 1790. This monarch having collected new forces, made preparations for returning into the Ruſſian territory. But Catharine had found time to make her preparations of defence. The two armies came to action at Aborfors, and the Ruſſians, commanded by General Numſen, obtained a brilliant victory.

Guſtavus was not diſcouraged by his repeated defeats. He embarked on board his fleet of gun-boats, and went in ſearch of the Prince of Naſſau, from whom he took twenty-three veſſels. In a ſhort time afterwards,

afterwards he landed, at five miles from Peterſburgh, ſeveral battalions of infantry, and ſome ſquadrons of light troops, and took poſſeſſion of the important poſt of Parda-Koffsky, which opened him a paſſage into the Ruſſian Sawolax. The alarm ſpread anew over the capital. The Empreſs was at Tzarſko-Zelo, and did not leave that country palace, but gave orders to General Igælſtrom, who commanded in the abſence of Ivan Soltikoff, to ſpare no effort to retake Parda-Koffsky. Igælſtrom immediately marched againſt this poſt a column of 8000 choſen men, the command of which he confided to the brave Prince of Anhalt-Bernburgh, who was killed at the very commencement of the attack, as was likewiſe Baïkoff, who commanded under him. The 8000 Ruſſians fought with the utmoſt intrepidity, and loſt the half of their force, without being able to diſlodge 2000 Swedes who defended the poſt. However, theſe Swedes would have fallen the victims of their own courage, if the thaw which came on had not put it out of the power of the Ruſſians to make a freſh attack upon them, with more conſiderable force.

The grand Swediſh ſquadron, under the command of the Duke of Sudermania, and compoſed of twenty-ſix ſhips of the line and of ſeveral frigates, choſe to go in queſt of the Ruſſian fleet up to the very port of Revel. That imprudence coſt him two ſhips. The Swedes committed a fault ſtill more dangerous: they ſailed into the gulph of Viburgh with both their ſquadrons, and the fleet of gun-boats which Guſtavus III. commanded. Every thing at that period ſeemed to threaten the total deſtruction of the Swediſh marine: but it was ſaved by two Ruſſian admirals, Tſchitſchagoff and Naſſau.

Tſchitſchagoff, who commanded a ſquadron far more numerous than that of the Swedes, neglected to fortify with batteries the two paſſages, by which alone the Swedes could have poſſibly eſcaped. Theſe laſt, who were in want of proviſions, and could no

longer remain in the gulph, attempted to leave it by ſetting fire to the Ruſſian ſquadron which defended the beſt paſſage. The wind was favourable. They ſet ſail, and were preceded by a fire-ſhip, which would have forced the Ruſſians to diſperſe. But the match was too ſoon applied to the fire-ſhip, which run aground on a ſand-bank, and did no injury to the Ruſſians, whilſt it deſtroyed ſeveral Swediſh veſſels, that the wind violently daſhed upon her. Nine ſhips, three frigates, and more than twenty gun-boats, fell into the hands of the Ruſſians.

This advantage ſo important was fatal to ſeveral Engliſh officers in the ſervice of Ruſſia. Captain Denniſon's head was carried off by a ball; Captain Marſhall, attempting to board the enemy's veſſel, fell into the ſea and was drowned; Captains Miller and Aiken had, the one his leg, and the other his thigh, broken; and finally, Captain James Trevannion, one of the moſt ſkilful and moſt brave officers in the ſervice of Catharine, was mortally wounded by a cannon ball, and died at the end of five days. He had already taken poſſeſſion of the poſts of Hanhoud near Abo, and of Boreſund near Sweaburgh, and he commanded one of the five veſſels which blocked up the narroweſt paſſage of the bay of Viburgh.

The reſt of the Swediſh galleys had retired behind the rocks of Schwenkſund, which form ſeveral little iſles on the water's edge. The Prince of Naſſau, whoſe fleet was twice as ſtrong as that of Guſtavus, advanced to engage it. His ignorance gave an immenſe advantage to the Swedes; he was completely beaten, and loſt the half of his fleet, and more than 10,000 men. However, his vanity did not abate in the ſlighteſt degree. Abſurdly imagining that the officers whom he commanded had ſuffered themſelves to be beaten in order to tarniſh his glory, he wrote to the Empreſs:—"Madam, I have had the misfortune "to fight with the elements, the Swedes, and the "Ruſſians. I hope that your Majeſty will do me "juſtice."

"juſtice." The Empreſs ſent him the following reply:—"You are in the right, becauſe it is my plea-"ſure that you ſhould be ſo. This is ariſtocratical, "but that ſuits the country in which we are. Reckon "always upon your affectionate CATHARINE."

The battle of Schwenkſund accelerated peace. Guſtavus III. already beheld all the imprudence of his conduct. He no longer flattered himſelf that the war which he had declared with the Ruſſians would be followed with any ſignal ſucceſs, or make an uſeful diverſion in favour of the Turks. He apprehended, on the contrary, that the Ruſſians might profit by the deſtruction of his marine, the diſordered ſtate of his finances, and the diſcontent of the Swediſh nobleſs, to invade his ſtates. He accepted then, without heſitation, the propoſitions which the Empreſs made to him.

The miniſter of Spain at the court of Ruſſia, Galvez, offered his mediation to Catharine, and zealouſly occupied himſelf to obtain favourable conditions from that Princeſs, by promiſing that Guſtavus ſhould march immediately againſt the French. This was preciſely what the Empreſs wiſhed. She pretended to forgive her enemy, in the hope of ſeeing him engage in a diſtant enterpriſe. The better to impoſe upon him, ſhe affected to diſplay generoſity: ſhe demanded only the re-eſtabliſhment of the treaties of Neuſtadt and Abo, and the total obliteration of the laſt quarrels. In conſequence the treaty was ſigned without delay at Varela.

During the war of Finland, Catharine exerciſed at once her clemency and her ſeverity. Some Swediſh officers, employed in the capacity of teachers in the corps of cadets at Peterſburgh, dared to keep up a correſpondence with their compatriots, in which they ſpoke of the Empreſs in a very bold, though undoubtedly a very juſt manner. Their letters were intercepted and conveyed to that Princeſs, who read them through. Immediately the Swedes were arreſted,

reſted, and examined by Stepan-Ivanowitz Schiſch-koffsky, chief of the ſecret commiſſion, and by an eſtimable officer whom the Empreſs had placed along with him, in order to temper his ſavage diſpoſition. The offence was proved, and the culprits ſeemed to deſerve death. However, the Empreſs contented herſelf with baniſhing them into the interior of her provinces. She even continued to them their appointments, and on the return of peace, ſent them back into their own country.

At the ſame time Radiſcheff, director of the cuſtoms at Peterſburgh, publiſhed the relation of a journey from Peterſburgh to Moſcow, in which he feigned to have had a dream, and gave an energetic picture of the deſpotiſm of Potemkin. He even preſumed to attack the Empreſs in it. Although Radiſcheff had himſelf printed his relation with types which he had in his own houſe, he was ſoon detected, and exiled into Siberia.

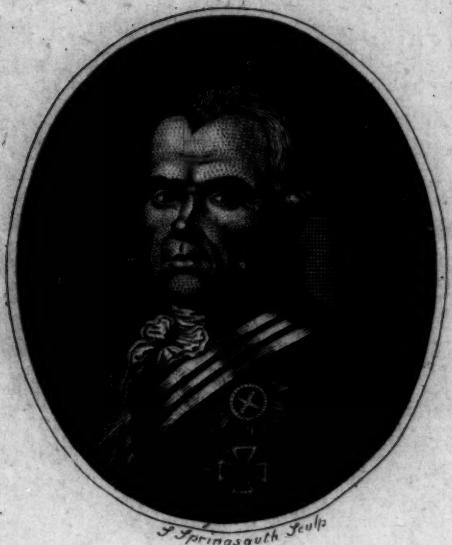
Count Alexander Woronzoff, and the Princeſs d'Aſchkoff his ſiſter, the avowed protectors of Radiſcheff, were accuſed of having incited him to compoſe his paſquinade. The firſt was even expoſed to the examination of the ſecret committee, and from this moment, both the one and the other loſt their credit conſiderably.

Thus Catharine treated the Swedes with a feigned generoſity, becauſe ſhe wiſhed to make herſelf partiſans in Sweden, whilſt ſhe frequently exerciſed the utmoſt ſeverity towards the nation already ſubjected to her yoke.

The war of Ruſſia with Sweden has for ſome time diverted me from that which ſhe carried on againſt the Ottomans. I ſhall now return to it. The Grand-ſignor Abd-Ul-Hamid IV. was dead, and the ſon of the Sultan Muſtapha, his brother and predeceſſor, had aſcended the the throne, under the name of Selim III.

The capture of Oczakoff, and the ſucceſſes which had preceded it, were magnificently recompenſed.

The



FIELD MARSHAL SUWAROW RIMNIKSKY

Published Feb.y 12.th 1800. by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

The Empreſs ſent to Potemkin a preſent of 100,000 roubles, with a truncheon adorned with diamonds, and ſurrounded with a branch of laurel, the leaves of which were gold. A ſhort time after ſhe granted him the title of hetman of the Koſacs; a title which the aged Kyrille Razoumoffsky, ſtill living, had reſigned more than twenty years before. She gave to Prince Repnin a ſword, the handle of which was ornamented with brilliants, and to General Souwaroff a plume of diamonds. The other generals and officers likewiſe obtained ſome mark of favour, and all the ſoldiers who had entered Oczakoff received a ſilver medal, with a requeſt to wear it at their button hole.

Undoubtedly, theſe rewards excited a great emulation in the Ruſſian armies. All their ſteps were marked with triumph. Potemkin ſubjugated the iſle of Bereſan; Repnin drove the Turks from the banks of the Solſka. Souwaroff beat them completely at Fokſan. Underſtanding afterwards that the Auſtrian army, commanded by the Prince of Saxe-Cobourg, was cloſely preſſed by that of the Grand Vizir, he put himſelf at the head of 8000 Ruſſians, and haſtened to the ſuccour of the Auſtrians. Theſe latter, to the number of 30,000, had been already put to flight by the Turks, who attacked them with an army of 100,000 men. The intrepid Souwaroff arrived, and changed the fate of arms.—"Friends!" cried he to his ſoldiers, "do not look at the eyes of the enemy. "Look at his breaſt: it is there you muſt plunge "your bayonets." At the ſame inſtant he fell upon the Turks, and made a horrible carnage among them, and remained maſter of the field of battle. This victory, obtained near the river Rimniks, procured to Souwaroff the ſurname of Rimnikſky, and the double title of Count of the Roman and of the Ruſſian empires.

The ferocious Kamenſkoï reduced to aſhes the ſuperb city of Galatza, upon the Danube, and the principal one of Moldavia next to Yaſſi, which it ſurpaſſ-

ed

ed in reſpect of commerce. Ac-Kerman, Chedſebey, Belgorod, Palanka, yielded to the arms of Potemkin. Bender ſurrendered at diſcretion.

Iſmaïl ſtill made reſiſtance. Potemkin had laid ſiege to that place for ſeven months, and was out of patience that he had not already reduced it. Living in his camp like one of the ancient Satraps, whom he alone in our days has rivalled, and perhaps ſurpaſſed in luxury, he was ſurrounded with a croud of courtiers, and of women, who employed their utmoſt endeavours to amuſe him. One of thoſe women, pretending to read the decrees of fate in the arrangement of a pack of cards, predicted that he would take the beſieged city at the end of three weeks. Potemkin replied with a ſmile, that there was a method of divination much more certain. At the ſame inſtant he ſent orders to Souwaroff to take Iſmaïl in three days. Souwaroff got ready. The third day he aſſembled his ſoldiers, and ſaid to them: "My children! "no quarter; proviſions are dear." He immediately gave the aſſault. The Ruſſians were repulſed twice with conſiderable loſs. But at laſt, they ſcaled the ramparts, penetrated into the city, and put all to the ſword. Fifteen thouſand Ruſſians, and 35,000 Turks paid with their lives for the bloody laurels of Souwaroff. This General, on the occaſion, wrote to the Empreſs theſe words ſimply: "The haughty Iſmaïl "is at your feet."

The celebrated Gazi-Haſſan, who, from the poſt of Capitan-Pacha, had been elevated to that of grand-vizir, could not ſupport ſo many diſaſters. He died of grief in his camp. His ſucceſſor was decapitated at Schumla, and the Pacha Youſouf ſucceeded him. But this alteration did not re-eſtabliſh the fortune of the Turks.

Several French officers fought at the capture of Iſmaïl. Roger Damas, Langeron, the young Richelieu, diſtinguiſhed themſelves there, and were not on that account better treated by Potemkin. Some days afterwards,

afterwards, this laſt converſing on the French revolution, and regarding as an outrage the efforts of a nation which wiſhed to recover its liberty, ſaid to Langeron: "Colonel, your compatriots are fools. I "ſhould have occaſion only for my grooms to bring "them to reaſon." Langeron, who, although an emigrant, could not patiently ſuffer his nation to be ſlightly ſpoken of, haughtily replied:—"Prince, I do "not believe that you could ſucceed in that attempt "with your whole army." At theſe words Potemkin aroſe in a paſſion, and threatened to ſend Langeron to Siberia. Langeron went out immediately, and croſſing the Sereth, which ſeparates Moldavia from Walachia, withdrew into the Auſtrian camp.

Prince Gallitzin, who had paſſed the Danube, and had entered into Bulgaria, at the head of a corps of 12,000 men, obtained a victory over the Turks near Matzin.

On learning the triumph of her arms, Catharine felt her pride redouble. The Engliſh miniſter, Whitworth, having preſented himſelf before her, that Princeſs ſaid to him ironically: "Sir, ſince Mr. Pitt "means to drive me from Peterſburgh, I hope he "will permit me to retire to Conſtantinople."

After the extreme ſeverity with which the Greeks had been treated by the Ottomans at the concluſion of the laſt war, Catharine had reaſon to believe them eager to avenge themſelves. She therefore ſent manifeſtoes into all their iſlands, to invite this people to take up arms anew againſt the enemies of Chriſtendom, and to re-conquer their invaded country, and recover their ancient independence.

The Greek Sottiri, who was in the ſervice of Ruſſia, was ſent into Epirus and into Albania, to carry thither the manifeſtoes of the Empreſs, and to prepare, with the chiefs of thoſe countries, a ſpeedy inſurrection. In a ſhort time an army was ſeen to aſſemble in the environs of Sulli. It marched againſt the Pacha of Janina, and vanquiſhed him in a pitched battle.

battle. The ſon of the Pacha fell in the engagement, and his ſplendid armour was ſent to the Empreſs.

The Greeks afterwards raiſed a voluntary ſubſcription, and, with the amount of that ſubſcription, armed at Trieſte, twelve ſmall veſſels, the command of which they gave to a ſeaman of their own nation, named Lambro-Canziani. Lambro traverſed the Archipelago as a conqueror. The terror which he ſpread even as far as Conſtantinople, procured an order that almoſt all the Turkiſh veſſels which were in the Black Sea, ſhould repaſs the Boſphorus, to arreſt the progreſs of the little Greek ſquadron.

During this time, the Empreſs ſent into Sicily a man named Pſaro, and ſome other emiſſaries, not only to get ready there what was neceſſary for the Ruſſian ſquadron deſtined to repair to thoſe ſeas, but to furniſh to the Greeks money and ammunition, and to do away the difficulties, which by a ſordid policy, or a wiſh to keep on good terms with the Porte, led the Venetians to oppoſe them. But the faithleſs emiſſaries of Catharine did not fulfil her intentions, and divided among themſelves and their baſe protectors, the money which had been entruſted to them.

Juſtly filled with indignation at this conduct, the Greeks ſent to Peterſburgh a deputation which, after having been for a long time kept back from the throne by perſons whoſe intereſt it was to prevent their being heard, obtained at laſt, thanks to the favourite Plato Zouboff, a private audience of the Empreſs. The deputies preſented to that Princeſs a petition written in Greek and in French, and conceived in theſe terms:

"MADAM,

"It is not till after having ſolicited for a long time "in vain the miniſters of YOUR IMPERIAL MAJESTY, "for a reply to the memorial which we have had the "honour to convey to them, and driven to the ut-

"moſt

" moſt deſpair by the idea of the dreadful misfortunes " which this delay may occaſion to our compatriots, " who, invited by the manifeſtoes of YOUR IMPERIAL " MAJESTY, have taken up arms againſt the enemy " of the Chriſtian name, and have deputed us to bring " the offer of their life and their fortune to the foot " of your imperial throne; it is not till after having " loſt every hope of obtaining by any other means, a " prompt reply which may ſtop the torrents of the " blood of our brothers, that we preſume, proſtrated " at your feet, to preſent to YOURSELF our very hum- " ble Memorial.

" Another duty, equally ſacred to us, and which " is a principal object of our miſſion, leads us to take " this bold ſtep: it is to undeceive YOUR IMPERIAL " MAJESTY, who are groſsly impoſed on as well as " your miniſters. We have ſeen with indignation, the " chevalier Pſaro attempting to exalt himſelf into the " chief and the ruler of our nation, a man abhorred of " that very nation, from the refuſe of which he has " ariſen, and in which he would have remained, if, " by deceiving the miniſters of your Imperial Majeſty " with an unrivalled audacity, he had not procured " himſelf eſteem by the recital of exploits which he " never performed. If the conſequences were to be " fatal to no one but himſelf, we ſhould wait with " patience till he preſented himſelf in our countries; " a boaſt however which he will never have it in his " power to make, except in his writings. YOUR IM- " PERIAL MAJESTY will ſee in what manner he has " acted towards us. He has taken immenſe ſums, " which he pretends to have expended for us: but " we aſſure YOUR IMPERIAL MAJESTY, that neither " he nor any one of the officers whom you have ſent " among us, have given us a ſingle rouble. The flo- " tilla of Lambro, and our other veſſels, have been " armed at our own expenſe. One of us has aban- " doned his peaceful fireſide, to arm two veſſels, " which have coſt him 12,000 ſequins, and the Turks

" have

" have maſſacred his mother and his brother, razed " his houſe to the ground, and laid waſte his lands.

" We have never demanded money, we demand " none at preſent. We deſire only that we may be " furniſhed with powder and ball, which we have " not an opportunity of purchaſing, and that we may " be led to battle. We are come to offer our lives " and fortunes, not to ſupplicate for treaſure.

" Deign, O GREAT EMPRESS! GLORY OF THE " GREEK FAITH! deign to peruſe our memorial. " Heaven has reſerved our deliverance for the glori- " ous reign of YOUR IMPERIAL MAJESTY: It is un- " der your auſpices that we hope to wreſt from the " hands of barbarous Mahometans, our uſurped em- " pire, our patriarchate, and our holy inſulted religion. " Yes, thanks to you, we will deliver the deſcendants " of Athens and of Lacedemon from the tyrannical " yoke of thoſe ignorant ſavages, under which a na- " tion languiſhes, whoſe genius is not yet extinct, a " people inflamed with the love of liberty, whom the " weight of their chains have not yet degraded, and " who have always preſented to their view the image " of the ancient heroes who have rendered their coun- " try illuſtrious, and whoſe example ſtill animates " her warriors.

" Our ſuperb ruins recal to mind our ancient " grandeur. Our numerous ports, our beautiful " plains, the heavens which ſmile on us all the year " round, the ardour of our youth, and even of our " old men, all declare to us that nature is as propi- " tious to us as ſhe was to our anceſtors. The race " of our Emperors is extinct; comply with the wiſh " of our nation: give us for ſovereign your grand-ſon " Conſtantine, and we ſhall be what our forefathers " were.

" We are not amongſt the number of thoſe who " have preſumed to deceive THE MOST MAGNANI- " MOUS OF SOVEREIGNS. Furniſhed with full powers " and neceſſary inſtructions, we are *Deputies* from the " nations

" nations of Greece, and as ſuch, proſtrated at the " foot of the throne of HER, who, under God, we re- " gard as our ſaviour. We declare ourſelves, even to " our laſt breath,

" OF YOUR IMPERIAL MAJESTY,

" The moſt faithful and moſt devoted Servants,

" PANO KIRI,

" CHRISTO LAZZOTTI,

" NICCOLO PANGALO."

" *Peterſburgh, the — April*, 1790."

The three Greek deputies were favourably received by the Empreſs. They were afterwards conducted into the apartment of her grandſons. They advanced to kiſs the hand of the Grand-duke Alexander, who, inſtead of preſenting it to them, pointed to his brother Conſtantine, ſaying, that to him they muſt addreſs themſelves. They then preſented their homage to the young Prince, in naming him their Emperor, and they explained to him in Greek the object of their miſſion. Conſtantine replied to them in the ſame tongue: " Go, and let every thing be done ac- " cording to your deſire."

Theſe Greeks tranſmitted to the Ruſſian miniſters a plan of the operations which they propoſed to execute. After having received from the Empreſs the means of augmenting the ſquadron of Lambro-Canziani, with artillery and engineers to undertake the ſiege of ſtrong places, they intended to open the campaign at Sulli, where their congreſs was, and where they kept up a correſpondence with all Greece. Directing their firſt motions towards Athens and Livadia, and with their army divided into two corps, they reckoned upon being joined, on their march, by the troops of the Morea and of Negrepont, whither the ſquadron of Lambro was to repair. Afterwards re-united in order to enter into Theſſaly, they flattered themſelves that Macedonia would furniſh them with conſiderable reinforcements, and that, on

arriving in the plains of Adrianople, their armies would be increaſed to at leaſt 300,000 men. Their project then was to form a junction with the Ruſſians, to go and take poſſeſſion of Conſtantinople.

They hoped that, at the ſame time, the Ruſſian fleet of the Black Sea would go and attack that city; and, go how it might, they believed themſelves ſufficiently powerful to vanquiſh the Ottomans and drive them out of Europe.

They had wiſely calculated the employment of their troops, their victualling, the means of ſecuring a retreat in caſe of a repulſe, and in general all their reſources, as well as the forces which the enemy might oppoſe to them. Catharine, flattered with a project ſo analagous to the ambition which ſhe had to reign one day in Byzantium, ſent the three deputies into Moldavia, that they might ſettle matters with Potemkin. After having given them their inſtructions, Potemkin allowed them to depart for Sulli, accompanied by Major-General Tamara, who was to be overſeer of the expedition of the Greek army, and to furniſh it with the ſupplies for which it might have occaſion.

However, the aſſembling of an army of 150,000 Pruſſians upon the frontiers of Bohemia, the convention of Reichenbach, ſigned between Pruſſia and Auſtria, for the acceleration of the peace, and the warlike diſpoſitions which the court of London manifeſted, cauſed a ſtagnation in the armament of the Greeks. But a very ſmall part of the ſums which the Empreſs had deſtined for them was tranſmitted, and it was recommended to them to hold themſelves in readineſs to act, but to undertake nothing till the arrival of a more favourable moment.

Lambro, whoſe ſquadron had ſpread deſolation in the Ottoman ſeas, was at laſt conſtrained to yield to ſuperior numbers. Attacked by a conſiderable fleet, he defended himſelf for a long time with vigour: but all his veſſels were ſunk, and this brave officer and a ſmall

a ſmall number of his companions ſaved themſelves in their boats among the rocks.

A. D. 1791. Profiting by the credit of ſome friends, he again armed a veſſel, with which he deſtroyed ſome Turkiſh ſhips, but which at laſt met with the fate of his ſquadron. Lambro once more eſcaped in his long-boat, and took refuge in the mountains of Albania.

After having incited him to navigate under their flag, Ruſſia declared him a pirate; and the agents of that power would not condeſcend to deliver him from the priſon into which he had been thrown for the debts he contracted in her defence. A voluntary contribution of his compatriots procured his releaſe.

Potemkin was not ſlow in returning to Peterſburgh, to enjoy his triumph. The Empreſs received him with tranſports of joy: ſhe laviſhed entertainments and preſents upon him, and gave him a palace eſtimated at 600,000 roubles, and a coat embroidered with diamonds, which coſt 200,000. He himſelf diſplayed a pomp which appeared exceſſive even in the moſt magnificent court of Europe. The uſual expenſe of his table was 800 roubles a-day: it was of courſe covered with the moſt dainty proviſions and the rareſt fruits. He could not do without cherries in the depth of winter, and paid for them about a rouble a-piece. At a repaſt which he gave to the Empreſs he ordered a conſiderable quantity of money to be thrown among the people.

But in a ſhort time he quitted the capital to return to the army. Satiated with grandeurs, with triumphs, with pleaſures, he was miſerable every where. A fatal preſentiment ſeemed to purſue him. He was not ſatisfied either with adulating courtiers, nor with the Sovereign who overwhelmed him with benefits, nor with himſelf. The preſence of the new favourite, eſpecially, chagrined him to the heart.

This favourite was Plato Zouboff. More important ſubjects have till the preſent moment prevented my mentioning him. I ſhall briefly relate the cauſe of his elevation and of the diſgrace of his predeceſſor.

Momonoff was very much beloved of the Empreſs, and did not requite her tenderneſs. After the example of Potemkin, not content with the magnificent preſents which the Empreſs laviſhed on him, he fraudulently extorted from her immenſe ſums. But he lived with her as a ſlave, the gold of whoſe chains did not prevent him from feeling their weight, and not as a lover delighted to pleaſe. His heart was not however inſenſible. Catharine had in the number of her maids of honour, the daughter of Prince Scherbatoff, a pretty young girl, very witty, and with a conſiderable propenſity to gallantry. Momonoff was ſoon captivated with her charms, and made ſucceſsful love to her. His paſſion had not as yet paſſed the bounds of reſpect, when one day he heard Potemkin vaunting of the favour of the Princeſs Scherbatoff. Momonoff ſhuddered at it: he knew the unlimited power of Potemkin; he knew that it was ſufficient for him to form deſires to enſure their accompliſhment. He flew to throw himſelf at the feet of the Princeſs Scherbatoff, and imparted to her his inquietude. To ſet his heart at reſt, ſhe granted him that which he dreaded ſeeing carried off by his rival. But in a ſhort time he had freſh reaſon to be eaſy: Potemkin departed for the army.

This intrigue laſted a conſiderable time: it was known to all the court: Catharine alone had not perceived it. However, the jealouſy of the courtiers opened her eyes; ſhe was apprized that Momonoff deceived her, and ſhe had very ſhortly clear proof of it. However offended ſhe might be at this diſcovery, ſhe diſſembled her reſentment. This was during the ſummer of 1789. The court was held at Tzarſko-Zelo,

Zelo, and the daughter of Count de Bruce, one of the richeſt heireſſes of the empire, came to be preſented there.

Catharine ſeizing this opportunity, ſaid to Momonoff, that ſhe wiſhed him to marry the young Counteſs de Bruce. Momonoff ſupplicated her not to exact it of him. The Empreſs demanded the reaſon of his refuſal. He was embarraſſed: ſhe inſiſted; and he fell at her feet, acknowledging to her that he had pledged his faith to the Princeſs Scherbatoff. She wiſhed for no other explanation: the two lovers were affianced immediately, and a few days afterwards they were married in the chapel of the palace. Count Nicolaï Ivanowitz Soltikoff, governor of the two young Grand-dukes Alexander and Conſtantine, aſſiſted at the ceremony in the name of the Empreſs; after which the new married pair retired to Moſcow.

Momonoff ought to have been grateful for the benefits of Catharine, and for the extreme moderation which ſhe exerciſed towards him. But it is aſſerted that he had the imprudence to diſcloſe to his wife the detail of his ſecret interviews with the Empreſs, and that his wife revealed them with a levity injurious to the Sovereign. It is added, that this Princeſs avenged herſelf in a terrible manner. At a time when Momonoff and his wife were in bed, the chief of the police of Moſcow entered their apartment, and after having ſhewn them an order from the Empreſs, left them in the hands of ſix women, and withdrew himſelf into a neighbouring room. Upon this the ſix women, or rather the ſix men dreſt in womens cloaths, ſeized the babbling offender, and having ſtripped her entirely naked, whipt her with rods in preſence of Momonoff, whom they had obliged to remain on his knees. When this chaſtiſement had been inflicted, the chief of the police re-entered and ſaid:—"This "is the mode in which the Empreſs puniſhes a firſt "indiſcretion: for the ſecond the delinquent is ba-"niſhed to Siberia."

The very day of Momonoff's marriage, the place of favourite was beſtowed on Plato Zouboff, an officer of the horſe-guards. Potemkin heard, with no little vexation, that the choice of Catharine had fallen upon Zouboff. He wrote to her on the ſubject, and made uſe of all his efforts to prevail on her to change her lover. But from the firſt days of his elevation Zouboff had ſo well underſtood how to pleaſe, that he no longer feared a rival. The Empreſs ſent word to Potemkin, that as he had no juſt reaſon to complain of Zouboff, ſhe could not reſolve to give him his diſmiſſion. Notwithſtanding this, Potemkin ſtill inſiſted for ſome time longer. "When thou ſeeſt the "Empreſs," ſaid he to one of the courtiers who carried his diſpatches to court, "remark to her that "I have teeth from which I ſuffer conſiderable un-"eaſineſs, and that I ſhall not be quiet till I get rid "of them." This was a ſilly play on words: the name Zouboff ſignifies teeth, in the Ruſſian language.

The death of the Emperor Joſeph II. had left Catharine reduced to her own forces to combat the Ottomans. Leopold II. yielding to the ſolicitations of Pruſſia, and ſtill more to the neceſſities of his people, reduced to diſtreſs by an unjuſt and unfortunate war, was in haſte to ſeparate himſelf from Ruſſia, and, after the convention of Reichenbach, had concluded a ſeparate peace with the Porte.

It was no longer Frederick II. who reigned over Pruſſia: five years before he had terminated his long and brilliant career. Endowed with a decided character and a flexible mind, he brought both the one and the other to perfection by ſtudy and reflection. The leſſons of hiſtory had rendered him a profound politician and a ſkilful general: the company of philoſophers and of enlightened men taught him to place himſelf in the rank of diſtinguiſhed writers. Whilſt he was only Prince Royal, he appeared to be ambitious ſolely of the glory of an Antoninus and a Marcus Aurelius; but ſcarcely had he aſcended the throne

when

when he took for his models the Alexanders and the Philips. Delivered victoriouſly from the ſeven years war, a war which ſeemed likely to conſummate his ruin, he extended the bounds of his ſtates, and formed of the ſecondary power which he had inherited, one of the moſt domineering powers of Europe. To the titles of politician and conqueror, he had then the ability to add that of legiſlator. The code which bears his name, entitles him, on ſeveral accounts, to the gratitude of his ſubjects. Diſdaining luxury from inclination, and dreading it from economy, he diſplayed his pomp in the number of his ſoldiers. Laborious, vigilant, indefatigable, he occupied himſelf, to the very laſt moment of his life, in the adminiſtration of his kingdom: but he manifeſted himſelf at the ſame time more zealous for the eſtabliſhment of his power, and the proſperity of Pruſſia, than for the happineſs of the Pruſſians. Did he himſelf lead a happy life? We may venture to ſay no, ſince he was neither a huſband, a lover, nor a father, and as he allowed himſelf frequently to be led away by two cruel paſſions, ambition and avarice. He deſired the ſurname of Great: he obtained it from the age in which he lived, and without doubt poſterity will confirm him in it.

But although Frederick II. had ceaſed to live, the ſame ſpirit ſtill directed the cabinet of Berlin. Some time before Leopold made peace with the Turks, Frederick-William had, as has been already ſeen, reſolved to make a diverſion in their favour. Thus Catharine loſt a defender, and found herſelf in danger of having ſhortly a new enemy to engage. That enemy did not draw the ſword againſt her, but did not the leſs provoke her. He took advantage of the diſcontent of the Poles to acquire great influence among them. He leagued himſelf with them by a new treaty. Under pretence of defending them, he marched his armies upon their territory, and what perhaps the

court of Ruſſia felt more ſenſibly, he took poſſeſſion of the cities of Dantzig and Thorn.

The Empreſs then perceived that her victories were ruinous, and that conqueſts in foreign countries might loſe to her the provinces which ſhe poſſeſſed in Poland. She felt, in fine, the neceſſity of making peace. But ſhe had too much pride to ſue for it; ſhe rather choſe to continue to fight.

Her armies ſtill obtained ſucceſs. Koutouſoff beat the united armies of the Turks and Tartars at Babada. Repnin, at the head of 40,000 men, put to flight more than 100,000 Ottomans whom he fell in with near Matzin, and who were commanded by the ſame Grand-vizir Youſouff, celebrated by the victories obtained over the Auſtrians in the Bannat. Goudowitz, brother of the ancient favourite of Peter III. made himſelf maſter of the fortreſſes of Soudjouk-Kalé, and of Anapa, upon the frontiers of the Krimea and of the Kuban, and took there 14,000 priſoners, among the number of which was the Beymanſour, that pretended prophet whom I have already mentioned.

England, who to avenge herſelf for the alliance of France and of Ruſſia, had incited the Turks to declare war with the latter power, and had laviſhed on them in vain the aſſiſtance of her arms, proviſions, and counſels, England wiſhed to take advantage of the moment when the court of Peterſburgh detached itſelf from the French to perſuade it to form an alliance with her.

England had, beſides, very preſſing reaſons to determine her to adopt this meaſure: ſhe was all at once informed of a project which conveyed terror into the ſoul of her miniſters. This project, one of the boldeſt which the genius of Catharine ever conceived, was to march an army which ſhould traverſe the country of the Uſbecs and the kingdom of Cachemire, to ſupport the throne of the Mogul, and drive the Engliſh

liſh from Bengal. Some Frenchmen, who had travelled in thoſe countries, were to have ſerved as guides to the Ruſſian army.

A blow ſo terrible, ſtruck in India, would very ſoon have cauſed itſelf to be felt in Europe, and without doubt would have changed the deſtinies of theſe two quarters of the globe. What do I ſay? The whole world would have experienced its effects. The Engliſh, whoſe ambition nature ſeems to have wiſhed to ſet bounds to, by encloſing them in narrow iſlands, but to whom the genius of commerce, more powerful than nature, gives ſo great an influence over the whole extent of the globe, the Engliſh would not at this day have held the Ruſſian legions in their pay, as theſe very legions would have carried off from them the principal ſource of the treaſures with which they pay them.

Fortunately for England, the project formed againſt her was diſcovered by one of the agents whom ſhe maintained in Ruſſia; and in order to prevent the dangers which threatened her, ſhe reſolved to neglect nothing which might regain the good-will of Catharine and of Potemkin.

After having communicated her deſign to the cabinets of Berlin and the Hague, who had acted in concert with her from the commencement of the war, ſhe haſtened to propoſe her mediation to the Empreſs. The court of London therefore ſent to Peterſburgh Fawkener, ſecretary of the privy council, and gave him charge of two propoſitions, of which the one moſt favourable to Ruſſia was not to be brought forward, but in the event of the other not being accepted. Fawkener was not deficient in ſagacity, but he had ſtill a leſs ſhare of it than Catharine. Whether it was that this Princeſs had been ſecretly apprized by her emiſſaries that the Engliſh agent had the power of making her a double propoſition, or whether ſhe had divined it, ſhe reſolved to turn it to her

her advantage. Very well pleaſed to conclude a peace with the Turks, at whatever price, that ſhe might be allowed to reinforce her armies in Poland, ſhe received Fawkener with extreme affability: ſhe admitted him to her table at Tzarſko-Zelo, placed him oppoſite to her, converſed with him during the whole repaſt, ſtill continued to chat with him after dinner, had the addreſs by turns artfully to make him apprehend the miſcarriage of his negotiation, and to give him the hopes of ſucceſs, and ſo completely entangled him at laſt, that he had not the courage to propoſe any but the moſt advantageous conditions.

Informed of the diſpoſitions of England, the Empreſs cauſed a memorial to be tranſmitted to the Daniſh miniſter, engaging him to negotiate the preliminaries of the peace with the cabinets of Berlin, of London, and the Hague.

Bernſtorff was well worthy of finding ſo important a cauſe confided to his mediation. He haſtened to make known to the three allied courts the intentions of Catharine. The agreement amongſt theſe powers and Ruſſia was terminated very ſhortly after.

By this compact, the three allied courts came to a reſolution to propoſe to the Porte the conditions of the Empreſs, and declared, that if the Turks did not accept theſe conditions, they would abandon their cauſe, and leave them to continue alone the war againſt Ruſſia.

A. D. 1792. A congreſs aſſembled at firſt at Sziſtowe was very ſoon diſſolved. The negotiators, who had not been able to come to an agreement at Sziſtowe, repaired to Galatza, and the preliminaries of the peace were at laſt ſigned by Prince Repnin and the Grand-vizir Youſouff. The definitive treaty, concluded at Yaſſy, followed immediately. The principal articles of the treaty were theſe.

Art. I. That a ſincere friendſhip ſhould for the future exiſt between the two empires.

II. That

II. That the ſtipulations of the treaties which had preceded the laſt rupture ſhould re-aſſume all their force.

III. That the Dnieper ſhould in future ſerve as the boundary of the two empires, and that all the territory ſituated on the right bank of that river ſhould be reſtored to the Porte.

IV. That the ancient rights and privileges of the principal cities of Moldavia and Wallachia ſhould be confirmed; that the inhabitants of theſe cities ſhould remain for two years exempt from all tribute; and that thoſe who might chooſe to ſell their property and retire elſewhere, ſhould be allowed to do it without oppoſition.

V. That the Porte ſhould for the future guarantee the tranquillity of the kingdom of Georgia and of the adjacent countries.

VI. That the Porte ſhould uſe every endeavour to do the ſame with reſpect to the Caucaſus.

VII. That it ſhould undertake to procure a ceſſation of the piracies of the barbareſque corſairs, and to indemnify the ſubjects of Ruſſia for the loſſes which they ſhould ſuffer from the non-execution of the three preceding articles.

VIII. That liberty ſhould be reſtored to the Ruſſians, Greeks, Moldavians, Poloneſe and Tartars who had been taken priſoners.

In the war to which this treaty put an end, Auſtria loſt 130,000 ſoldiers, and expended 3,000,000 of florins; Ruſſia loſt 200,000 men, five ſhips of the line, ſeven frigates and twenty-four ſmaller ſhips, and expended 200,000,000 of roubles; the Turks loſt 330,000 men, ſix ſhips of the line, four frigates and ſeveral other veſſels, and expended 250,900,000 of piaſtres; Sweden ſpent 70,000,000 of rix-dollars, and loſt twelve ſhips of the line, three frigates, and forty ſmall ſloops of war.

After the ſignature of the treaty, Bezborodko declared

declared, that the Empreſs declined receiving the 12,000,000 of piaſtres which the Porte had juſt engaged to pay, to indemnify her for the expenſes of the war. The Ottoman plenipotentiaries manifeſted the juſt admiration with which this generoſity was calculated to inſpire them.

Potemkin had not the ſatisfaction of concluding the peace of Ruſſia with the Porte. He had repaired to the congreſs of Yaſſi, but was very ſoon attacked with the epidemic fever which raged there; he was able to occupy himſelf but very little with the negotiations. He had with him two of the beſt phyſicians of Peterſburgh; he diſdained their counſels, and would not follow any regimen. Intemperate to exceſs, he ate at breakfaſt a whole gooſe, a ſirloin of beef or a ham, drank a prodigious quantity of wine and of Dantzig waters, and dined afterwards with the ſame voracity.

Perceiving that his malady gained ground, he thought he would cure himſelf by quitting Yaſſi, and reſolved to repair to Nicolaëff, a city which he had founded at the confluence of the Ingoul and the Bog. He took his departure. Scarcely had he proceeded three leagues when he found himſelf worſe. He alighted from the carriage, in the middle of the great road, and died under a tree, in the arms of the Princeſs Gallitzin, one of his favourite nieces.

It was at firſt given out that Potemkin had been poiſoned. His body was conveyed back to Yaſſi: it was opened, but not the ſlighteſt indication was found that could juſtify that ſuſpicion.

As ſoon as the coloſſus was overthrown, the greateſt part of thoſe who before had ſcarcely dared to raiſe their eyes to him, examined him with a ſevere inſpection, and were humiliated and ſurpriſed at the reſpect which he had impoſed on them. They could not conceive how a man, whoſe only quality was audacity, whoſe only talent was intrigue, and who was

was a compound of every vice and of every failing, had ſo long domineered over both the Empreſs and the empire.

Elevated from the loweſt order of the horſe-guards to the brilliant poſt of favourite, and to the higheſt functions in the miniſtry and in the army, Potemkin ſeveral times ſaw the heart of Catharine change, without ever loſing the aſcendant which he had over her mind. His honours, his credit, his fortune augmented inceſſantly. Almoſt all the great potentates of Europe overwhelmed him with their favours, and were candidates for his intereſt, without by that means exciting the leaſt gratitude in him. He decorated himſelf with the ribbon of their orders, and received their preſents as a lawful tribute. In his projects of war or of peace, he allowed himſelf to be directed only by his private ambition.

But his ambition was inconſtant and capricious. For ſome time he had a deſire to be Duke of Courland, and King of Poland. Shortly after, he found theſe ſovereignties under too much ſubordination, and he preferred to them the hope of driving the Ottomans out of Europe, to found a new empire on the ruins of their ſtates, and to govern there in the name of Catharine, or probably to render himſelf maſter of it.

From the firſt moment of his coming into favour, he accuſtomed himſelf to exerciſe a deſpotic ſway over all who ſurrounded him. Dreſt in a ſimple night-gown, with his legs naked, and ſtretched upon a ſofa, he received the courtiers and the foreign miniſters who viſited him, without deigning to offer them a ſeat. He more than once allowed himſelf to raiſe an inſolent hand on thoſe grandees who did not chooſe to cringe before him.

Magnificent and prodigal from exceſs of pride, he refuſed to pay to the unfortunate the moſt juſt debts; and glutted with treaſure, he committed pitiful frauds, and

and descended to the grossest meannesses to extort trifling sums of money.

The Empress, who was acquainted with all his vices, feigned ignorance of them. Victim of a first confidence, she yielded to it afterwards from habit, and for a long time apprehended that it might be dangerous for her to renounce it. After having employed Potemkin to dispute the pretensions of Orloff, she imagined that she had equal occasion for him to repress the suspected ambition of the Grand-duke. Such were the real causes of this great ascendant, which still excites wonder; but this ascendant lasted no longer after the moment that Potemkin ceased to breathe.

BOOK XII.

View of the Court of Petersburgh at Potemkin's Death—Insurrection of Kosciuszko—Final Partition of Poland—Assassination of Gustavus III.—Death of Leopold II.—French Emigrants in Russia—Of Plato Zouboff and his Family—Treaty with England—D'Armfeldt's Conspiracy—Journey of Gustavus-Adolphus II. to Petersburgh—Conquests in Persia—Death of Catharine II.—Statement of the Presents she bestowed on her Favourites.

A. D. 1792. As soon as the Empress beheld Lanskoï expire, she shut herself up in her apartment, and, abandoning herself to grief, seemed to have taken the resolution of starving herself to death. On being informed that Potemkin had breathed his last, she likewise shut herself up, but it was to give attention to the administration of the empire. She laboured for fifteen hours without intermission, and divided among her



CATHERINE II ALEXIEWNA

Empreſs of Ruſsia, at the Age of 64 Years.

Published Febr.re 1st. 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

her miniſters the direction of the affairs which Potemkin had managed.

Bezborodko was ſent to the congreſs of Yaſſi, and concluded the peace, as has been mentioned in the preceding book; and, on his return, finding himſelf at the head of the college for foreign affairs, enjoyed at firſt very high credit.

The favourite Plato Zouboff, who had hitherto been a ſtranger to buſineſs, took it into his head to intermeddle, and to aſſume the direction. He recurred to the counſels of the intriguing Markoff, who ſoon became his ſycophant, and eagerly undertook to guide him in the political career. Markoff had his reward in the entire confidence of the favourite, and in that of the Sovereign. They formed an under-hand privy-council, in which affairs of the higheſt importance were diſcuſſed, and from which Bezborodko was carefully excluded, who, without being actually diſgraced, almoſt entirely loſt his influence.

It was in one of thoſe ſelect councils, compoſed of Zouboff, Markoff, the war-miniſter Nicolaï Soltikoff, and a few others, that the annihilation of Poland, which Catharine had long in view, was finally decided. That Princeſs reſolved on it at once to gratify her pride and her vengeance. Her favourite and her rapacious miniſters ſeconded her views, in the hope of obtaining a ſhare in the rich ſpoils of the wretched Polanders.

The Empreſs never could forgive that nation the acts of the diet of 1788, nor the alliance with Pruſſia, accepted in contempt of her's, nor, above all, the conſtitution of 1791. Replete with ideas of revenge, ſhe ordered Bulgakoff, her miniſter at Warſaw, ſolemnly to declare war againſt Poland.

The diet aſſembled, heard this declaration with a majeſtic compoſure, to which rapidly ſucceeded the noble enthuſiaſm that the ardor of ſelf-defence inſpires. The whole nation adopted the feelings of the diet. The king himſelf was carried down the ſtream,

or

or rather pretended to be ſo; and the Poloneſe had the weakneſs to believe that, renouncing his ancient ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion to Ruſſia, and awakening out of his habitual indolence, he was going to become the defender of liberty. An army was haſtily levied, and the command conferred on Prince Joſeph Poniatowſky, whom inexperience and frivolous habits very much diſqualified for undertaking ſuch a burden.

The Poloneſe could oppoſe 150,000 men to the deſigns of Catharine; but they never had the ſkill of bringing them to act in concert, and their ſeparate corps ſoon felt themſelves preſſed between an army of 80,000 Ruſſians, who re-entered Beſſarabia on the territory which extends along the Bog; another of 10,000 aſſembled in the vicinity of Kiœff, and a third of 30,000, which penetrated into Lithuania.

I ſhall not here detail the different combats which deluged with blood the plains of Poland, and which, notwithſtanding ſome advantages obtained by the Poloneſe, deſtroyed the greateſt part of their forces. It was on this occaſion that Thaddeus Koſciuſzko, who was then only lieutenant under the young Joſeph Poniatowſky, diſplayed the talents which procured him the confidence of his own country, the reſentment of Ruſſia, and the eſteem of all the reſt of Europe.

Catharine, meanwhile, not confiding entirely to the force of her arms, had never loſt ſight of negotiation. She had the definitive partition of Poland propoſed to Frederick-William, who undoubtedly deſired it no leſs eagerly than ſhe did. She ſecretly gained over the two brothers Kaſſakowſky, the hetman Branitzky, Rzewuſky, and, what was of more conſequence than all, Felix Potocky, who flattered himſelf, perhaps, with the hope of mounting the throne of Poland, and became only the ſlave of Ruſſia. She, finally, inſiſted that Staniſlaus-Auguſtus ſhould publickly declare that it was neceſſary to ſubmit to the aſcendant of the Ruſſian arms. That monarch

narch had the pitiful courage to ſwallow this indignity: but the Empreſs did not requite it by the ſlighteſt farther indulgence.

A. D. 1793. The confederation of the partiſans of Ruſſia aſſembled at Grodno, and had the humiliation of beholding the Ruſſian general proudly ſeat himſelf under the canopy of that throne which he was juſt going to ſubvert. The Ruſſian miniſter Sievers, at the ſame time, publiſhed a manifeſto, to declare that his ſovereign incorporated with her dominions all the Poliſh territory which her arms had invaded.

The King of Pruſſia, in connivance with Catharine, had already marched an army into Poland.

The Ruſſians, ſpread over the provinces of that kingdom, diſplayed a ſpirit of rapine of which hiſtory furniſhes but few examples. Warſaw likewiſe became the theatre of their exceſſes. The Ruſſian general Igœlſtrom, a man deſtitute of talent, but of the moſt ſhocking brutality, and an avarice the moſt inſatiable, domineered in that city. He gave full ſcope to the licentiouſneſs of the Ruſſian ſoldiery, and made the wretched inhabitants feel the complete weight of his arrogance and barbarity. The defenders of Poland had been under the neceſſity of diſperſing: their property was confiſcated, their families reduced to ſervitude. Such an accumulation of woe again inſpired a reſolution to deliver their country from Ruſſian oppreſſion. Some of them ventured to aſſemble, and invited Koſciuſzko to come and take the command.

That general had retired to Leipſig with Hugo Kolontay, Zajonczek and Inigo Potocky, a very enlightened man, the friend of his country, and in every reſpect the oppoſite of Felix. Theſe four Polanders did not heſitate whether or not they ſhould approve the reſolution of their worthy compatriots: but they were ſenſible, that in order to ſucceſs, the peaſantry

muſt be reſtored to liberty, who had hitherto been treated in Poland merely as beaſts of burden.

Koſciuſzko and Zajonczek inſtantly repaired to the frontiers of Poland. The laſt ventured as far as Warſaw, and had frequent conferences with the principal conſpirators. A banker, named Kapuſtas, a very ſhrewd and reſolute man, became reſponſible to him for the inhabitants of the capital. He had interviews likewiſe with ſeveral officers, who deteſted the Ruſſian yoke. Every thing, in ſhort, was ripe for inſurrection, when the Ruſſian commanders, to whom the preſence of Koſciuſzko on the frontiers had given umbrage, obliged him to defer the moment of action.

To elude the jealouſy of the Ruſſians, Koſciuſzko withdrew into Italy, and Zajonezek repaired to Dreſden, whither Inigo Potocky and Kolontay had retired; but Zajonezek ſuddenly re-appeared at Warſaw. The King himſelf denounced him to the Ruſſian general Igœlſtrom, who had a conference with him, and ordered him to quit the Poliſh territories. It became neceſſary to enter upon action or to renounce the enterprize entirely. Zajonezek reſolved on the former.

A. D. 1794. Koſciuſzko was recalled from Italy and arrived at Cracow, where the Polanders received him as their deliverer. In defiance of the orders of the Ruſſians, Colonel Madalinſky refuſed to diſband his regiment. Several other officers had joined him. Koſciuſzko was proclaimed general of this little army, and the declaration of revolt was almoſt immediately proclaimed. Three hundred peaſants, armed with ſcythes, joined the ſtandard of Koſciuſzko. That general ſoon found himſelf oppoſed to 7000 Ruſſians, who were put to flight after a vigorous reſiſtance.

On being informed at Warſaw of Koſciuſzko's ſucceſs, the Ruſſian general Igœlſtrom put under arreſt all thoſe whom he believed partiſans of the inſurrection; but theſe meaſures only ſerved to irritate the

conſpirators

conſpirators more and more. The revolt made a violent exploſion. Two thouſand Ruſſians were maſſacred. Igœlſtrom, beſieged in his own houſe, offered to capitulate, and availing himſelf of the delay granted him, eſcaped to the Pruſſian camp, which was at no great diſtance from Warſaw.

Wilna, the capital of Lithuania, followed the example of Warſaw; but the triumph of the inſurgents was there leſs terrible. Colonel Jazinſky, who was at their head, conducted himſelf with ſo much ability, that he got hold of all the Ruſſians, without ſpilling a ſingle drop of blood. The inhabitants of the cantons of Chelm and Lublin likewiſe declared themſelves in a ſtate of inſurrection, and were followed by three Poliſh regiments employed in the ſervice of Ruſſia.

Some of the principal partiſans of Ruſſia, the hetman Kaſſakowſky, the biſhop his brother, Zabiello, Ozarowſky and Anckwiez, were tried and hanged, the firſt at Wilna, the others at Warſaw.

Koſciuſzko ſtrained every nerve to increaſe his army. He enliſted the peaſants; and, in order to inſpire them with the greater emulation, aſſumed their dreſs, partook of their fare, and laviſhed on them every ſpecies of encouragement; but thoſe men, too long degraded in Poland, were not yet worthy of the liberty which was tendered them. They entertained ſuſpicions of the intention of the nobles, who, on their part, at leaſt many of them, reflected with regret on their abſurd privileges.

Staniſlaus-Auguſtus and his partiſans farther inflamed the jealouſy of the nobles, by repreſenting Koſciuſzko's views as diſaſtrous to them, and by inceſſant cabals in favour of Ruſſia.

The Empreſs, meanwhile not ſatisfied with increaſing the number of her troops in Poland, had ſent thither ſome of her beſt generals. After ſeveral engagements, in one of which Frederick-William, who had advanced to ſupport the Ruſſians, fought

at the head of his troops, Koſciuſzko, who wiſhed to prevent the junction of the Ruſſian generals Souwaroff and Ferſen, found himſelf at once attacked by this laſt at Maciejowice, and abandoned by General Poninſky, who ought to have come to join him. The talents, the valour, the deſpair of Koſciuſzko, could not prevent the Poloneſe from ſinking under numbers. The greateſt part of his army periſhed on the field of battle, or laid down their arms. He himſelf, covered with wounds, fell down ſenſeleſs, and was taken priſoner.

All who could eſcape the ſword of the conqueror fled and ſhut themſelves up in the ſuburbs of Prague, adjoining Warſaw, and were purſued thither by General Souwaroff. The ſiege of Prague could be of no long duration. The very day after his arrival, the ardent Souwaroff gave orders for the aſſault, and having ſtormed the ſuburb, put to the ſword not the ſoldiers only, but all the inhabitants, without diſtinction of ſex or age. Twenty thouſand innocents fell victims to the fury of the Ruſſian commander. Stained with the blood of thoſe unfortunate wretches, the barbarian entered at the head of his army into Warſaw. Some corps of inſurgents, ſcattered over the provinces, haſtened to ſurrender. The courts of Peterſburgh and Berlin parcelled out at pleaſure the remainder of ill-fated Poland; and the mercileſs courtiers of Catharine diſtributed among themſelves the effects of multitudes of the proſcribed. Staniſlaus-Auguſtus, relegated to Grodno, was condemned to live in obſcurity on a penſion granted him by the Empreſs, while Repnin, appointed governor of the invaded provinces, there diſplayed the magnificence of a ſovereign Prince.

Zajonczek and Kolontai, who had made their eſcape into the Auſtrian territories, had the mortification of finding the rights of hoſpitality violated in their perſons: they were detained priſoners. Koſciuſzko, Inigo Potocki, Kapuſtas and ſome others, were

were tranſported to Peterſburgh and immured in dungeons. Among thoſe unfortunate beings was the young poet Niemcewicz, diſtinguiſhed by his valour and by his talents, the friend of Koſciuſzko, wounded and taken priſoner by his ſide. The blood which he had ſhed in the cauſe of his country was not the only offence againſt Catharine which Niemcewicz had to expiate. He had compoſed on her ſome verſes replete with ſarcaſtic eaſe and energy. She had him at firſt ſhut up in the fortreſs of Peterſburgh, and afterwards ſent him to Schluſſelburgh, where he underent the moſt barbarous treatment.

All who had rendered themſelves criminal in the eyes of Catharine did not meet with the ſame ſeverity: ſhe knew how to be ſparing of chaſtiſement which might produce conſequences dangerous to her. What do I ſay? She ſometimes carried her diſſimulation ſo far as publicly to reward thoſe whom in ſecret ſhe had an itching to puniſh, with a reſolution, undoubtedly, to glut her vengeance whenever ſhe could find opportunity of doing it with ſafety. When, after the ſignature of the preliminaries of peace at Galatza, Prince Repnin, thinking he had reaſon to complain of the Empreſs and of Potemkin, retired to Moſcow, all the malecontents who inhabited that capital acknowledged him for their chief, and the leaders rallied around him.

Repnin had embraced the errors of a ſect of *illuminati* who, under the name of Martiniſts, for ſome time paſt infeſted the northern parts of Germany. He formed a club, to which he gave the title of thoſe fanatics, and admitted thoſe only into it whom he well knew to be partakers of his indignation againſt the court of Peterſburgh. It is alleged that the object of thoſe malecontents was to operate a reform in the ſtate, and to oblige Catharine to ſurrender the crown to her ſon. Be this as it may, that Princeſs was ſoon informed by her emiſſaries, that extravagant reveries were not the ſole employment of the Mar-

tiniſts of Moſcow. Several of them were ſuddenly arreſted, ſtript of their offices, as well as of the inſignia of their dignities, and ſent into exile, ſome to Siberia, ſome to their own eſtates. At the ſame time, all their papers were burnt, as an attempt to annihilate the very ſlighteſt traces of a conſpiracy.

Repnin being ordered to court, believed himſelf undone: but the Empreſs, to whom he was an object of deteſtation, received him with a ſmiling countenance, overwhelmed him with praiſes, and appointed him governor of Livonia, from whence, after the final partition of Poland, he was promoted to the government-general of Lithuania. It was at this period that Repnin went to reſide at Grodno, whither the feeble and unfortunate Staniſlaus-Auguſtus had already repaired.

The exhibition of the enſanguined revolution which the gallant Koſciuſzko attempted, laid me under the neceſſity of poſtponing the detail of various events: they ſhall be inſerted in this place.

Impatient to ſee Guſtavus III. engage in his romantic and perilous enterpriſe, Catharine gave orders to the Count de Stackelberg, her miniſter at Stockholm, to promiſe that Prince 12,000 Ruſſian ſoldiers, and an annual ſubſidy of 300,000 roubles, to aſſiſt him in reſtoring the King of France to the exerciſe of his authority. Aſſuredly the Empreſs had no intention to fulfil that promiſe, which it was always in her power to elude. Her only intention was to accelerate the moment of the confederation of Kings, and to excite her rivals to deſtroy each other.

But Guſtavus was not permitted time to go and conſummate the ruin of his country on the frontiers of France. A great majority of the Swediſh nobles were always diſſatisfied with the revolution of 1772. They gave a proof of this when they refuſed to fight at Friderikſham. In pardoning their diſobedience, Guſtavus only emboldened them, and ſerved the views of the Ruſſians, who were inceſſantly inſtigating them againſt

againſt him. Three young perſons, on this, reſolved to put him to death, and caſt lots for the infamous honour of giving him the firſt blow. A maſked ball, at which Guſtavus was to be preſent, favoured their horrible deſign. The three conſpirators concurred in it. Ankerſtrom, taking advantage of the inſtant when the croud was gathered round Guſtavus, ſhot him in the reins with a piſtol. The Swediſh monarch expired a few days afterward. His ſon, Guſtavus-Adolphus, a youth of fourteen, ſucceeded him, and the regency was given to the Duke of Sudermania.

A few days before, the Emperor Leopold II. had died at Vienna, in a manner leſs violent, but rather ſudden, and left the Imperial crown, the Arch-dutchy of Auſtria, and the kingdoms of Hungary and Bohemia, to his ſon Francis II.

The death of the two chiefs of the league of kings againſt France, dreadfully depreſſed the French emigrants, who flocked in great numbers to Peterſburgh, to ſolicit a ſupply of troops, which the Empreſs did not heſitate to promiſe, without the ſlighteſt intention of granting.

That Princeſs, nevertheleſs, took a deep intereſt in the revolution of France. She was apprehenſive that the principles of it might penetrate into Ruſſia, and produce a concuſſion which might ſubvert her throne. All the French who declared attachment to their ancient government, were welcomed by her, and the others cruelly proſcribed. The miniſter of France, Segur, quitted Peterſburgh; but while ſhe blamed the opinions of that miniſter, Catharine could not refrain from doing juſtice to his virtues, to his talents, and to the elegance of his manners; ſhe ſaid to him when he took leave:—"I am an ariſtocrate, for I "muſt follow my profeſſion." Shortly after ſhe recalled Simolin, her miniſter at Paris. She prohibited the *chargé d'affaires* of France to approach her court, and forbid her miniſters to hold any intercourſe with

him. Her reſentment againſt the French, and all thoſe who applauded their revolution, threatened to become fatal even to Colonel Laharpe, who was entruſted with the education of the two young Princes Alexander and Conſtantine, and who, in the united characters of Helvetian and philoſopher, carried the love of liberty in his boſom. The patricians of Switzerland had proſcribed him, and, ſeconded by the French emigrants and the agents of the coalition, they made various efforts to ruin him, by rendering him ſuſpected to Catharine. But, whether from policy, whether from pride, though hurt at the ſentiments of a man who had long acquired a title to her conſideration, and who had frequently dared to defend his principles in her preſence and againſt herſelf, that Princeſs refuſed to ſacrifice him.

It will perhaps be acceptable to know who were the emigrants of higheſt diſtinction at the court of Ruſſia.

The firſt was Eſterhazy, emiſſary of the French Princes, and inveſted with the title of their ambaſſador. A haughty and mean courtier, of a harſh ſpirit and a very diſagreeable figure, Eſterhazy had contrived to make rudeneſs paſs for a noble auſterity. The champion of unlimited monarchy, and of every thing which he called the government of Charlemagne, he had the addreſs, by an oſtentatious diſplay of his principles, and by contemptible flattery, to render himſelf dear to Catharine and to the favourite Zouboff, whoſe moſt aſſiduous adulator he was. Always affecting extreme poverty, he obtained ſucceſſively from the Empreſs a conſiderable penſion, a palace, and preſents of every kind. He inſtructed his ſon in the art of begging, and made him appear in a ſhabby dreſs, in order to excite the commiſeration of the Sovereign. Eſterhazy, beſides, injured, as far as it was in his power, Choiſeul-Gouffier, Bombelles, and the other emigrants. He neglected the

Grand-

Grand-duke in the moſt inſulting manner, and was rewarded for it by Zouboff, who ſoon procured him admiſſion into the ſecret political junto.

Bombelles made himſelf conſpicuous only by an ephemeral ſtatelineſs. His pretenſion and his inſignificancy had a proper value ſet upon them.

Saint-Prieſt ſucceeded better. The Empreſs expreſſed for him much benevolence and reſpect. But the deſire of appearing grateful was perhaps her only motive for acting in this manner. Be how it may, ſhe ſaid one day, after a long converſation with Saint-Prieſt:—"I could paſs my life with ſuch miniſters." She paſſed only one winter in this manner. Saint-Prieſt quitted Peterſburgh and repaired to Stockholm. Catharine had entruſted him with a ſecret commiſſion, and has not ceaſed to employ him in her political arrangements.

With no leſs underſtanding than Saint-Prieſt, Choiſeul Gouffier did not inſpire the ſame confidence. His exterior, his ſtyle of converſation, announced only a courtier who had great pretentions to fineſſe. Beſides, the Empreſs was prejudiced againſt him, becauſe, inſtead of rendering her all the ſervice with the divan which ſhe expected, he had induced the Turks to furniſh ſubſidies to Sweden, to enable that power to attack Ruſſia. On his firſt arrival at Peterſburgh, the Empreſs amuſed herſelf ſometimes with embarraſſing him by inſidious queſtions on the ſubject of that negotiation: but he patiently ſupported her diſpleaſure, and at length inſenſibly acquired ſome degree of credit both with Catharine herſelf and with Zouboff.

Calonne too repaired to Peterſburgh. He undertook this journey under pretence of propoſing to the Empreſs the purchaſe of a valuable collection of pictures he had to diſpoſe of, and made an attempt to negotiate for the French Princes and for the coalition of Kings. But ſome other emigrants, and particularly Eſterhazy, took advantage of their influence to prevent

prevent his being liſtened to. Beſides, his conduct was by no means calculated to procure ſucceſs in a court where etiquette was ſo rigorouſly obſerved. Being invited to dine with the miniſters, he made the company wait for him long beyond the hour, arrived ſome time after they had ſate down to table, and excuſed himſelf by ſaying, that he thought the faſhion there was that of England. He perſiſted to trifle in the ſame manner when the Empreſs invited him to Tzarſko-Zelo, which highly offended her.

His preſumption, and neglect of eſtabliſhed uſages, expoſed Calonne to an affront which he muſt have very ſenſibly felt. Having been admitted into the company of the Empreſs at Tzarſko-Zelo, he imagined that he might preſent himſelf when he pleaſed at Peterſburgh. He reſorted to the Imperial palace, and followed into the apartments ſome emigrants who had letters of admiſſion. But as the yeomen of the guard were furniſhed with a liſt of the perſons whom the Empreſs had diſtinguiſhed by that mark of favour, Calonne's forwardneſs was immediately remarked: nay, it is believed that his own compatriots were the firſt to point it out to the Empreſs.* Be that as it may, orders were given to let Calonne know that he failed in point of etiquette. On this, two of the yeomen came up to him in the inner apartments and deſired him to walk out. As they ſpoke in the Ruſſian tongue, and he did not underſtand their meaning, he ſtepped back, and thought of overawing them by aſſuming a ſtately air. But the two yeomen took him rudely enough by the arm, and fairly turned him out of doors. It was on Sunday; the court was brilliant and crouded; and the mortification was ſo much the more ſevere, that the ſcene paſſed in the preſence of many witneſſes. Calonne complained loudly of this treatment: the Empreſs was ſoon informed of it. Wiſhing to efface from his mind the impreſſion it had made, ſhe ſent him an invitation, and from that moment he had his letter of admiſſion.

admiſſion. He nevertheleſs afterward took care to behave with more circumſpection. The ſpirit of levity and the audacious vanity which had formerly gained Calonne many partiſans in France, could not procure him the ſame advantages at the court of Peterſburgh. Little beloved, and ſtill leſs eſteemed, he was diſtinguiſhed there by hardly any other name than that of the *thief*.

In ſpeaking of the French emigrants who made their appearance at the court of Catharine, I ought perhaps to have begun with the Count d'Artois. The Empreſs thought herſelf obliged to receive him in a ſtyle of magnificence; but ſhe ſometimes exhibited plain indications that ſhe longed for his departure. The Count d'Artois' reſidence at Peterſburgh excited frequent murmurs among the Ruſſians, on account of the expenſe it occaſioned, and it was ſtill more fatal to Frenchmen ſettled in Ruſſia. They were forced to take the oath of fidelity to the pretender to the crown of France, and to ſwear implacable hatred to the French republic. Thoſe who refuſed, could obtain a delay of no more than three weeks for the arrangement of their affairs, and were afterwards rigorouſly compelled to quit the Ruſſian territories, where moſt of them left debts, which muſt of courſe have been conſidered as ſo much loſt.

The Count d'Artois had in his retinue Roger Damas, d'Eſcars, the Swiſs colonel de Roll, and the biſhop of Arras. This laſt was the Prince's chief counſellor. He never ſpoke of public affairs but with a haughtineſs and impetuoſity which rendered his eccleſiaſtic garb but the more remarkable. The Ruſſian courtiers themſelves were ſhocked at it, and congratulated the French on their deliverance from that man whom they denominated the *travelling governor*.

About this time the news of Dumourier's defection reached Ruſſia. The emigrants flattered themſelves that this general would preſently reconquer France, and

the Count d'Artois made no ſecret of it in talking to the deputation of French merchants who had been conſtrained to wait on him.

An emigrant of a rank leſs elevated, but of an eaſy wit, and having ſtill more pretenſion than talents, likewiſe lived ſome time at Peterſburgh. This was Senac of Meilhan, the ancient intendant of Valenciennes, and known by ſome imitations of the works of the academician Duclos.

When the poſthumous works of Frederick II. appeared, the Empreſs envied that Prince the glory of having immortalized himſelf by his writings, as well as by his actions. She wiſhed that a work, decorated with her name, ſhould dictate to poſterity the admiration which ſhe flattered herſelf with the hope of having inſpired. She had long been collecting memoirs reſpecting the principal events of her reign; and not having ſufficient reliance on her own talent for writing, thought of having them ſecretly digeſted by a pen more practiſed than her own. The miſerable ſucceſs of the Antidote had demonſtrated to her that it is not very eaſy to compoſe in French a book worthy of being read. She deſired Grimm, therefore, to find her a man capable of fulfilling her intentions; Grimm ſent Senac of Meilhan.

Before ſhe employed this writer, Catharine thought proper to ſtudy his genius and character. She received him with great benevolence, and converſed with him ſeveral times. But inſtead of appearing as modeſt, and as much devoted to the Empreſs as ſhe expected, Senac diſcovered a lofty ambition, and even let it appear that he entertained hopes of being ſent miniſter from Ruſſia to Conſtantinople. Catharine reſented this indiſcretion: ſhe did not truſt Senac with her memoirs, and haſtened to diſmiſs him, after ſecuring him a penſion of 1500 roubles.

The court of Peterſburgh had been for ſome time divided into two parties. At the head of the one were old Oſtermann, the Woronzoffs and Bezborodko, who

who endeavoured to ſhelter themſelves under the name of the Grand-duke, but which that Prince had always the prudence to diſavow, and of whoſe intrigues he was ignorant, or at leaſt pretended to be ſo. The other party was that of Zouboff, Markoff, and Nicolai-Ivanowitz-Soltikoff, an avaricious and crafty courtier, who, though governor to the Grand-duke's children, had ſervilely devoted himſelf to the favourite.

This favourite was farther ſupported by his own father, his three brothers and his ſiſter, all of them overwhelmed with the Sovereign's benefits. It is neceſſary to make the reader acquainted with this family.

The father of the favourite Zouboff had been vice-governor of a province, and entruſted in that capacity with the adminiſtration of the finances, of the magazines and of the manufactures depending on the department. Theſe eſtabliſhments were conſumed by fire, and it was ſuſpected that he himſelf had occaſioned the conflagration, as a diſpenſation from making up his accounts. Whether it were ſo or not, that fire amounted to a revenue of 60,000 roubles in favour of the vice-governor. After the elevation of his ſon, Zouboff obtained the important office of procurator-general of the ſenate, and made a ſcandalous traffic of juſtice. He bought up ſuits of law, be what they might, and had them decided according to his fancy. His ſon himſelf was ſo much aſhamed of it, that he reſolved to remove him, and got him appointed ſenator in the diſtrict of Moſcow, where he died and left an immenſe fortune.

Nicolaï Zouboff, the eldeſt ſon of that extortioner, was an eſtimable man. He ſerved in Poland, diſtinguiſhed himſelf there by his valour, and married the daughter of Field-mareſchal Souwaroff.

Valerian Zouboff, brigadier-major of the guards, likewiſe ſerved in the wars of Poland, where he had a leg carried away by a cannon-ſhot. Audacious libertine,

bertine, he for ſome time partook, with his brother Plato, of the ſecret favours of the Sovereign, and ſince commanded the army which marched againſt the Perſians.

Alexander Zouboff, chamberlain to the Empreſs, a man deſtitute of talents, but ambitious, was ſon-in-law of the opulent Prince Weſemſkoï, who had engroſſed the three places of procurator-general of the ſenate of Peterſburgh, of miniſter of the finances, and miniſter of the interior.

Finally, Plato Zouboff, lover of Catharine II. decorated with the title of prince, and grand-maſter of artillery, enjoyed all the credit formerly poſſeſſed by Orloff, Lanſkoï and Potemkin. Miniſters, generals, ambaſſadors, might be ſeen dancing attendance at the toilet of this minion, and humbly paying court to him, aſſured that theſe acts of degrading complaiſance were the only method of purchaſing the good-will of the Empreſs.

The ſiſter of Zouboff was married to the chamberlain Jerebzoff. This woman, beautiful and much addicted to gallantry, employed part of her revenue in acts of beneficence, and frequently failed to keep an engagement with her lovers, to go and relieve the miſerable. She abhorred the court, etiquette, the great world, and would willingly have paſſed her whole life in diſhabille. Sir Charles Whitworth, the Britiſh miniſter, attached himſelf to her, and had the good fortune, by her credit and that of the favourite, to appeaſe the Empreſs, whom the laſt Turkiſh war had irritated againſt the court of London.

Old Nikita Dimidoff, well known from his wealth and extravagances, had fallen paſſionately in love with the favourite's ſiſter, and that lady, who never could find in her heart to be cruel, received very conſiderable preſents from him.

The intimate confidant of Zouboff was a kinſman of his own, named Kazinſky, a frivolous young man, but ſprightly, for whom he had procured a chamberlain's

berlain's place, and whoſe advice he frequently followed.

Zouboff likewiſe repoſed much confidence in a Raguſan, of the name of Alteſti. Placed at firſt in the houſe of a free merchant of Conſtantinople, Alteſti got acquainted with the Ruſſian miniſter Bulgakoff, who, ſetting a value on the pliant and reſolute diſpoſition of this young Italian, attached him to his legation and carried him to Warſaw. Alteſti got into favour with ſome Poloneſe poſſeſſed of influence, and obtained a miſſion to Peterſburgh, where he caballed, with equal addreſs and ingratitude, againſt his protector, and ſucceeded in procuring his recal. He found means at the ſame time to get into the good graces of Zouboff, who took him for his ſecretary, and initiated him in the myſteries of his junto.

Alteſti drew up the manifeſto which paved the way for the laſt partition of Poland, and it will be preſently ſeen that this was not the only ſervice which he rendered, both to the Empreſs and to her favourite.

Among the perſonages whom I have been mentioning, ſome had very great influence in the cabinet of Peterſburgh; but they did not always direct affairs as they pleaſed. The Empreſs kept an eye over them. Neither her age nor infirmities prevented her from tranſacting buſineſs every day with her miniſters, and from deciding matters of the higheſt importance by her ſole authority.

Zouboff, yielding to the importunity of his ſiſter and of Sir Charles Whitworth, perſuaded the Empreſs to conclude a new treaty of commerce with England. That which had expired in 1786, was not till now renewed.

The Empreſs, at the ſame time, publiſhed two edicts, which forbid the importation of the merchandize of France into her ſtates. This was a double triumph to the Engliſh. The new treaty of commerce extended their privileges, and they flut-

tered

tered themſelves with the proſpect of ſubſtituting the ſtuffs of India and of their own manufacture in place of the beautiful productions of Lyons, and the wines of Madeira and Oporto inſtead of the wines of France.

They obtained ſtill more. Catharine promiſed to add in a ſhort time to their fleets a Ruſſian ſquadron. The order was even given to accelerate the armaments at Cronſtadt. Stackelberg urged the court of Stockholm not to maintain the neutrality with France; and Krudener, animated by the ſame ſpirit, tormented the court of Copenhagen with his ſolicitations. But the Swedes and the Danes, who conſidered the advantages of their commerce only, remained inflexible.

The Grand-ſignor ſent to Peterſburgh an ambaſſador, who made magnificent preſents to the Empreſs and her miniſters. That Princeſs diſpatched at the ſame time to Conſtantinople Koutouzoff, with the title of ambaſſador extraordinary. Koutouzoff employed prayers and menaces to prevail on the Porte to expel all the French from the Ottoman territory. The attempt was vain. The divan, in indignation at the defection of the Engliſh, who had abandoned them in the laſt war, and enlightened with reſpect to their real intereſts by the miniſter of France Deſcorches, preſerved the reſpect due to a nation which they regarded as their moſt faithful and ancient ally.

During this period, the ambaſſador of Ruſſia at Stockholm, and the Swediſh party attached to that power, made inceſſant cabals to deprive the Duke of Sudermania of the regency, and to have a council named to the young King, entruſted with the government, under the protection of the Empreſs. They even formed a conſpiracy, which was diſcovered at the inſtant of exploſion. In order to give a juſt idea of this, it is neceſſary to return a little farther back.

In 1782, Guſtavus III. made a will, according to which he gave directions, in caſe of his death, that, conformably

conformably to the fundamental laws of the kingdom, his ſon, Guſtavus-Adolphus, ſhould not take the reins of government till he had attained the age of one and twenty. During the war which he carried on againſt Ruſſia, he made a ſecond, which fixed at eighteen years the majority of Guſtavus-Adolphus, on account of the unexpected progreſs which this young Prince had made in his ſtudies. Theſe two wills granted to the Duke of Sudermania the regency, and all the rights of royalty, except that of creating nobles and chevaliers.

When Guſtavus had been aſſaſſinated by Ankerſtrom, and as ſoon as the phyſicians had announced his approaching death, this monarch made a third will, which, in leaving the regency to the Duke of Sudermania, obliged him to take into his council the barons d'Armfeld and de Taube. At the moment when the King expired this writing was preſented to the Duke, who read it, and threw it into the fire.

Mention was therefore made of the two firſt wills only, which, depoſited in the tribunal of the court, alone bore a legal character, and in compliance with which the Duke of Sudermania was declared regent. This Prince immediately recalled the Baron de Reuterholm, who, after the diet of 1789, had withdrawn into Italy. Without having the ſmalleſt title, Reuterholm became the principal counſellor, or rather the prime miniſter of the regent.

Almoſt all thoſe who had poſſeſſed the confidence of Guſtavus III. were devoted to Ruſſia, and were removed. Armfeldt went into Italy, becauſe he was, in ſpite of himſelf, named miniſter plenipotentiary to the court of Naples. But although at a diſtance from Stockholm, that miniſter did not the leſs labour to deprive the Duke of Sudermania of the regency, and even of life. He kept up a conſtant correſpondence with the court of Peterſburgh, with which the Raguſan Alteſti, ſecretary of Zouboff, was entruſted. He traced the plan of a conſpiracy, into which thoſe

friends whom he had left in Sweden were admitted. He at last believed himself on the eve of success. But his movements were observed; his steps were watched by spies; his papers were carried off, sent into Sweden, and conveyed to the tribunal of the court, which at the same instant caused his accomplices to be arrested and brought to trial.

A. D. 1795. The greater part of the proceedings on this trial were printed, and proved to the Swedish nation that the conspirators acted in concert with Russia, and reckoned upon the assistance of that power.

These circumstances were not calculated to conciliate the two courts. They on the contrary grew every day more irritated against each other; and in a short time, the notes which the Russian ministers presented to Stockholm contained nothing but menaces, and even serious accusations against the regent. The Swedish minister replied to them uniformly with courage, but likewise with decency.

The regent had resolved to marry the young King of Sweden to the Princess of Mecklenburgh. The marriage was even determined upon, and the Princess of Mecklenburgh proclaimed future Queen of Sweden. The Empress manifested much dissatisfaction at this. She pretended that Gustavus III. had promised her the hand of his son, for one of the young Grand-dutchesses, and she regarded as an insult the non-fulfilment of that promise. When the Count de Schwerin was commissioned to go and announce at Petersburgh the marriage of the King of Sweden, Catharine, informed before-hand of the object of his mission, dispatched a courier to the frontiers of Finland, to forbid Schwerin to make his entrance into Russia.

Shortly afterwards, the Empress appointed as her minister at Stockholm the Baron de Budberg. It seemed that, affecting to disdain the court of Sweden, she had sent that agent there, both on account of his extreme

extreme youth and his great haughtineſs. It was recommended to him to diſplay conſiderable pride and inſolence: undoubtedly he far exceeded his commiſſion.

A. D. 1796. The miſunderſtanding between Sweden and Ruſſia ſeemed to have arrived at its utmoſt height, when a French emigrant, named Chriſtin, appeared at Stockholm. He had arrived from England at Gottenburgh, and gave out that he was charged with a miſſion from the Count d'Artois to the Empreſs of Ruſſia. But this was only the better to conceal the object of his journey, as he had ſecret orders to prevail on the regent to come to an accommodation with the Empreſs. This negotiation ſucceeded; and ſhortly after General Budberg, uncle of the young *chargé-d'affaires*, arrived in Sweden with the title of ambaſſador of the Empreſs. General Budberg made known to the regent the intentions of his ſovereign. She demanded that this Prince and the Baron de Reuterholm ſhould prepare the young King to repudiate the Princeſs of Mecklenburgh, to marry one of the grand-daughters of the Empreſs, and that, beſides, he ſhould engage not to inſiſt on his conſort's being ſubjected to the law which preſcribes to the Queens of Sweden to adopt the religion of the country: ſhe wiſhed, that afterwards the regent and Reuterholm ſhould accompany Guſtavus-Adolphus to Peterſburgh.

Catharine ſpoke: ſhe was obeyed. The regent, his pupil, his miniſter, and a great number of courtiers, repaired to Peterſburgh. The pride of the Empreſs was gratified: ſhe now diſplayed her magnificence only.

The young King appeared to be extremely affected by the good will which the Empreſs manifeſted towards him; but he was ſtill more ſo with the charms of the Grand-dutcheſs Alexandra: the ſight of her eaſily obliterated from his mind the Princeſs of Mecklenburgh. Propoſals of marriage were very ſpeedily

made, and the day of contract was fixed, which was to have been followed by a ſplendid entertainment. When the inſtrument was preſented to the King, that he might put his ſignature to it, he obſerved, to the great aſtoniſhment of the Imperial family, that the fundamental laws of Sweden obliged him to demand that the Princeſs ſhould change her religion, and that without this condition he could not ſign the contract.

The Empreſs at firſt employed ſolicitations and flattery to perſuade the young monarch to overlook that clauſe: but, perceiving that he could not be prevailed on to alter his reſolution, ſhe aroſe coldly and went out: the Grand-duke, the Grand-dutcheſs and their children followed her. The banquet did not take place; and the next day Guſtavus-Adolphus and his retinue quitted Peterſburgh.

Catharine had conquered by her arms and by her intrigues nearly the half of Poland, the Krimea, the Kuban, and a part of the frontiers of Turkey; but ſhe had no occaſion to have recourſe to combats in order to invade another country, rich and well peopled: intrigue was ſufficient. This country was Courland, over which ſtill reigned the feeble ſon of the ſanguinary Biren.

In order to comprehend all the advantage of this acquiſition, it is neceſſary to give an idea of the geography of Courland, of its productions, and of its inhabitants.

Courland, ſituated between the 56th and 58th degree of northern latitude, is divided into three parts, Courland Proper, Semigallia and the circle of Pilton. It is bounded by Livonia, Lithuania, Samogitia and the Baltic Sea. The Dwina ſeparates it from Livonia on the north, and waters its frontiers through a ſpace of more than ſixty leagues. The ſouth of Courland is contiguous to Lithuania and Samogitia, from Warnowitz up to the river Heiligenatz, which empties itſelf into the Baltic.

The

The portion of Samogitia which ſeparates Courland from Pruſſia is no more than four or five leagues in breadth, and it is there that are to be found the only coaſts which Poland has upon the Baltic.

Courland, more favoured as to the means of navigation, has, upon this ſea, more than a hundred leagues of coaſt, which preſent ſeveral creeks, ſeveral bays, and the excellent ports of Liébau and of Windau. This laſt, which never is ſhut up by the ice, will, without doubt, one day become the ſtation of the Ruſſian fleets. It may be eaſily put in a ſtate to contain a hundred ſhips of the line, which can at any period menace Sweden and Denmark.

Courland is watered by the Dwina, the Windau, the Aau, the Ekran and the Suſſeg, and it would be eaſy to eſtabliſh there an interior navigation. The Windau and the Aau might, in a particular manner, facilitate the commerce of the Baltic with Lithuania and Samogitia, from whence theſe rivers take their ſource.

There are alſo in Courland lakes and marſhes. The principal lakes are thoſe of Saueken and, of Angern, of Reſſinaïten, of Liébau and of Popentée. The cantons which ſupply the greateſt quantity of wood are Dohndangen, Popen, Schleck, Rutzau. The diſtricts of Mertzendorff, of Bengallen, of Ambothen, preſent only a mountainous aſpect.

The climate of Courland is good, but ſevere. It has rapid tranſitions from cold to heat and from heat to cold, and there are very frequent fogs. Notwithſtanding this, the inhabitants of it are robuſt and long-lived.

The ſoil of this country is in general fertile. It produces in abundance wood, corn, fruits, and various other vegetables. There are, it is true, ſome cantons lying fallow, but that is from want of labourers and animals.

The foreſts there are filled with game, and the rivers with fiſh. The ſoil is calcareous, but covered

in divers places with ſand, turf, and potters' clay. There are quarries of marble, and mines of iron and coal, but they are not worked. You likewiſe find there vitriol and lead ore. The commodities which Courland ſupplies to commerce, are wheat, barley, oats, timber for building, hemp, flax, potaſhes, leather, furs, feathers, ſalted and ſmoked proviſions, wax, roſin, tallow, amber, beer and brandy diſtilled from grain.

There are no manufactures in Courland: of conſequence ſeveral articles of luxury, even ſeveral of the moſt neceſſary things are imported from foreign countries, and procure immenſe profits to the Dutch, the Danes, the Engliſh, which they barter for the commodities of the country.

The great number of little ports which Courland has upon the Baltic are extremely favourable to ſmuggling.

Before I mention the ſtate of the inhabitants and of the government of Courland, at the moment when Catharine II. took poſſeſſion of this country, I ſhall relate ſuccinctly what they have been.

It is nearly 2200 years ſince ſome ſouthern navigators diſcovered in that quarter of the north, of which I ſpeak, ſome ſavage people who carried on the commerce and fiſhing for amber. Herodotus gives them the name of Venedes; other writers of antiquity call them Guttons, Suevi, Æſtians, Heruli, and from one of theſe hordes the Baltic was named, ſeventeen centuries back, the ſea of the Suevi. The Guttons drove the Suevi into the interior of the country, and remained maſters of the ſea-coaſt. Audacious pirates, they came, towards the cloſe of the ſixth century, to ravage the coaſts of France.

There were at that time kings of Courland; and there exiſts ſtill among the Courlandiſh peaſantry, a family ſaid to be deſcended from their ancient kings, and who ſtill preſerve ſome privileges.

The Danes, the Swedes, the Norwegians, by turns ſubjugated

ſubjugated the Courlanders, and were ſometimes vanquiſhed by them. Till the end of the twelfth century, the Courlanders had refuſed to receive Chriſtianity, and had frequently even maſſacred thoſe who attempted to preach it to them; but a grand cruſade, levied againſt them by Pope Innocent III. obliged them to become converts.

The order of *chevaliers porte-glaive* took poſſeſſion of Courland, erected into a dutchy, and conſidered it as an oblat-fief, the ſovereignty of which was veſted in the Kings of Poland. The Grand-maſter, Conrade de Medem, built the city of Mittau, which is the capital of the country. Long after this, Sigiſmund-Auguſtus, the King of Poland, united Courland to his ſtates; and finally, the Grand-maſter Gothard Kettler was Duke of it in 1561, but the King of Poland did not grant him inveſtiture till eighteen years afterward.

The deſcendants of Gothard Kettler almoſt always retained the dutchy of Courland down to the year 1737. One of them, James III. who lived in the middle of the ſeventeenth century, acquired in Europe conſideration and glory. He concluded advantageous treaties with England and France. He had his marine and finances in excellent order; and his ſubjects went to traffic freely on the coaſt of Senegal, in the river Gambia, to the Antilles, and in the ports of Iceland.

Ferdinand, the laſt ſhoot of the race of Kettler, loſt his dutchy, for having commanded the Saxon army againſt the Czar Peter I. For thirty years he ſaw his oppreſſed and faithful ſtates recal him ſeveral times, and never durſt reſume the government. At length, on the death of that Prince, the Empreſs Anne obliged the Courlanders to elect as Duke, her too unworthy favourite Biren.

Biren, at that time all-powerful in the court of Peterſburgh, and afterwards baniſhed for twenty years to the deſerts of Siberia, did not go to take poſſeſſion of

his dutchy till his return from exile. Six years afterwards he reſigned the reins of government to his ſon, Peter, already elected Duke through the influence of Ruſſia.

The Courlanders had wretched manners, and ſtill worſe laws. The nobles, generally addicted to an exceſſive debauchery, enjoyed privileges far too high, and the inhabitants of the cities, as well as the peaſantry, were ſhamefully degraded. Theſe laſt, naturally good, but dull and ſuperſtitious in the extreme, believe ſtill in magic. There are even ſome of them idolaters, and who, in the receſſes of their foreſts, ſacrifice animals. Their education is not greatly calculated to amend them. There is in Courland no other inſtitution for public inſtruction except the miſerable college of Mittau. Lutheraniſm is the eſtabliſhed religion of that country; but all ſects are tolerated.

Though Sovereigns of Courland, the Dukes have been, down to a recent date, abſolutely ſubjected to Poland. Orders iſſuing from the republic and King of Poland, and ſealed with the great ſeal of Lithuania, alone had the force of law in Courland. The Dukes could keep up no more than a body of 500 infantry and 200 cavalry. They had a mint, but the coin was impreſſed with the effigy and the arms of the King of Poland; and the nobility, as well as the burghers of Courland, took the oath of fidelity to the Poliſh monarch.

The rights and uſages of the Courlandiſh nobleſs were nearly ſimilar to thoſe of the Poliſh nobility. They had their diets, their dietines, their privy and arbitrary tribunals. They were liable to no impoſt, to no exciſe, and paid to the ſupport of government juſt what they thought proper. They were opulent, becauſe they were proprietors of all the lands.

Duke Peter de Biren was avaricious, litigious, and unworthy of reſpect. His blind attachment to his favourite Wagener, contributed not a little to render him

him an object of hatred: but there were ſtill farther grounds of complaint againſt him. Obliged to farm out his lands to the nobles at a moderate rent, he had raiſed that rent, and made agricultural regulations, oppreſſive to the huſbandman. During an excurſion he made into Italy, the regency replaced every thing on the ancient footing: but when he returned, the Duke reſtored his innovations, and created a greater number of enemies. He ſeemed, by his imprudent conduct, determined himſelf to drive his ſubjects to meet the Ruſſian yoke.

The emiſſaries of Ruſſia had long ago ſucceeded in gaining over many Courlanders, and particularly the counſellor Howen, a man eloquent, pliable and ambitious. The Courlandiſh nobility were frequently allured to Peterſburgh. The flattering reception given them by the Empreſs, diſtinctions, pleaſures, rendered a reſidence in Ruſſia far preferable, in their eſtimation, to a home at Mittau, and inſpired a wiſh rather to obey the Sovereign of a vaſt empire, than be ſubject to a miſerly Duke, whoſe obſcure origin they inceſſantly recollected, and whom they conſidered as their inferior.

In order to induce the commonalty to adopt this ſentiment of the nobles, Catharine ſet them a wrangling, and excited a ſpirit of alarm. She at firſt made the inhabitants of Livonia to revive an ancient convention, which obliged the Courlanders to export all their commodities from the port of Riga. It was undoubtedly very ſtrange, that a nation which had on its own coaſts ports commodiouſly ſituated, ſhould be obliged to go, at a great expenſe, and put on board in a foreign city the productions of its own ſoil! But what cannot force effect, and what will not ambition dare to do? The quarrel of the Livonians and Courlanders was not yet ſettled, when the Empreſs ſent engineers into Courland to trace the plan of a canal which ſhould facilitate the conveyance of goods from that

that country into Livonia. The Courlanders on this, apprehending that they would ſoon be under the neceſſity of uſing this canal, thought it would be better, for them, to be protected than oppreſſed by the Empreſs, and to become her ſubjects rather than her neighbours.

Informed of theſe diſpoſitions, and of all the diſcontents which the Duke of Courland excited, Catharine ſummoned that Prince to her court, under the pretext of having occaſion to conſer with him on buſineſs of ſerious importance, but ſcarcely was the Duke at the foot of the throne of the ſelf-created deſpot of the north, when the ſtates of Courland aſſembled. The nobility propoſed to renounce the ſovereignty of Poland, and ſubmit to that of Ruſſia. The chief members of the grand council wiſhed to oppoſe this transfer, obſerving, that it would be decent, before they proceeded to a deciſion, to wait the Duke's return. The oberbourgrave Howen roſe, and made a long ſpeech in favour of Ruſſia. Some of the counſellors adopted his opinion, others upbraided him as a traitor. The diſpute grew warm; mutual challenges were given, and they were on the point of ſettling the controverſy by the ſword, when the Ruſſian general Pahlen made his appearance in the aſſembly. His preſence reſtored tranquillity. No one dared to open his mouth againſt Ruſſia, and the propoſition of the nobleſs paſſed into a reſolution.

The day after, an inſtrument was drawn up, by which Courland, Semigallia, and the circle of Pilten, ſubjected themſelves to the Empreſs of Ruſſia, and it was carried to Peterſburgh, where the Duke of Courland learnt from the mouth of his own ſubjects, that they had juſt ſtripped him of his principality. The Empreſs immediately ſent a governor thither.

There were nevertheleſs many malecontents in Courland. Diſcontent involved proſcription, and the effects of the proſcribed became a prey to Catharine's courtiers,

courtiers. The favourite Plato Zouboff and his brother Valerian obtained a great part of thoſe rich and ſcandalous ſpoils.

The unreſiſted ſovereign of ſo many invaded ſtates, Catharine employed unremitting aſſiduity to retain them under her domination. Repnin and Toutoulmin exacted, in her name, a new oath of allegiance, the one in Lithuania, the other in Poland, and the wretched inhabitants of thoſe countries who dared to refuſe ſubmiſſion to that cruel formality, were inſtantly ſtripped of the inheritance of their fathers, and driven from their natal ſoil.

The Empreſs, who had ſo long promiſed, without any intention to keep faith, ſupport to the league of Kings againſt France, gave way, at laſt, to the ſolicitations of the favourite Zouboff, whom his ſiſter, the Britiſh miniſter and Eſterhazy inceſſantly beſet. She determined to join the Engliſh fleet with a ſquadron of twelve ſhips and eight frigates, the command of which was conferred on Admiral Hanikoff. But, never forming a treaty but what redounded to her own benefit, ſhe had ſtipulated that Great Britain ſhould pay her an annual ſubſidy of a million ſterling, beſide defraying all the expenſe of the ſquadron, which received, notwithſtanding, ſecret orders not to fight. The court of London obtained, then, by this bargain, only a uſeleſs and ruinous bugbear. It was ſoon perceived: but the Ruſſian ſquadron was kept in Britiſh pay for a year, and the Empreſs was requeſted to recal her armament to her own ports. Catharine afterwards ſent to England three ſhips of war and three frigates.

That Princeſs had married her grandſon Alexander to the Princeſs Louiſa of Baden. She likewiſe wiſhed to find a conſort for Prince Conſtantine. She invited to her court the three daughters of the Prince de Saxe-Cobourg, and, after ſome heſitation in her choice, determined in favour of the youngeſt, who, on becoming

ing Grand-dutcheſs, aſſumed the name of Anna-Federowna.

But unreſiſted invaſion, treaties, alliances, ſatisfied not the ambition of Catharine. Impelled by the rage of conqueſt, ſhe turned her arms againſt Perſia. Under pretence of ſupporting Lolf-Ali-Khan, a ſhoot from the race of the Sophis, ſhe intended to avenge herſelf on the eunuch Aga-Mahmed, and make herſelf miſtreſs of the Perſian provinces bordering on the Caſpian Sea. Her miniſter at Conſtantinople had orders to preſs the Porte to enter into her views. The Reis-effendi Raſched Mahomet powerfully ſupported her; but the divan remained inflexible.

Valerian Zouboff penetrated, at the head of a numerous army, into the province of Dagheſtan, and proceeded to lay ſiege to Derbent. He firſt attacked a lofty tower which covered that place, and after having carried it, and put the garriſon to the ſword, prepared to give the aſſault to the city. The Perſians, intimidated by the firſt ſucceſs, and by the fury of the Ruſſians, begged quarter, and the commandant, a venerable old man, of 120 years, and the ſame perſon who, at the beginning of this century, had ſurrendered Derbent to Peter I. carried the keys of it to Valerian Zouboff.

Aga-Mahmed haſtened to relieve Derbent, but was informed by the way that this place had already ſubmitted to the Ruſſian arms. Valerian Zouboff advanced to give him battle, and victory declared in favour of the Perſians, who obliged their enemies to retreat into Derbent. Catharine, informed of this defeat, immediately iſſued orders to a part of the troops which ſhe had in the Kuban, to go and reinforce the army of Valerian Zouboff, and ſhe entertained no doubt that this general would ſoon triumph over Aga-Mahmed.

She flattered herſelf with the hope of obtaining a ſtill greater triumph. The new treaty ſhe was on the

point



PAUL I PETROWITZ,

Emperor of Ruſsia.

Publiſhed Feb.ʳ 18.th 1800, by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

point of concluding with England and Auſtria, obliged her, in truth, to furniſh theſe two powers with a formidable army againſt France, but it enſured to her their aid for attacking Turkey. She reckoned, in a word, on the execution of her darling project, that of driving the Ottomans out of Europe, and of rearing her throne at Conſtantinople.

In this caſe the vaſt empire of Catharine would have had for boundaries, the Thracian Boſphorus to the ſouth, the Gulph of Bothnia on the north, the Viſtula on the weſt, and the ſeas of Japan eaſtward.

But death blaſted her hopes. On the morning of November 6th ſhe was tolerably gay, and drank coffee as uſual. Some time after ſhe retired to her cloſet. After an interval of half an hour, her female attendants, finding ſhe did not re-appear, began to be uneaſy. They went in, and found the Empreſs ſtretched on the floor, with her feet againſt the door. Dr. Rogerſon, her firſt phyſician, was called in, who, ſuppoſing it to be a fit of the apoplexy, ordered her to be bled twice. The Empreſs appeared at firſt to be ſomewhat relieved; but it was impoſſible for him to give a decided opinion, and at ten in the evening ſhe expired.

The Grand-duke was at his country reſidence of Gatſchina. As ſoon as he was informed of his mother's dangerous ſtate he haſtened to Peterſburgh, and the inſtant ſhe breathed her laſt, was proclaimed Emperor, by the name of Paul I.

When he had aſſumed the reins of government, that Prince failed not to render to his mother all the funeral honours due to her; but he did not chooſe that ſhe ſhould be the ſole object of this auguſt and mournful ceremony. Whether from an exceſs of filial piety, or to evince the rooted abhorrence he felt of the crime which robbed him of a father, he brought that crime to remembrance, in a terrible and ſolemn manner. The laſt ſcene of the bloody tragedy

of

of 1762, was exhibited at the expiration of thirty-five years.

Paul I. gave orders to open the tomb of the unfortunate Peter III. which was in the church of St. Alexander Newſky. He commanded to place on the coffin of that Prince the Imperial crown, which he had brought expreſsly for the purpoſe from Moſcow. The coffin was then depoſited on a bed of ſtate by the ſide of that of the Empreſs, with a love-knot extending from the one to the other, and an inſcription in the Ruſſian tongue to this purport:—"In life divided, in death united." Alexis Orloff was ordered to Peterſburgh, and appointed, together with Prince Baratinſky, to appear in mourning on each ſide of the coffin of Peter III. This diſmal preference was unqueſtionably intended to awaken remorſe and terror in the breaſts of the two aſſaſſins. For three hours that the ceremony of interment laſted, the eyes of all the ſpectators were fixed on them, and ſeemed to upbraid them with the enormity of their offence. Alexis Orloff, poſſeſſing more animal vigour and inſenſibility than Baratinſky, diſcovered no ſenſible emotion; but his accomplice had the appearance of being filled with a profound ſorrow, and would probably have fallen into fainting-fits, but for the ſalts inceſſantly adminiſtered to him.

All Peterſburgh expected that this firſt puniſhment would have been ſucceeded by one of greater ſeverity, but the vengeance of the Emperor went no farther. Alexis Orloff received, without having requeſted it, permiſſion to travel, and Baratinſky was ordered no more to make his appearance at court, a diſgrace which he could not but conſider as a favour.

I will not attempt to depict, by new traits, the character of Catharine II. The hiſtory which I have juſt written will be ſufficient, I dare venture to believe, to make her known. I ſhall only ſay a few words with regard to her perſon, of which I have as yet ſcarcely made mention.

That

That Princeſs had been pretty in her youth, and ſhe preſerved, to the lateſt period of her life, much grace and majeſty. She was of a middling ſtature, but well proportioned, and as ſhe carried her head very erect, ſhe appeared almoſt tall. Her forehead was open, her noſe a little aquiline, her mouth agreeable, and her chin rather long, but not at all miſſhapen. Her hair was cheſnut-brown, her eye-brows black and thick. Her blue eyes had a ſweetneſs frequently affected, and, more frequently ſtill, replaced by haughtineſs. Her phyſionomy was not deficient in expreſſion, but that expreſſion diſplayed but little what was paſſing in the ſoul of Catharine, or rather ſhe made uſe of it only the better to diſguiſe her inward feelings.

Catharine was uſually dreſſed in the Ruſſian manner. She wore a green robe, ſufficiently ſhort, which formed in front a ſpecies of waiſtcoat, and the ſtrait ſleeves of which deſcended to the wriſt. Her hair, lightly powdered, floated over her ſhoulders, and was ſurmounted by a ſmall cap covered with diamonds. In the laſt years of her life ſhe put on a great deal of rouge, for ſhe ſtill had pretenſions not to allow the traces of time to appear on her countenance, and it is probable that theſe pretenſions only were the cauſe of her living in the utmoſt temperance.

On days of ceremony, that Princeſs aſſembled on her perſon, and in her court, all that European elegance could add to the luſtre of Aſiatic pomp. On theſe occaſions, her hair and her robe were covered with jewels, and her head was decorated with a crown of diamonds of ineſtimable value. She wore the croſſes of Saint Alexander Newſky, of Saint Wolodomir, and Saint Catharine; on one ſide ſhe had the ribbon of Saint Andrew, and on the other that of Saint George, with the brilliant plates of theſe two orders, which are the firſt of the empire.

The courtiers of both ſexes ſtrained in emulation with each other to imitate the magnificence of the Sovereign, a magnificence which, notwithſtanding it's

it's exceſs, was without doubt leſs difficult to equal, than the anxiety which ſhe expreſſed to aſſure her glory. Dreſſed in the moſt beautiful ſtuffs, and in the French ſtyle, they diſplayed a prodigious quantity of diamonds and other precious ſtones. The buttons, the buckles, the ſword-hilts, the watch-chains, the epaulettes, the plates and the croſſes of the different orders of chivalry which the men wore, were of brilliants, as well as the ear-rings, the necklaces, the aigrettes, and ſeveral other ornaments of the women. This luxury rendered the court of Ruſſia the moſt brilliant court of Europe: but thoſe who were the ſpectators of it could not help reflecting that ſuch immenſe riches were loſt to circulation, and that the pride of a few grandees conſumed inceſſantly, and to no purpoſe, the fruit of the labour and the induſtry of the wretched ſerfs.

I promiſed to exhibit a ſtatement of what the favourites of Catharine received from that Princeſs. Here it is, ſuch as I received it from perſons very well informed on the ſubject.

	Roubles.
The five brothers ORLOFF received 45,000 peaſants, and in lands, palaces, jewels, plate and ready money -	17,000,000
WISSOTSKY, an officer of the guards, in favour about two months - -	300,000
WASSILTSCHIKOFF, a ſimple lieutenant of the guards received, the twenty months he was in favour, an eſtate in land, with 7,000 peaſants, valued at 600,000	
In ready money - - - 100,000	
In jewels - - - 60,000	
In plate - - - 50,000	
A palace furniſhed - - 100,000	
A penſion of 20,000 roubles, worth about - - 200,000	
	1,110,000
beſide the order of Saint-Alexander Newſky.	
Carried forward,	18,410,000

		Roubles.
	Brought forward,	18,410,000
Potemkin received the two firſt years, about nine millions. He afterwards accumulated vaſt wealth. He had great eſtates in Poland, and in all the provinces of Ruſſia. One of his cheſts was filled with gold, diamonds, and bank-bills on London, Amſterdam, Venice. His fortune was valued at		50,000,000
Zawadoffsky received, in eighteen months, lands in Poland, with 2000 peaſants, in the Ukraine with 6000, and in Ruſſia with 1800: the whole valued at	1,000,000	
He received in money	150,000	
In plate	50,000	
In jewels	80,000	
And a penſion from the privy purſe of 10,000 roubles, worth	100,000	
		1,380,000
beſides the ribbon of the White Eagle of Poland.		
Zoritz received, in one year, the ribbon of the Swediſh order of the Sword, and that of the White Eagle of Poland. An eſtate in Poland of	500,000	
One in Lithuania of 50 haaks, worth	100,000	
In money	500,000	
In jewels	200,000	
		1,420,000
Korzakoff received, in ſixteen months, the ribbon of the White Eagle of Poland, and the palace of Waſſiltſchikoff which had been repurchaſed	100,000	
		100,000
		71,310,000

		Roubles.
Brought forward,		71,310,000
An eſtate with 4000 peaſants	400,000	
In money and jewels -	150,000	
To pay his debts -	100,000	
To equip him for travelling	100,000	
Gratuity on his travels -	70,000	
		820,000
LANSKOÏ received in money or lands - - -	7,000,000	
In diamonds - -	80,000	
To pay his debts - -	80,000	
A palace, valued at -	100,000	
		7,260,000
Beſide, his ſiſter and couſin were admitted into the number of maids of honour to the Empreſs, and received many preſents, of which no valuation can be made.		
YERMOLOFF received, in ſixteen months, the ribbon of the White Eagle of Poland, and an eſtate valued at	100,000	
Another, with 3000 peaſants	300,000	
In money - -	150,000	
		550,000
MOMONOFF received, in twenty-ſix months, in land -	600,000	
In money - -	200,000	
In jewels - -	80,000	
		880,000
PLATO ZOUBOFF was decorated with the title of Prince and with ſeveral ribbons, and appointed grand-maſter of artillery. He received immenſe eſtates in Ruſſia, in Poland and in Courland. His fortune, excluſive of moveables and jewels, amounted to an annual re-		
Carried forward,		80,820,000

		Roubles.
Brought forward,		80,820,000
venue of about 100,000 roubles, and is consequently estimated at	2,500,000	
Furniture and jewels -	200,000	
		2,700,000
VALERIAN ZOUBOFF received a great deal of money; lands in Poland and Courland, and a pension of 12,000 roubles, payable in gold. The whole may be estimated at - -		800,000
		84,320,000
To these presents must be added the expense of the favourite, calculated at 250,000 roubles a year, which amounts, during the 34 years that Catharine's reign lasted, to - - -		8,500,000
Total,		92,820,000

This sum is equal to about 464,100,000 livres Tournois, (upwards of 19,330,000l. sterling). Hence it appears how magnificently Catharine rewarded the attachment of her lovers. She was equally generous to her ministers, her generals, and every one about her person: and in excuse for a profusion which sometimes had the appearance of bearing an extravagant proportion to the state other finances, she used to say, "My pretended prodigality is real economy. All "this remains in the country, and returns to me "one day."

THE END.

142 —
160 —
161 —
166 —
190
191
192
194
195 — 6
211 — 12 — 13 — 14 — 15

220



12/116